



WORLD OF CULTIVATION

BOOK 07

Fang Xiang

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

World of Cultivation!

(Xiuzhen Shijie)

(修真世界)

by

Fang Xiang

(方想)

Synopsis

World of Cultivation is the tale of a disgruntled young man and his quest to be the best farmer he can be, at least if it wasn't for those annoying people who keep getting in the way of his pursuit of agricultural excellence.

Will conspiring forces turn him into a sword cultivator, or will he manage to throw off the shackles of fate and grow the best darn crops in the sect?

Those air-headed cultivators dream of too much nonsense and don't know how to live properly, they need to get a real job to earn some jingshi for a living like a normal person.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by wyhcwe @ [Dreams of Jianghu](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 - The Intolerant Lil' Miss

Zuo Mo did not know that Princess Xia already had suspicions about him, but even if he did, he did not have an avenue of retreat. Actually, in his mind, there was still one final plan. Bie Han would take Sin Battalion and capture Princess Xia.

This would be the last alternative because he knew if he really did that, it would be the same as poking a hornet's nest. They would then have a difficult time moving about in the mo jie. So Zuo Mo did not want to use such an extreme method. However, if the other methods were not effective, he did not object to using this final hand.

Of course, there was also another reason. Bie Han still needed time to adjust to the new Sin Battalion.

Zuo Mo's mind was completely focused on Princess Xia and did not care about something like the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.

He decided to be more proactive and hadn't expected an opportunity to come to him.

"Inviting me?" Zuo Mo looked at the invitation in his hand. After scanning through it, he was slightly puzzled. "Who is this Shi Yue Yi?"

"Shi Yue Yi is the present master of Great Peace City!" Tao Xing had an admiring expression when he saw Zuo Mo was puzzled. The fact he had received an invitation from the Master of Great Peace

City indicated that Zuo Mo's strength had received acknowledgment from Great Peace City.

“Shi Yue Yi” Zuo Mo murmured and then he suddenly raised his head. “What is the connection between this guy and Shi Zi Ming?”

Tao Xing felt very helpless about Zuo Mo's slow wit. “He is Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming's student. Ever since Grandmaster passed on, he became responsible for managing Great Peace City.”

“Shi Zi Ming's student!” Zuo Mo's expression suddenly became respectful. He respected Shi Zi Ming a lot. Even now, he had not finished reading the Mo Skill Steles but just the content he had read so far was enough for him to benefit greatly. Also, the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles were open to everyone to read. It really lived up to the reputation of the great master to be so generous.

“Shi Yue Yi is like his teacher and has never cultivated a mo skill. However, he is truly a wise person!” Tao Xing showed a respectful expression. “His gaze can penetrate the mists and see the heart of a person. After the grandmaster passed, Great Peace City's reputation did not decline due to Shi Yue Yi's efforts.”

Then he warned gravely, “Do not be disrespectful to City Master Shi Yue Yi. You cannot imagine how much he is respected in Great Peace City. If you offend City Master Shi Yue Yi, you will become the enemy of the entire city!”

“This serious?” Zuo Mo was slightly shocked.

“He has helped many people, including the top ranked individuals on the Great Peace Mo Rankings. Every one of them has received his guidance. The experts that have received the generosity of City Master Shi Yue Yi would unconsciously protect him and Great Peace City. For example, Chang Yuan Hao, Yu Shuang, Nanmen Xue, they all stay in Great Peace City with the intentions of helping City Master Shi Yue Yi. Remember the person that broke Qi Diao Yu’s mo sound when he entered the city? That was Nanmen Xue!”

Zuo Mo instantly remembered that Qi Diao Yu’s mo sound had affected the entire street. However, a single cold snort had broken the mo sound. He had been shocked at Qi Diao Yu’s strength and had not thought further. Now that he thought back, he was startled!

As expected of the third ranked on the Great Peace Mo Ranking. The strength of Nanmen Xue was unfathomable!

If Nanmen Xue who was ranked third was already so strong, then how powerful was Chang Yuan Hao and Yu Shuang that were ranked first and second respectively?

Thinking about the three indiscernible presences last night, Zuo Mo felt his head swell. There were so many experts!

The fight with Miao Jun made him understand that anyone that was able to enter the Great Peace Mo Ranking was someone strong. No one was weak. So many experts meant that his plans had many

hidden flaws.

Zuo Mo now felt that it wasn't plausible to use Sin Battalion to capture Princess Xia. To say of nothing else, if twenty general level individuals decided to charge at once, there were definitely no battalions that would be able to withstand it.

This was a terrifying power.

Zuo Mo finally saw the power of Great Peace City. When the number of experts reached a certain level, the amount of strength it represented exponentially increased.

Zuo Mo's expression changed. In the past, he had been confident, but now he found that the matter was more troublesome than he had imagined.

Right now, he had to plan one step at a time.

————

“This is the Ice Mist Mo Embryo, a kind of mo embryo produced in our Cloud Sea Jie. We found this through the mist people.” Master Ji Wei pointed at something that looked like a ball of cotton. It was faintly blue and slowly moved on the table.

“The greatest use of the mo embryo is to help mo cultivate their mo physique.” Master Jie Wei said slowly and the other people listened to him with concentration.

“The Ice Mist mo embryo is very suited to the mo that can cultivate the Ice Mist mo physique. We have discovered that once a person achieves the mo physique, their strength would multiply. The reason is that the mo embryos have complete mo matrixes. These mo matrixes are transferred to the mo through consumption; the mo matrixes of the mo embryos are absorbed and refined. They would grow alongside the mo matrixes of the user, and form a new set of complete mo matrixes.”

“During this time, through the efforts of everyone, we have continuously analyzed the mo matrix of the mo embryos. We have finally gained some understanding of the mo embryo and mo physique. Mo matrixes are good things, but very rare. Up until now, the ice mist clan has only found three mo matrixes.

“The goal of our next stage is to create objects similar to mo embryos. We do not need them to be as complex as true mo embryos, they only need a few mo matrixes as the core. Also, we need to find mo matrixes which can be outlines for the growth of the mo embryo.”

“Form teams of three ! Every three days, we will have a collective discussion session! All raw materials are available for use and we will try to find any materials you require. You can freely test any ideas you have.”

Everyone's eyes grew brighter. They felt excited about this goal!

They were not the ignorant country bumpkins of the past. Every

person present here was skilled in mo matrixes and seal formations. In any other place, they would be talents that all the factions would fight over.

Of all the camps on Turtle Island, Golden Crow Camp grew in size the slowest. The two masters had strict tests for every xiuzhe that applied to enter Golden Crow Camp. However, Golden Crow Camp's good atmosphere and the benefits that were unimaginably good earned the favor of all production xiuzhe in Cloud Sea Jie.

For them, this was a difficult and enormous challenge.

But here, no one disliked challenges!

Everyone seated here all knew that if they completed this mission, it would be a great upheaval for the entire world!

“Daren! This subordinate is willing to guard Orchid Home Jie!”

Ma Fan ran to Orchid Home Jie and asked.

“Not possible!” Gongsun Cha shook his head without even thinking. If this chaos rift was lost, the consequences were unimaginable. While Black Turtle Camp had performed well in their last battle, Gongsun Cha was still not reassured.

“Daren! Today, Gu Liang Dao has taken another jie!” Ma Fan’s words caused Gongsun Cha’s expression to immediately darken. No one had expected that Gu Liang Dao, who only days before had been an unknown name, was so ferocious!

“Daren, this subordinate will guard this place and will not attack. Even though Black Turtle Camp is not as strong as Vermillion Bird Camp, with the formations as defense it will not be easy for others to take this place if we do not leave the formation. Also, with Middle Granary Jie at our back, Black Turtle Camp can receive reinforcements at any time. This subordinate has confidence in fighting a defensive battle!”

Ma Fan’s words streamed and he did not retreat. “Also, there is Guard Camp! Even though Shu Long and the strongest members are not present, but there is a significant number of people left. No matter if it is Black Turtle Camp or Guard Camp, they are both battalions skilled in defense. This subordinate does not believe that with these two battalions and the formation defenses, we cannot hold this place!”

Gongsun Cha was slightly persuaded. Ma Fan was right, Shu Long was not here but Guard Camp should not have a problem fighting a defensive battle. With Cloud Sea Jie’s present wealth, they might be able to afford a battle of attrition.

Everyone looked at Gongsun Cha. Everyone knew that Gongsun Cha’s next orders were crucial for all of Cloud Sea Jie!

Gongsun Cha’s gaze landed on the jie map. On the jie map, the jie that Gu Liang Dao had just taken was dyed red.

There were several red jie that had formed a shape. The shape's outline was like the edge of a blade dyed in blood that pointed directly at the faint blue path as though it would cut the path at any moment!

Gu Liang Dao who had come out of nowhere now rivaled Jiang Zhe in reputation. The title of Xi Xuan Tiger General rang over the entire world!

Lil' Miss' gaze suddenly calmed down.

For him, there was nothing more important than Zuo Mo's safety. If the situation was so extreme that it required using the lives of all the people under his command to exchange for Zuo Mo, Gongsun Cha would not hesitate at all.

This was Gongsun Cha: crazy, obsessive, and at times unreasonable! Maybe his actions would be understood by other people or maybe not, he did not care. He only cared about two things: Zuo Mo and victory!

When Zuo Mo was present, Lil' Miss' decisions always looked gentle and harmless.

But when Zuo Mo was not present, Lil' Miss' harsh and intolerant style was reflected in every one of his decisions.

Everyone knew that Lil' Miss had made a decision. They stopped

breathing and waited for Lil' Miss' decision.

“Orders!”

Woosh, everyone suddenly stood up.

In their eyes, Lil' Miss had a calm expression. His tone was calm but it was one that could not be disobeyed. He said with a decisiveness that was as sharp as a blade.

“Black Turtle Camp and Guard Camp will hold Orchid Home Jie together, Ma Fan has command. Green Dragon Camp will guard Middle Granary Jie and listen to Ma Fan's orders!”

Ma Fan bowed solemnly to Gongsun Cha and said with a rare expression of graveness, “I will not fail!”

Lil' Miss nodded and did not speak. He turned and looked at the other people.

“Vermillion Bird Camp and A Zha Ge Battalion, immediately gather. We will depart in three days!”

The cold order was full of fighting spirit.

“Yes!” The commanders accepted. Everyone's faces flashed with excitement. Vermillion Bird Camp was a group of battle maniacs to start with and Gongsun Cha's style was deeply imprinted on this

battalion. They were like caged beasts after fighting defensively in the past while. The blood inside them had been restless.

Now that they received the order to depart, the fighting spirit could not be suppressed any longer.

Gongsun Cha suddenly smiled like a blooming flower. The light of his eyes were so bright that no one could look at it directly. The smile at the corner of his mouth was as bashful as ever but the words that came out softly caused everyone's blood to boil!

“We are going to meet Xi Xuan's Tiger General.”

Chapter 602 - The Drunken Little Mo Ge

Inside Great Peace Palace, laughter and conversations could be heard, beauties were plentiful and people filled all the seats! The servants weaved between the crowds of people offering food and drink as they occasionally stopped and paid their respects.

Zuo Mo gazed at the scene in front of him with a dazed face.

The streams of people caused him to feel overwhelmed. A pleasing tune, a tempting fragrance of wine, and a delicious smell of food floated through the air.

He had not expected the busy scene in front of him at all. In his imagination, Shi Yue Yi's banquet should be dignified and elegant, and even slightly solemn. Who had expected it would be like this?

In the eyes of Zuo Mo, this was chaos! Little Mo Ge who could kill his way through the battlefield didn't know how to react when faced with this scene.

"Hey, Brother Xiao Mo Ge!" A familiar voice came from behind him.

Zuo Mo turned to look and instantly had an expression of joy. "Haha, Brother Lan!" The one that had greeted him was Lan Tian Long and his brother Lan Rong was beside him.

"Brother, you didn't come find me to drink! Since we have met

today, I won't spare you! We won't leave until we are drunk!" Lan Tian Long laughed vigorously.

Zuo Mo had a pretty good impression of Lan Tian Long. At this time, Lan Tian Long's appearance was a life saver. He said, "Then I will follow Brother Lan around!"

"No problem! In this Great Peace City, this little brother is at least familiar with the people!" Lan Tian Long easily agreed. He then introduced Lan Rong beside him. "This is my younger brother Lan Rong."

Zuo Mo and Lan Rong exchanged greetings. Lan Rong's presence was completely different compared to Lan Tian Long, appearing delicate and serene.

Lan Rong was filled with curiosity about Zuo Mo. He had been observing Zuo Mo in secret all this time.

With someone leading the way, Zuo Mo felt assured he would not embarrass himself. He followed Lan Tian Long as they chatted about random things. Lan Tian Long was holding a jar of wine in his hand that was about the height of his knee. When he met someone, he would raise the jar of wine, and toss his head back to drink. He did not care about the liquid that wetted his clothing and it seemed full of bravado.

Zuo Mo was charmed when he saw this. He copied Lan Tian Long and held a wine jar as well. He did not refuse anyone that came to him and allowed the alcohol to spill over his body. He felt that this

was an unspeakably free and pleasurable manner to enjoy himself.

Lan Tian Long's way of drinking was very unique and it was rare that he encountered someone that drank like him. His interest was stirred and he and Zuo Mo roamed around to find people to drink with!

Lan Rong followed the two with a grimace and occasionally apologized to the people in the surroundings for the two of them.

"I'm telling you, Old Man Shi's wine ... it is all good wine." Lan Tian Long's tongue was starting to twist and slur his words, his eyes were unfocused. One of his hands was on Zuo Mo's shoulder, the other holding the wine jar, as he said indistinctly, "You have to drink more ... if you drink more, then it is profitable ... good wine ..."

"You are ... too right!" Zuo Mo's face was flushed. He pointed a finger and waved it. His head waved along with his finger as he said, "If one does not take the bargain ... then they are a bastard."

"Hahahaha! Good! Come, drink!" Lan Tian Long grabbed the wine jar and gulped down with his head back.

Zuo Mo also grabbed a wine jar and copied Lan Tian Long to drink in large mouthfuls.

When the wine entered his throat, it turned to a wave of heat

that rolled through his chest. He did not know what this wine was made from. Inside Zuo Mo's body, it was like a ball of hot fire that moved restlessly. The Sun Crystal Seed in Zuo Mo's body seemed to be stimulated and furiously spun.

Zuo Mo felt the burning ball of flame in his chest grow and his throat burned with thirst. He wanted to drink more. Uncontrollably, he raised the wine jar and poured into his mouth.

The moment it entered his throat, the liquid was a wave of coolness, but immediately afterward the ball of fire in his body seemed to grow hotter.

Lan Rong looked helplessly at the duo. In the past, it had only been Lan Tian Long that would drink like this, and he had cleaned up the messes countless times. Today, it was two drunkards. The two were drinking so recklessly like this and he could only shake his head.

Shi Yue Yi's Granny Meng Ghost Wine was famous as one of the strongest spirits in the mo world. Looking at the surroundings, everyone only sipped it. Only the two dumbasses in front of him were drinking so violently. Lan Rong knew what his brother was like. But he had not expected that Xiao Mo Ge, who did not look very ferocious, to be so vicious when he drank.

As expected, one could not judge a book by its cover! Lan Rong shook his head.

“Brother Tian Long, after so many years you are still like this?”

A clear voice came.

Lan Rong's face instantly cooled. Without needing to look, he knew who it was. He couldn't help but smile coldly, "Compared to Brother Shen, my brother has enough to be proud of. I heard that last night, under the eyes of everyone, Brother Shen was tricked by a very ugly and very gentle brother? Princess Xia probably saw it? I'm very curious. What did Princess Xia think about it all?"

Lan Rong's retaliation directly hit Shen Yu's weak point. What had occurred last night was a great humiliation for Shen Yu. Everyone had watched him, and he had allowed the other to escape. This was like using his face to sweep the floor.

Lan Rong did not hesitate in poking at his wound. A hint of murderousness flashed through Shen Yu's eyes.

Shen Yu smiled coldly. "Little Brother Lan Rong's tongue is still as fast and sharp as in the past. But are Brother Lan's moves half as quick?"

Shen Yu suddenly increased his volume. "It is such a good occasion today, how can there be no battle to arouse the spirits? What do you think, Little Brother Lan Rong, should we go up on stage and have a round?"

The noisy hall instantly quieted. Everyone looked over, many of the people had interested expressions on their faces. The Shen Family had always been at odds with the Lan Family. How could

Shen Yu miss a chance to damage the other's reputation?

Lan Rong's expression changed slightly. If he showed weakness in public, his and the Lan Family's reputation would be damaged. But Lan Rong knew his own abilities. His strength was not bad, but compared to Shen Yu, he was much weaker. Even Lan Tian Long was slightly weaker than Shen Yu.

But at this time, he could not retreat

Just as he was going to reply, an indistinct voice came from beside him, "Hey, you are that 'very ugly and very gentle'?"

It was Zuo Mo that spoke, he swayed as he stood up. His mind was a complete mess at this point but he felt that Shen Yu seemed slightly familiar, yet being drunk he did not know why he felt displeasure when he saw this person. Just now, he felt that the phrase "very ugly and very gentle" sounded familiar. Dizzy from the drinks, Zuo Mo pushed the label onto someone else. He completely forgot the connection he had to the matter.

The hall that had become completely silent because Shen Yu had challenged Lan Rong, now roared with laughter.

The ones seated where either noble or wealthy and all had methods of gathering intelligence. The phrase "very ugly and very gentle" from last night had spread through all of Great Peace City. So when they heard Zuo Mo ask Shen Yu this, they laughed without exception.

Shen Yu's expression became the color of a beet. Zuo Mo was exposing his scars in public.

The young masters urged on and whistled. They were happy to see anything that made Shen Yu look bad. Shouts came from the crowd, "Wow, so ugly, so gentle!" "So ugly! So gentle!"

When had Shen Yu been embarrassed like this. His face turned from red to back, viciousness appearing in his brows. Light flashed through his eyes and his tone was icy.

"Sir is?"

Still in a daze, when Zuo Mo heard that the other did not recognize him, he instantly became discontent as he said loudly, "You don't even know me? You still want to live in Great Peace City?" He pulled over Lan Rong and then muttered. "Didn't you say that the drinking party this time is supposed to be very high-end? How can a person like him come in?"

Roars of laughter rose up again. Zuo Mo seemed extremely charming at this time. Many beautiful matrons covered their mouths and laughed. The daring ones coquettishly oogled Zuo Mo's body. The people of Great Peace City recognized Zuo Mo because Shifting Stars Sand was too shocking of an event.

Seeing Shen Yu's almost twisted face, Lan Rong had never found a person so charming before. He felt very good and so happy he almost shouted.

Brother, drink a bit more

He wanted to shove another jar of wine in Zuo Mo's hand.

At this time, Shen Yu actually calmed down. He knew that he had been embarrassed greatly today but

As long as these idiotic people saw his strength, they would naturally close their mouths and have fearful gazes again! What was something that could cause people to submit other than power?

All of the mockery, in front of power, was so insignificant. With a light blow, it would disappear like bubbles.

A smile came back onto his face. "This one is ignorant and really does not know. Please teach me."

The smile on Lan Rong's face disappeared. He understood Shen Yu very well. Every time Shen Yu had this expression, it meant that he really felt murderousness. He would use any trick to kill the other!

Xiao Mo Ge

He turned and looked worriedly at Xiao Mo Ge.

Zuo Mo's brow rose as he said humorously, "Teach?" He reached

out his right hand with the palm up and open.

Lan Rong's expression was puzzled. What did this hand gesture mean?

Shen Yu also did not understand. He was unaffected and said, "This is?"

"You aren't just ugly, you are also stupid." The drunkenness rising, Zuo Mo said impatiently, "Do you understand the rules of the word? If you ask for a lesson, don't you need to pay?"

The hall was completely silent. Everyone present, including Lan Rong, was gaping. They were so shocked by Zuo Mo's unique move they were speechless.

"Fifty mo bei, thank you."

Shen Yu gaped with wide eyes in dumbstruckness. When he reacted, his face became flushed red again. Searching for a few moments, he could not produce anything. Shen Yu had such high status, when had he ever needed to personally bring mo bei along to attend a banquet?

If Little Mo Ge had to identify a type of person he did not like, it would definitely be someone that did not have mo bei. This meant that he could not squeeze anything out of the other.

What was more hateful than this?

“Doesn’t even have fifty mo bei” Zuo Mo muttered. He looked with a pair of drunken eyes at Shen Yu which were filled with disdain.

Many people’s expression became strange. Zuo Mo’s voice was not loud but those seated all had great hearing. They all heard it clearly.

“I will pay for him.” A seductive and lazy voice came. Before Zuo Mo finished his comment, a string of mo bei landed on Zuo Mo’s hand. Seeing who it was, Shen Yu’s expression changed and he was moved by Princess Xia’s actions.

Zuo Mo instantly smiled. He tossed the string and then shoved it at Lan Rong. “Remember to buy more of this wine for me.”

Finishing, he completely ignored Lan Rong’s awkward expression. He turned and said seriously to Shen Yu, “I will only say it once, do not forget it, I am called Xiao Mo Ge!”

A strange look flashed through Princess Xia’s eyes and Shen Yu smiled.

Seeing Shen Yu’s smile, Zuo Mo also smiled.

Chapter 603 - Granny Meng Ghost Wine

Obtaining this match had taken no effort.

This was the first thought that Shen Yu had. On the road here, he had listened to Princess Xia and the others continuously praise Xiao Mo Ge and had long placed him on the list of people he had to stomp down.

He had not expected this drunkard to be Xiao Mo Ge!

Were the heavens looking favorably upon him?

Shen Yu felt as though his blood was boiling. Due to being too excited, his body actually shook slightly. Under the eyes of the public, in front of Princess Xia, the exhilaration of crushing a genius that could cause the Shifting Star Stand.

Shen Yu's smile was like a predator that had found its prey. He licked his lips, the light deep in his eyes filled with murderousness, bloodthirst, savagery and anticipation!

It made him excited just thinking about it!

“So you are Xiao Mo Ge, do you dare to go up and spar?”

He forcibly suppressed the excitement and urge to fight inside. Like an experienced hunter, he tossed out his lure that had been

prepared long before.

Zuo Mo's mind was a blur. The drunkenness roiled in his chest like a ball of fire!

This ball of fire seemed to want to combust in his body. He felt as though each muscle was burning, like firewood soaked in oil!

There seemed to be several fireballs on his chest and back!

So hot! So thirsty!

Shen Yu's figure seemed to be both near and far, clear one moment and blurry the next. Zuo Mo's eyes were drunken and his mind unfocused.

This wine really was strong

“Shen Yu, you really do not have face. You are bullying Xiao Mo Ge while he is drunk! What? You want to play? This one will accompany you!” Lan Rong said coldly.

Today, Xiao Mo Ge had humiliated Shen Yu. If the two fought, Xiao Mo Ge definitely would not end up well. As for himself, while it would be slightly embarrassing, but unless the Shen Family wanted to start a open feud with the Lan Family, Shen Yu would

not dare to take his life.

So at this time, Lan Rong unhesitatingly stood up.

A strange smile floated on Shen Yu's face. "Lan Rong, don't think too highly of yourself. This is Xiao Mo Ge's matter, when was it your turn to decide?" He then shouted, "Xiao Mo Ge, do you dare?"

Shen Yu's eyes were dark and cold. People who were drunk were the most impulsive and easiest to provoke. He did not believe that Xiao Mo Ge would be unaffected at this time!

In a daze, Zuo Mo suddenly heard a "Little Mo Ge, do you dare?"

A thread of clarity suddenly returned among the burning fire. So thirsty! So hot! He suddenly raised the wine jar in his hand and gulped down, uncaring of the wine that spilled down his neck.

The cool feeling of the wine sliding across his skin caused him to feel a thread of pleasure!

In one go, he drank the remaining wine. Then he glared at Shen Yu and smashed the wine jar onto the ground.

When Shen Yu saw Zuo Mo drink furiously out of the wine jar, he was overjoyed inside.

When he saw Zuo Mo finish all the remaining wine in one go and stare hatefully at him, he wanted to laugh. He had seen drunkards before. Those that drank would all look like this! They would be clumsy in tongue and move roughly. Such a group of idiots!

He had succeeded!

As expected, he heard Zuo Mo smash the wine jar onto the ground. A shout rang through the entire hall!

“What are we betting?”

Shen Yu’s expression froze on his face. This was not the same as he had imagined.

He reflexively asked, “What do you mean betting?”

The surroundings became silent again. Their thinking was just like Shen Yu. They had all thought that Zuo Mo would say “Dare? I dare!” Who knew that Zuo Mo had skipped that and moved on to the gamble.

Those with slow responses did not manage to react.

“Country bumpkin!” Zuo Mo’s eyes were filled with disdain. His speech was slurred and drunken. He really looked down at Shen Yu now. No wonder he didn’t even have fifty mo bei. He used the last

thread of kindness he had and advised Shen Yu, “Without any benefit, it is very stupid to fight!”

Country bumpkin

Tendons bulged in Shen Yu’s forehead. He had never been scorned like this by someone right to his face. He saw Lan Rong forcing back a smile out of the corner of his eye. The other was almost unable to hold it, and his expression was twisted strangely.

He could imagine the expressions of the people behind him that were watching

Princess Xia

I will tolerate! Xiao Mo Ge already entered his trap. If he added some more pressure, Xiao Mo Ge would not be able to escape death today!

“What do you want?”

Shen Yu suppressed the anger inside and asked, stopping after each word.

Zuo Mo could still see Princess Xia’s face. He remembered that he needed to find this woman for a matter. But what matter was it? He couldn’t remember. He hit his head. Fine, it was fine if he did not remember, but he did have something to ask her about. He pointed at Princess Xia and said, “I want her!”

When the three words came out, the entire hall was so silent that the sound of a needle dropping to the ground could be heard.

Everyone was shocked by these three words. Their mouths gaped and their faces were full of disbelief. Who dared to say in front of Princess Xia that he wanted her!

Heavens! This was too impolite! Too impolite!

The young masters that were in love with Princess Xia shifted. Someone swore, “You dare! You dare to be so impolite to Princess Xia, are you tired of living?”

“Don’t lose your senses after drinking a few mouthfuls of wine!”

Hearing the enraged words behind his back, Shen Yu had an increasingly smug expression. He spread his hands and acted apologetic.

Zuo Mo finally realized. “So she isn’t your woman. No wonder ... you do not even have fifty mo bei to put down as a starting bet ... don’t bully me for being drunk ... you think that I am as stupid as you ... so stupid ...”

Shen Yu felt his head swell up. He had not expected the development of the matter to progress outside conventional pathways. Also, the anger inside could not be suppressed after Zuo Mo kept on saying he was “so stupid.”

An amused look flashed through Princess Xia's eyes. She suddenly spoke, "If you win, I will promise to accompany you for one day."

When the words came out, the people descended into noise.

Shen Yu was overjoyed. It seemed that Princess Xia felt something for him. Otherwise, she would not be lending a helping hand twice in succession. He decided inside, he would not fail Princess Xia's good intentions!

Zuo Mo could not remember what matter he had to find Princess Xia about. He just felt that his body was intensely burning!

His eyes were red and seemed to be glimmering with blood.

Shen Yu wanted to crush Zuo Mo into powder immediately. He asked in a murderous voice, "Are you satisfied now?"

Zuo Mo felt as though his entire body was filled with flames and a strong viciousness filled his body.

"Come!"

His voice seemed to come through the thick fire and carried an indescribable restlessness.

Shen Yu did not waste words. “To the challenge area!”

As this was the residence of the Great Peace City Master, there naturally was a stadium. Though it was not as large as the stadium outside the palace, the jinzhi placed on it were not lacking.

One was the genius Shen Yu who had been famous for many years and was considered the Shen Family’s most outstanding genius in the last two hundred years.

The other was Xiao Mo Ge who had come out of nowhere, caused the Shifting Star Sands, and placed on the Great Peace Mo Ranking.

Adding on Princess Xia’s tempting prize, this fight attracted the attention of everyone at the party.

“Should we stop them?” a servant asked.

Shi Yue Yi smiled and waved his hand. “No need, just watch, it is rare to have such a heated atmosphere.”

Because Shi Yue Yi never cultivated a mo spell, his face already seemed old. His hair was grey and white and it hung down naturally. The wrinkles on his face were faint but clear. He smiled from beginning to end as though everything was under his control. What was most attractive about him was his eyes that flashed with an intelligent and wise light. It would cause people to unconsciously submit.

Suddenly, a black robed male, and a dark shadow appeared next to Shi Yue Yi. They sat down without any courtesy and then started to eat and drink. The one in the black robe was Yu Shuang and the dark shadow was Chang Yuan Hao.

“Who does City Master favor?” the black robed male asked Shi Yue Yi.

Shi Yue Yi asked softly, “What about you?”

Yu Shuang thought and then responded, “Shen Yu, the Peacock King mo bloodline of the Shen Family has its unique aspects. Shen Yu has also been in general level for a long time and has the Peacock King mo physique. After so many years, he should have progressed.”

Shi Yue Yi turned to look at Chang Yuan Hao in the shadow. Chang Yuan Hao said, “Xiao Mo Ge!”

“Hm!” Yu Shuang was slightly shocked. “You actually favour Xiao Mo Ge? Why?”

“Intuition.” Chang Yuan Hao did not stop. The food on the table disappeared at a visible rate into the dark shadow.

“You are not a woman,” Yu Shuang said, unconvinced. However, he thought inside, this good friend of his did not speak much but he was usually right.

Shi Yue Yi smiled slightly and said, “Let’s watch, I feel great anticipation about the power of the Granny Meng Ghost Wine.”

Granny Meng Ghost Wine

Yu Shuang and the dark shadow paused simultaneously.

Yu Shuang asked in a stammer, “How much has he drank?”

Shi Yue Yi had his usual smile. “Sixteen jars.”

Yu Shuang gaped, his expression frozen on his face as though he had seen a ghost.

In the corner, Lan Tian Long who had drunk three jars of Granny Meng Ghost Wine was completely drunk.

Zuo Mo felt his entire body was burning and he was inside a ball of fire. Even the things he saw seemed to twist in the waves of heat.

It really was strong

That country bumpkin

Zuo Mo looked with drunken eyes at Shen Yu. His body was filled

with hot fire that was on the verge of overflowing.

Within this terrifying fire, Zuo Mo felt a thread of mad exhilaration.

There seemed to be something that was being dissolved by the flames and flowed out of the fire. This thing flowed into his head. However, his consciousness was almost completely clouded now. He wanted to examine and see what those things were but he could not seem to find the energy.

The murderousness on Shen Yu's face was undisguised now. When they were on the battlefield, the power of life and death would be on his hands.

He didn't just have to win, he had to win beautifully!

Only so, would he leave a deeper impression on Princess Xia.

He slowly walked towards Zuo Mo, step by step, unhurried, and composed. The five colored mo matrix on his body was like feathers that appeared and grew. When the crown of the peacock appeared on his forehead, his eyes were completely icy.

Zuo Mo suddenly raised his head. His blood-filled eyes were like that of a wild beast that flashed with a bloodthirsty light.

He raised his right hand.

Chapter 604 - Peacock Eyespot Domain

As Zuo Mo raised his right hand, the vast fire inside his body flowed like lava. Any kind of collision of the flows of energy would create bright sparks.

A strong pain burned every one of Zuo Mo's nerves.

The world twisted in his vision as though there were waves of heat. Shen Yu's body became unstable.

His position looked extremely strange. His right hand was raised, his body leaning slightly forward as though he was preparing to run. He grinned, raised his right leg and then suddenly stomped on the ground.

Like an arrow leaving the bow, he charged.

His body was off balance as he was leaning forward to the point that he was almost parallel to the ground. His two legs rapidly alternating as he accelerated.

Bang!

On the seventh step, with a sound like that of a whip, a white spherical ball of air suddenly exploded around him.

Sonic boom!

Zuo Mo's body suddenly became blurry.

Other than the screams of some females, many in the audience hardly reacted as they had seen Zuo Mo's fight with Miao Jun. They all knew that Zuo Mo could create a sonic boom, and the sonic boom was not a powerful move. It was only rare because it required a high degree of balance in all aspects.

In reality, many experts were shaking their heads inside. Using such an ordinary and uncreative attacking method was not enough against Shen Yu.

Zuo Mo did not know the thoughts of the audience. He only felt that his body was burning fiercely, and he was going to melt.

His legs moved even more quickly as though he wanted to vent the rampaging flood inside his body. With every step, he used all of his strength. His mind dazed, what was left was only his fighting instincts!

At this time, another clear bang sounded out!

Pia!

A spherical ball of white mist suddenly exploded around Zuo Mo's body!

This was the twelfth step!

There were five steps between the two spherical balls of mist!

Bam bam bam, many chairs fell to the floor. Many people who had been shaking their heads suddenly stood up with shocked expressions.

A second sonic boom!

It was a double sonic boom!

Achieving a sonic boom was very rare already, but a double sonic boom was so rare that it was the first time many people were seeing it. The first sonic boom meant that the body had broken free of the restraint of the air. The second sonic boom came from the body vibrating at such a rapid rate that they caused an implosion of the air around them.

A double sonic boom would form an area of empty space around the person's body.

All movements would be at their fastest and not face any resistance.

Other than needing the balance of their entire body to create a sonic boom, it required a great power in the body in order to form the second.

In other words, every one of Zuo Mo's muscles were quivering at an imperceptible rate.

So hot!

Within the crimson eyes, the scenery that passed seemed to slow down. He could not hear the noise from the outside. The rampaging fire seemed to roar inside and spread across his body.

He was like a wounded wild beast sprinting at full strength!

The mo matrix of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was extremely bright at this moment. The three suns on his back and the sun at his chest were furiously absorbing the hot fire inside his body. But the vast fire seemed to be an endless ocean. Even if the four suns were like four enormous whirlpools and absorbed the hot fire, the raging fire did not lessen.

The Sun Crystal Seed spun even faster.

The entire sea of fire started to become restless, as it sensed a threat from the spinning Sun Crystal Seed!

Boooom!

The restlessness of the fire sea spread to every bone of Zuo Mo's body, every muscle fibre. They vibrated simultaneously!

Suddenly, something indistinct seemed to float out in his mind!

Zuo Mo's eyes widened suddenly like a wild beast.

————

Shen Yu looked coldly at Xiao Mo Ge that was charging at him. He was surprised at the double sonic boom but was only surprised.

For general level, the ultimate technique was Domain!

With the peacock crown materialized on his forehead, he looked like a legendary king whose authority looked down on the world.

The peacock king mo bloodline was noble just like how the five colored mo matrix on his body was grandiose and brilliant.

At this time, Shen Yu's eyes were cold and dignified. His already handsome face now seemed like a mo god from the legends. The five colored feathers that were extremely beautiful were like a cape or a five colored waterfall that fell from his shoulders onto the ground.

He stood there silently. His presence was so noble that people could not move their gazes away.

All the females in the room could not stop themselves from

staring at the prince-like Shen Yu. Even Princess Xia showed a thread of dazedness. However, she quickly regained her mental clarity and was very shocked.

Shen Yu had always tried to show off in front of her, but he had never used all his ability like he was today!

Shen Yu looked coldly at Zuo Mo that was rushing frantically at him and elegantly raised his right hand.

The bright five colored light was like paint. With him as the center, the colors spread into the surroundings. In a moment, the entire battlefield turned into a multicolored world.

“Domain!”

“He actually reached Domain!”

People seemed to see something that was impossible to believe. If Zuo Mo’s double sonic boom had shocked them, then Shen Yu’s Domain that he created with a wave of his hand made them suspect that something was wrong with their eyes. Even Chang Yuan Hao and Yu Shuang had surprised expressions.

“It is a pity for Xiao Mo Ge. Shen Yu has cultivated a Domain ... the young people now really are” Yu Shuang shook his head emotionally.

They had heard the reputation of the genius of Shen Yu a long

time ago. People had to sigh and praise him for entering general level in his teens.

But all the praise was so insignificant in front of the multicolored world in front of them.

Domain!

This was a line that separated the experts from the masses, and a dividing line for whether one could level up further.

He was so young yet he had crossed this benchmark. His future was unlimited and he had a great hope of entering marshal level.

Many people were adjusting their judgment of the Shen Family.

Lan Rong's face was ashen as he watched from outside the battlefield.

Shen Yu had actually obtained Domain! Xiao Mo Ge was in danger!

There was no change of expression on Shen Yu's face which was as cold and indifferent like the peacock crown that was on his forehead.

[Peacock Eyespot Domain']

As the other seemed to come closer, Zuo Mo suddenly felt the surroundings became difficult to move as though he had entered a quagmire.

Shen Yu seemed to grow distant in his vision.

The distance between the two increased. In a blink, Shen Yu was a hundred zhang away.

He did not notice that dashes of circular marks like the eyespots on peacock feathers appeared on the ground. They were like strange eyes, or slowly spinning whirlpools.

The sticky feeling caused Zuo Mo to feel unusually uncomfortable.

He was like a wild beast that had charged into a net and was instinctively thrashing about! At this time, something slid across his head and caused him to give a shocking roar. He was like a wounded beast. His body suddenly jumped up, and when he reached the apex, his body shook and became blurry!

At the same time, a burning streak of fire pierced the ground from the sky.

Zuo Mo's fist punched out, causing a long flickering fist of fire to smash into a peacock eyespot on the ground.

Boom!

The ground shook and the eyes instantly shattered into countless flows of color. But quickly, they flowed back together from all directions like water and reformed back into the eyespots.

Shen Yu looked indifferently at Zuo Mo and was not affected.

This kind of damage was ineffective against his [Peacock Eyespot Domain].

————

When Zuo Mo's fist hit the ground, the sea of fire inside his body suddenly roared. Already savage, Zuo Mo felt very good.

He did not feel the resistance that came from striking with his fist.

He did not hesitate and lifted his fist again. As though he was mad, he punched again and again!

Boom boom boom!

The ground continued to tremble, the eyespots shattering under the punches and then reforming.

Zuo Mo did not seem to realize it. He was immersed in an indescribable feeling of pleasure. With every punch, the fire inside seemed to vent into the ground from his body. Everything in his body seemed to be burning furiously.

In the stands, Yu Shuang could not stop himself. “This guy really is drunk!”

“Sixteen jars of Ghost Wine.” Chang Yuan Hao was of few words, but the meaning did not need to be said.

“This guy is a freak as well. He drank sixteen jars of Granny Meng Ghost Wine and can still fight. How come I wasn’t this strong when I was young?” Yu Shuang sighed.

“He will give us a surprise.” Shen Yue Yi suddenly laughed lightly.

Yu Shuang and Chang Yuan Hao stilled simultaneously. Shi Yue Yi who had always been indifferent seemed to have eyes which were now flashing with another kind of light as he stared at Xiao Mo Ge.

The two exchanged a look and could see the shock in each other’s eyes.

City Master never spoke without basis. Did this little guy really have something special?

Both felt some anticipation.

Their gazes moved towards the battlefield landing on Xiao Mo Ge who was punching the ground in rapid succession.

“En?” Chang Yuan Hao seemed to have noticed something.

Hm?” Yu Shuang couldn’t help but give a slight sound of surprise.

————

Zuo Mo furiously punched the ground. He seemed to not know exhaustion and he used full power in every punch. The ground of the battlefield continued to tremble and even the guests in the stands could feel it.

He completely forgot about Shen Yu.

In his eyes, there were only the peacock eye spots that repeatedly shattered and reformed.

The spinning of the Sun Crystal Seed inside his body reached a shocking rate. It gave off threads of magnetism and even the three suns on his back were slowly pulling at the rampaging sea of fire inside Zuo Mo’s body.

The thing that appeared in Zuo Mo's mind slowly became clear.

Zuo Mo who had lost the ability to think a long time ago did not think at all. He instinctively changed according to what the thing in his mind said.

He punched again and again!

But without knowing it, each punch had started to vary in minute changes.

The speed that Zuo Mo punched was very quick. It was a storm that was so rapid, people could not catch it.

The tiny changes accumulated under this shocking speed. In a blink, people detected the change in his punches!

Chapter 605 - Peacock King Plume

Shen Yu gazed indifferently at Zuo Mo.

There wasn't any hint of change in his expression. The Peacock Eyespot Domain was full of variations, and using brute force against it would be of no use at all. Smug satisfaction flashed through his indifferent eyes.

Everything within the Peacock Eyespot Domain was within his grasp. He was like a mo god of the ancient era standing on top of the highest of peaks and looking at his enemies who were like minuscule ants beneath him. This feeling was so intoxicating.

Watching as his opponent smash the ground like an idiot, a hint of scorn flashed at Shen Yu's lips.

How about adding to the fire?

A mocking smile hung upon Shen Yu's lips, he raised his right hand again.

Suddenly, his gaze landed on Zuo Mo's right fist, and his smile froze.

What what was that?

Zuo Mo felt as though a sea of fire was roaring inside of him! The entire sea of fire was being agitated and pulled upon. The little Sun Crystal Seed and the other three suns were like an invisible hand that pulled on the entire sea of fire!

The blurry scenes that floated in his mind were like silent murmurs that urged Zuo Mo on.

Savagery and restlessness caused Zuo Mo to be unhesitating with his attacks. He punched down with his right hand like the scene in his mind!

Boom!

A spark formed between his fist and the ground before floating in the air.

None noticed this spark which was the size of a pin.

Even Zuo Mo did not notice. The sea of fire that was shifting inside his body was like a heavy block of wood being hoisted into the air. Every time he punched, the wood would fall down. The feeling was pleasurable and free; it was as though he could smash through anything!

One punch after another!

Dots of sparks flew from his fist and floated in the air. No matter how the waves of air moved, they seemed to be suspended motionlessly in the air.

The sparks increased in number, and soon everyone noticed it!

Still, Zuo Mo did not notice. The three suns on his back seemed to come alive and were revolving at a very slow rate. The golden lines that connected them changed as well.

The fiery pillar smashed into Zuo Mo's right arm every time he punched and stopped when it reached his wrist.

Zuo Mo did not know what this technique this was, but its name suddenly appeared in his mind.

Sun Hammer!

What was that

Zuo Mo was in an unclear state of mind, but he did not care and followed accordingly.

A thread of shen power exploded into sparks when it encountered the pillar of fire!

Drunk, Zuo Mo felt that the power of this technique wasn't satisfying enough. He tried all he could to layer all kinds of power

into his fist.

Sky Glass Wave! Shen Power! Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem! Sun Hammer!

Each punch was changing, becoming heavier!

Boom!

The ground shook.

Boom!

The trembling of the earth became even more evident.

Soon after, all the tables and chairs started to rattle . The beautiful matrons on the stands screamed and they could feel the stands vibrating!

No one paid attention to the screams. They all stared closely at the battlefield. They stopped breathing and didn't dare to blink.

The trembling of the earth increased, and the plates on the table clinked.

How heavy was Xiao Mo Ge's fist!

In order to guarantee that those outside the field were not affected, there had been layers of jinzhi set around the battlefield. Yet the vibrations outside the field were so strong. People could not imagine just how powerful Xiao Mo Ge's punches were!

“Such terrifying power.” Yu Shuang murmured to himself. His expression changed slightly. “This kind of brute force probably rivals those of the Iron-mountain Elephant Clan.”

Shi Yue Yi's gaze was deep and his tone slightly reminiscent. “My master once said that people that could drink more than ten jars of Granny Meng Ghost Wine were all special people.”

“Special people?” Chang Yuan Hao instantly grasped the most important part of the sentence.

“My master did not explain what he meant.” Shi Yue Yi shook his head. “I've never changed the recipe for this Granny Meng Ghost Wine. I also want to know what kind of person that my master would deem special is like.”

When he finished speaking, his tone carried a thread of anticipation and excitement.

Chang Yuan Hao was slightly shocked. The City Master was usually composed and at ease, as though he was confident no matter the situation. It was the first time he saw such an

expression on City Master's face.

Yu Shuang's gaze did not move away from the battlefield. "Now it is time to see how far Shen Yu's Peacock Eyespot Domain has progressed and if he can withstand this."

The three closed their mouths and gazed at the battlefield among the strong vibrations.

Shen Yu's expression changed slightly.

He seemed to be standing on the surface of a drum as someone continued to bang on it. With every beat, the ground trembled and the vibration increased in strength.

The peacock eyespots were still maintaining themselves on the ground, but Shen Yu could feel that they were being shaken and becoming unstable!

What kind of freak was this person?

He almost did not believe his own eyes. The other was able to express such power within the Peacock Eyespot Domain. This guy

Within the Peacock Eyespot Domain, every eyespot was a

whirlpool. He had just managed to cultivate the Peacock Eyespot Domain two years ago, but there were already nine hundred and ninety eyespots in his Peacock Eyespot Domain!

With nine hundred and ninety eyespots moving simultaneously, someone weaker would have been torn apart immediately. Even if their body was strong, under the power of nine hundred and ninety peacock eyespots, they would be like a fly that had flown into a spiderweb and would tangle themselves up even as they struggled.

And finally, when the power entangled the enemy till they were unable to move, Shen Yu could easily go in for the kill under the other's terrified gaze.

However

He looked hard at Zuo Mo. For some unknown reason, he felt a wave of coldness. He knew that Xiao Mo Ge felt the effects of the Peacock Eyespot Domain. Xiao Mo Ge's body had visibly paused when he entered the Peacock Eyespot Domain.

Yet, Xiao Mo Ge was raining down punches on the ground like he was mad!

These actions that had seemed extremely idiotic to him, now caused Shen Yu to feel a sense of danger.

He could not just sit and wait!

Shen Yu seemed to wake up and viciousness flashed through his eyes.

He decided to use that move!

————

Zuo Mo felt unprecedentedly good. The drunkenness rose to his mind and he was even more excited. The peacock eyespot in front of him did not have the time to reform before it was smashed apart again. As Zuo Mo's punches became heavier, the terrifying power spread out and produced wave after wave of rainbow ripples.

So good!

Zuo Mo laughed madly into the air as he continued to punch!

Punching at a rate that was so fast that robbed people of their breath, the strong fire shifted restlessly inside Zuo Mo's body. He was like a person that was dying of thirst and furiously searching for water. What he was trying to find were ways that could get the power of his punches to be stronger.

The more power that came from the collision of the fire, the more shen power would come out of his body!

The mo matrix on Zuo Mo's right fist was blindingly bright and

drew out streaks of light in the air as he moved it rapidly.

Now under the blinding streaks of light, no one could see the scattered sparks that floated in the air.

At this time, the peacock eyespots under his feet seemed to be attracted by a magnet and started to gather in one direction.

With his eyes blurred in drunkenness, Zuo Mo stopped moving and watched as the eyespots moved past his foot. He slowly moved his head and looked in the direction the peacock eyespots had disappeared into.

The peacock eyespots on the ground and in the air were gathering on Shen Yu's body.

Shen Yu was completely transformed at this moment. Peacock feathers had crawled up his body and entered his mo matrix. The peacock crown on Shen Yu's forehead seemed to come alive, the wings spreading. In a flash, its spread wings covered Shen Yu's head. It transformed into an exquisite helmet that only showed Shen Yu's eyes; a peacock feather that was about half a chi long appeared in Shen Yu's hand!

Zuo Mo stilled, remembering that he had made a bet with the person in front of him.

But he could not remember what the bet was about.

How could Little Mo Ge lose a bet?

Zuo Mo swayed as he moved to face Shen Yu.

————

No one dared to underestimate this drunken youth any longer. Every one of his punches seemed to land upon their minds.

However, when Shen Yu's transformation was revealed, especially that five-colored peacock feather, exclamations rang out in the crowd.

“Peacock King Plume!”

Even Yu Shuang could not keep his composure from where he was in the stands. He suddenly stood up and stared hard at the battlefield with a stunned expression. “This guy even managed to cultivate the Peacock King Plume; the Shen Family really produced someone amazing!”

Peacock King Plume, the famed killing move of the Shen Family, and one of the top killing moves even among the many prestigious families of Hundred Savage Realm. There were numerous foes in the history of the Shen Family that had fallen to this move.

The founder of the Shen Family had used this move to kill seventy-nine generals, astounding the world and then founding the Shen Family.

The Peacock King Plume was very powerful, but it was just as difficult to cultivate as it was strong. Even now, the number of those who had cultivated the Peacock King Plume in the Shen Family lineage could be counted on one hand. Those that wanted to cultivate the Peacock King Plume had to have a deep understanding of the Peacock Eyespot Domain.

The difficulty in achieving the Peacock Eyespot Domain was high to start with. There was just a handful of Shen Family descendants that could comprehend the Peacock Eyespot Domain in each generation and even fewer among those that could comprehend the Peacock King Plume.

So when Yu Shuang saw the peacock feather in Shen Yu's hand, the shock he felt could be imagined.

“Incomplete.” Chang Yuan Hao suddenly spoke.

“It is enough,” Yu Shuang sighed lightly. “He is so young and able to cultivate the Peacock King Plume. That kind of talent is probably not any less than the founder of the Shen Family.”

Chang Yuan Hao was silent. Yu Shuang was right.

Shen Yu's talent was so high that it was shocking.

He looked at the swaying and drunken youth. He felt pity inside. This youth was also talented, but he probably had not expected to

encounter a genius of the century like Shen Yu.

Such a pity.

Feeling pity, Chang Yuan Hao suddenly looked across Zuo Mo's feet and his gaze focused abruptly.

That was

A single ball of sparks floated silently next to Zuo Mo's feet.

Chapter 606 - Reversed Stellar Revolution

A hint of fear flashed through Shen Yu's eyes as he stared at his opponent. For some reason, the Peacock King Plume in his hand was not as reassuring to him as he had expected. The person standing in front of him was struggling with his domain and didn't have the presence of an expert. He was a flailing drunkard that could be found on any street corner.

But this drunkard caused him to feel a hint of fear.

He didn't know why. Was it because those punches just now that had been unusually powerful? Or was it Xiao Mo Ge's mad laughter?

Shen Yu's gaze quickly cleared up. The strong power that came from the Peacock King Plume in his hand completely suppressed the thread of terror.

He laughed lightly. The fear had come without any reason. It should be the other that felt fear.

Just now, Xiao Mo Ge's display should have shocked everyone. However, wasn't that what he wanted? If such a powerful opponent fell under his Peacock King Plume, it would be a great chapter in his legend.

This was a person that could cause the Shifting Star Sands!

Let's end it everything finish!

Shen Yu thought. His eyes flashed with a cold light as he raised his right hand.

The Peacock King Plume turned into a multi-colored light that shot at Xiao Mo Ge!

An expression of pain appeared on Zuo Mo's face.

After the repeated punches, the fire inside his body was like a heavy weight. Each heavy punch caused the fire inside his body to shudder. The fire was suppressed by the Sun Crystal Seed and the power of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, yet in reality, it was still extremely restless.

He did not feel it when he was punching but after he stopped, the ball of fire expanded into countless streams that entered Zuo Mo's limbs and organs.

In this instant, Zuo Mo felt his head ring. His already muddled mind went blank.

Almost at the same time, the three suns that had been slowly revolving on his back stopped.

A light moved from the sun mo matrix at the center of his chest along the golden lines and quickly through the three suns on his back!

The four suns suddenly gave off a blinding light.

The ball of sparks next to Zuo Mo's feet suddenly lit up. These sparks were like stars. They suddenly became attracted to Zuo Mo's right hand.

Hiss!

It was an extremely light sound.

In a blink, the sun mo matrix on Zuo Mo's right palm abruptly gave off a blinding light. The fifth sun of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus moved!

Boom!

This fifth sun that wasn't any different than the other four activated suns, was causing a string of unexpected occurrences!

It's position was too distinct. Zuo Mo's right hand was where the power whirlpool was contained by the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie mo matrix!

A burst of savage power furiously followed towards the sun on

Zuo Mo's right palm. In a blink, Zuo Mo's sun mo matrix almost burst as it restrained the flows of power which contained a significant amount of shen power.

It suddenly dimmed and a presence that was divergent to the other suns appeared on Zuo Mo's right hand.

Many sparks and dots appeared next to this sun script like the marks of the stars.

The cloud of sparks began to circle around his hands and spin endlessly like a tiny stream of red stars.

The red light suddenly spread outwards from under Zuo Mo and fought back against the darkness of Shen Yu's domain.

“Domain!” An exclamation rang out among the crowd.

This exclamation caused Zuo Mo's mind to shudder. The drunkenness that accompanied the ball of fire seemed to have retreated, and his vision suddenly cleared.

Consequently, he saw a streak of five colored light shooting at him.

In this moment, the feeling of extreme danger caused the hairs on his body to stand on end!

Without even thinking, he raised his right hand.

The handful of sparks that shrouded his palm shot at the streak of light.

————

Shi Yue Yi suddenly stood up. He looked at the handful of sparks with an excited expression.

At this time, no one was paying attention to him. Everyone was looking closely at the battlefield. They all had a feeling that after this round of attacks, someone would definitely fall!

The speed of the sparks was not fast and in front of the lightning fast Peacock King Plume, it was like a turtle.

The Peacock King Plume shot into the cloud of sparks.

And a stunning scene occurred!

The moment the unstoppable Peacock King Plume came into contact with the sparks, it slowed down. When it was halfway into the sparks, it was as slow as a snail.

Hiss!

A wisp of fire suddenly appeared at the tip of the Peacock King Plume. The fire quickly spread along the Peacock King Plume.

Woosh!

In a blink, the Peacock King Plume turned into a ball of ash and disappeared.

Just at the same moment the first wisp of fire appeared on the Peacock King Plume, Shen Yu's eyes suddenly widened. He was stunned and motionless as though he had been struck by lightning.

No one noticed a wisp of fire appear from under his feet and climb onto his feet.

When Shen Yu noticed this wisp of fire, it was too late. The wisp suddenly grew and engulfed him in a flash. A horrid scream came from inside the flames.

“Ahhh ... Ahhh ...”

The hair-raising scream was suddenly choked off. The fire disappeared and with a pop, there was nothing left in its place.

The handful of sparks flew back and wrapped around Zuo Mo's right hand. It gradually changed form and in the blink of an eye, it appeared like a red bracelet around Zuo Mo's wrist. The bracelet slowly spun around Zuo Mo's right hand. If one looked closely, they would be able to distinguish a scene similar to a revolving red

galaxy.

The change came so fast. The entire situation had flipped on its head, and Shen Yu had been turned to ash.

It was deathly silent.

On the stands, Shi Yue Yi had a disbelieving expression as he murmured to himself, “Reversed Stellar Revolution Reversed Stellar Revolution”

Chang Yuan Hao froze when he heard this. A moment later, he slowly said, “Isn’t he cultivating Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus? How can he obtain the Reversed Stellar Revolution?”

“Reversed Stellar Revolution? It isn’t possible!” Yu Shuang recovered from his shock. “That is a killing move only those with star-type mo physiques can achieve!”

“I do not know how.” Shi Yue Yi quickly recovered his calmness and shook his head as he said, “Usually, those practicing the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus cannot produce the Reversed Stellar Revolution, but that is the Reversed Stellar Revolution. His Reversed Stellar Revolution is not the normal Reversed Stellar Revolution. His stars are crimson red, and clearly have a fire attribute. This deviation should be related to the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus that he cultivates.”

“Impossible! Impossible!” Yu Shuang’s head shook like a rattledrum. “How can someone with Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus cultivate the Reversed Stellar Revolution? This is absurd!”

If it wasn’t the city master that was in front of him, he would have scorned this comment.

“He also caused the Shifting Star Sands,” Chang Yuan Hao suddenly said.

“Is it really the Reversed Stellar Revolution?” Yu Shuang stared at the crimson bracelet that was spinning in the air. It was unknown what he was thinking.

Zuo Mo regained clarity of mind and the jinzhi on the battlefield were turned off. Lan Rong excitedly jumped onto the field and threw an arm around Zuo Mo’s shoulder. He was so excited he almost couldn’t speak coherently. “Brother, you are too powerful! Too powerful! You could even defeat the Peacock King Plume, you really are powerful!”

The surrounding people looked at Zuo Mo with eyes filled with respect and fear.

Any person that could defeat the Peacock King Plume was certainly deserving of this much.

Zuo Mo's face was puzzled. He was muddled about everything that had occurred when he was drunk. He was also slightly surprised at Lan Rong's closeness but he did not push the other away. He asked cluelessly, "What happened? What happened here? Why am I unable to recall anything?"

Lan Rong paused. He stared at Zuo Mo for a long while. Seeing the other did not seem to be faking, he hurriedly narrated what had occurred just now.

When he got to the dangerous and exciting parts, Lan Rong's arms gestured excitedly and he was even more spirited than Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. He did not have any recollection at all. He had killed Shen Yu! The other had comprehended domain and had that Peacock King Plume. The other sounded very strong.

He noticed the crimson bracelet on his wrist. Stopping, his mind inspected the bracelet, and then an indescribable feeling came to him.

"Hey hey hey! Are you dumb from excitement?" Lan Rong saw Zuo Mo was in a daze and hurriedly shouted.

Zuo Mo refocused. He knew that this was not the place to investigate so he moved his mind back and looked around. "Where is Brother Tian Long?"

After this event, the three of them had gone through their own battles and the relationship had naturally changed.

“He is not as good a drinker as you, and is lying down over there in a corner. You are really ferocious. I’ve never seen anyone drink so much Granny Meng Ghost Wine, and you were even able to kill Shen Yu after that. Monster! Too freakish!”

Lan Rong shook his head as he reflected.

Suddenly, a voice came from behind him.

“You won! Three days later, I will find you and accompany you for a day.”

Zuo Mo turned around. What entered his vision was a beautiful, seductive face that held a hint of indolence. That pair of eyes that seemed to be able to speak, examined Zuo Mo curiously.

Princess Xia!

Zuo Mo suddenly became nervous. Wasn’t this his goal?

He forcibly suppressed the impulse to act immediately and forced out a smile. “Princess Xia is one to keep your word! Good! In three days, I will wait for Princess’ arrival!”

Princess Xia smiled like a blooming flower. The surroundings seemed to brighten, and the sound of swallowing sounded in the surroundings. This dissipated much of the tension in the air.

“This is a reward you deserve!”

Finished speaking, Princess Xia turned and left.

“Such a beauty!” Lan Rong looked at the back of Princess Xia and couldn’t help but praise. However, he quickly had a mischievous smile on his face as he poked Zuo Mo. “Hee hee, don’t you feel it difficult to get through these three days?”

Zuo Mo instantly didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. Lan Rong was so lively it was almost overboard. However, this feeling was pretty good.

He cooperated. “Three days, it will go by quickly.”

Lan Rong’s tone suddenly turned serious and he said to Zuo Mo in a low voice. “You need to be careful. You might have defeated Shen Yu in a challenge which is lawful so no one can openly protest. However, the Shen Family placed great importance on Shen Yu and they will not let the matter end here. You have to be careful of them acting from the shadows.”

Zuo Mo gratefully patted the other. “Do not worry, I will be careful.”

After saving Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, he would quickly leave. Why would he stay in Great Peace City?

But Lan Rong's reminder was sincere and Zuo Mo could feel that.

Suddenly, Zuo Mo noticed several people walking towards them.

Chapter 607 - “Special”

“Congratulations, congratulations! Little Brother Xiao Mo Ge has stepped onto a new level with this battle, it really is an occasion to celebrate.”

The one that spoke was an old man that Zuo Mo did not recognize. Zuo Mo started to act humble when he heard Lan Rong bow and say, “Lan Rong greets City Master!”

City Master! Shi Yue Yi?

The average-looking old man in Zuo Mo’s eyes instantly appeared to be more scholarly and deep. As expected, reputation made the person. Zuo Mo felt great admiration towards people that were knowledgeable. This time, he was sincerely humble. “City Master is too generous!”

Shi Yue Yi smiled slightly, the faint wrinkles on his face clear to the eye. He looked at Lan Rong, and said warmly, “You are a child of the Lan Family, right? Not bad, you have some sense of honor.”

He turned his face to look at Zuo Mo, introducing, “Let me introduce these two to Little Brother.”

“Chang Yuan Hao.” A deep voice came from the shadows.

“This one is Yu Shuang.” There was a slight smile on Yu Shuang’s face. He bowed slightly and was warm and elegant.

Without needing Lan Rong's introduction, he knew who these two were, first and second ranked on the Great Peace Mo Ranking! Even though Xiao Mo Ge was full of confidence in himself, he was still shocked that these two personages had come. He returned a bow. "I am Xiao Mo Ge! Please take care of me!"

At the side, Lan Rong was so excited he wasn't able to speak. He had attended the banquet of the City Master many times but it was the first time he met these three major personages. He felt as though he was dreaming to have been complimented by the City Master.

Shi Yue Yi smiled slightly at Lan Rong. "I'm sorry, we have come to find Little Brother Xiao to discuss some matters, please accept my apologies!"

Lan Rong seemed to wake up and immediately recovered. He said perceptively, "This junior needs to go search for my Brother! Goodbye, City Master, goodbye, Elders!"

He bowed respectfully and then retreated.

Matters to discuss? Zuo Mo was puzzled. It was the first time he met these three. What was there to discuss?

Shi Yue Yi did not clarify and motioned with a hand. "Little Brother, let us go over there."

“Alright!”

The four of them entered a quiet room. When they entered the room, the noise from the outside instantly disappeared. Zuo Mo noticed that there were jinzhi set up in the room that could prevent eavesdroppers.

“I had not expected Little Brother to cultivate the Reversed Stellar Revolution.” The one who spoke first was Shi Yue Yi. With those initial words, he attracted Zuo Mo’s attention.

“Reversed Stellar Revolution? This?” Zuo Mo raised his right wrist and the crimson bracelet that slowly spun around.

“Yes.” Shi Yue Yi glanced at Zuo Mo. “It appears that Little Brother does not know much about it.”

“Yes, I do not understand, City Master, please give me guidance,” Zuo Mo said obediently.

Shi Yue Yi smiled slightly. “Reversed Stellar Revolution is a kind of killing move. However, killing moves of this kind are usually only obtained after those with star-type mo physiques comprehend Domain.”

“Star type mo physiques?” Zuo Mo shook his head. “I cultivate the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.”

Shi Yue Yi nodded and said, “This is where Little Brother is

special. It is true that Little Brother cultivates the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus that is ranked third among general rank physiques, and I also noticed that while the [Domain] that Little Brother has comprehended has not fully taken form, it is already crimson red. If I am right, Little Brother has already reached the doorway to the [Ten Crow Celestial Domain.]”

“I’ve reached the doorway to Domain?” This time, it was Zuo Mo’s turn to be shocked. His mind shifted and the suns suddenly gave off a strange power. A crimson ring of light appeared under his feet.

“As expected, it is the Ten Crow Celestial Domain!” Yu Shaung couldn’t help but speak. “As expected of the top ranked Domain among the general ranks. Even though it has not taken form, it is so strong and domineering.”

His voice was filled with admiration.

Zuo Mo felt increasingly puzzled. However, he knew that the other would explain the cause since the other had come to find him.

As he expected, Shi Yue Yi continued. “It is the first time that I saw a situation like Little Brother’s. Little Brother, you clearly cultivate the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique, and the Domain you comprehend is the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, how could you cultivate the Reversed Stellar Revolution?”

“Star type mo physique? What is the mo physique you cultivated

previously?” Yu Shuang couldn’t help but ask.

“Great Day mo physique,” Zuo Mo said.

“Second among colonel level mo physiques!” Yu Shuang couldn’t help himself. “A strong mo physique as well. And before that?”

“Jade Metal Head.”

This time, even Shi Yue Yi was slightly surprised. Yu Shuang looked at Zuo Mo as though he was looking at a freak. “Ranking fifth among captain level, are you from an ancient family?”

“I don’t know.” Zuo Mo gave an embarrassed grimace. “I know nothing about my birth.”

Shi Yue Yi and Yu Shuang both showed slight surprise but they quickly recovered.

“There is also another possible cause.” Chang Yuan Hao suddenly spoke from within the shadows.

The three turned their gazes onto him.

“If one cultivates yao arts to a certain level, they can also cultivate the Reversed Stellar Revolution.” Chang Yuan Hao’s words were a surprise to hear.

Yu Shuang stilled and then slapped his forehead with his palm. “How could I forget that? Stars and yao, star power is one of the powers that yao favor the most. There is probably more yao than mo that have the Reversed Stellar Revolution. Oh, I remember, you seem to know yao arts.”

“A bit,” Zuo Mo said as he nodded his head. When he had fought against Miao Jun, he had used little yao arts so he openly admitted it.

The gazes of the trio turned strange when they looked at him.

“It seems that this is the cause.” Shi Yue Yi nodded and said, “There have been those in the past that cultivate mo and yao together, but I haven’t ever heard of anyone that cultivates Reversed Stellar Revolution and the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus together. As expected of what my master said, people that can drink more than ten jars of Granny Meng Ghost Wine are all special people.”

“What is your yao art Domain?” Yu Shuang asked curiously.

“Yao art Domain? I do not have one.” Zuo Mo shook his head.

“You did not cultivate a yao art Domain, but you comprehended the killing move. This ... this is too ...” Yu Shuang didn’t know what to say.

Shi Yue Yi saw his deeply impacted state and comforted. “If your

[Thousand Coil Threads] is complete, you can definitely break through to marshal level.”

Yu Shuang rolled his eyes and said in a negative tone. “[Ten Crow Celestial Domain] is my bane.”

“[Ten Crow Celestial Domain] is everyone’s bane.” Shi Yue Yi comforted skillfully. “Look at Yuan Hao, he is even worse off than you are. He is completely subdued by it in every way.”

The shadow stilled when he heard this.

Yu Shuang’s expression turned from depressed to sunny. He clapped and said with a smile, “Haha! Yes, in any case, anyone else that comes to fight will be worse off.”

Zuo Mo listened to Shi Yue Yi and Yu Shuang’s conversation. His heart jumped wildly. He was worried the other would decide to kill the threat in its infancy. Then it would be over for him. The two old mo were not people that Shen Yu could compare to. Added that, even now, Zuo Mo did not understand how he had defeated Shen Yu.

Shi Yue Yi saw Zuo Mo’s uneasiness and couldn’t help but laugh. “I can see that Little Brother doesn’t have such intentions. You should reinforce this perception after just having a breakthrough. Little Brother, at your leisure, let us gather in a few days.”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo immediately fled as though he was being

pardoned.

After Zuo Mo's figure left, the room became quiet again.

"His birth is not simple." The one that spoke first was actually Chang Yuan Hao.

"He's not bad." Yu Shuang said with a smile, "Not a bad boy, I hope that Princess Xia won't tempt him away."

Shi Yue Yi shook his head and said, "Little Xia will probably fail this time."

"Why? Such a young boy, it wouldn't be simple for him to resist the power of Princess Xia." Yu Shuang looked gossipy.

"How long has it been since Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus appeared last?" Shi Yue Yi suddenly asked.

"Very long ago." Yu Shuang wasn't sure. Thinking about what Zuo Mo had said just now, he couldn't help but gape. "Jade Metal Head, Great Day, Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, this is the best evolution path! If this was made public, how many would be jealous! Even I am jealous hearing that. It is infuriating to compare myself to him!"

Shi Yue Yi automatically ignored Yu Shuang's mutterings. He had a thoughtful expression.

“Is something wrong?” Chang Yuan Hao suddenly spoke.

Shi Yue Yi slowly said, “I am thinking about that specialness that my master talked about. I wonder if the specialness refers to this.”

“Of course it refers to this!” Yu Shuang’s tone was certain. “If this isn’t what’s special, then there isn’t anything else that is special. This boy is definitely a freak among the freaks, the greatest freak of them all!”

Shi Yue Yi said gravely, “I have always persisted in making the Granny Meng Ghost Wine because of the words that my master said. In my memories, my master rarely used the word ‘special’ to refer to anyone. Every word that my master said was carefully selected and had its own profound meaning. In these years, I have always pondered what the ‘specialness’ that my master spoke of referred to.”

Shi Yue Yi caused Yu Shuang to quiet down. For everyone in Great Peace City, Shi Zi Ming was like an all-powerful god.

“Since the time has not arrived, let us first observe,” Yu Shuang said.

Shi Yue Yi nodded and the three sank into silence.

“Pu, is this really the Reversed Stellar Revolution?” On the road back to the compound, Zuo Mo couldn’t resist asking.

“It really is the Reversed Stellar Revolution.” Pu Yao’s expression was slightly grave. “However, your Reversed Stellar Revolution is not the same as the normal Reversed Stellar Revolution, you have sun shen power inside it.”

He then warned, “You should spend some time now on practicing your yao arts. Without a yao art Domain, you will not be able to express much of the power of the Reversed Stellar Revolution.”

Wei slowly spoke, “A Zuo, you have just reached the doorway to the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, you cannot let it lie. This is the first ranked Domain of the general level, it is not something that Reversed Stellar Revolution can compare to.”

Hearing this, Pu Yao smirked coldly and said, “You are ignorant! You really think that the Ten Crow Celestial Domain is invincible? The Reversed Stellar Revolution is full of variations and this one contains shen power. The Ten Crow Celestial Domain might not be a match.”

Wei was not angry and said with a smile, “It cannot be called invincible, but it is not me that gave it the title of the top Domain in general level.”

Zuo Mo looked at the duo that was arguing and said helplessly, “Don’t you two find it very strange? I practice the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, but what developed was the Reversed Stellar

Revolution?”

“Is it strange?” Pu Yao asked in response.

“It’s alright.” Wei’s expression was matter of fact.

Zuo Mo was speechless.

Chapter 608 - Insider Information

Zuo Mo did not know what effects the events at this banquet had had on all of Great Peace City. When he returned home, he instantly settled down and started to ponder on his [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] and the Reversed Stellar Revolution.

Right now, five of ten suns of his Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique had turned bright. In other words, it meant that half of the suns were lit up. Other than this, he had an unexpected gain in the second transformation of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus: the Sun Hammer. However, what was most attractive to Zuo Mo was the [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] and the Reversed Stellar Revolution.

The Ten Crow Celestial Domain was called the top domain of general level, and unparalleled in its dominance. If he could comprehend it, it meant that he would ascend to the top ranks of general level experts in one leap. However, he quickly discovered that it was not as simple as it seemed. Right now, he had just reached the doorway towards domain, and his own domain had not formed yet.

There was still a long path to walk, but Zuo Mo now had a general notion of what a domain was. There was a profound power between the five suns. This kind of power formed a domain.

These powers were like chaotic streams that had to be slowly organized. When they were better organized and perfected, the domain would also be perfected.

This was something that would take time and there were no shortcuts to take.

What had surprised Zuo Mo the most was the Reversed Stellar Revolution. After he had returned home and examined it in detail, he found the parts of it that were sparks of fire were made from shen power!

Their structure was unique and complex. Zuo Mo wanted to study the structure, but when he reached out with his mind, he felt dizzy. He immediately understood that this was out of his reach at the moment.

Zuo Mo understood that the reason the sparks were powerful was not because they were the Reversed Stellar Revolution but because they contained shen power.

This seemed more like a method of channeling shen power.

He understood little about shen power. He thought about asking Ceng Lian Er but then gave up.

As to the Reversed Stellar Revolution, Zuo Mo had thrown it to the back of his mind. When would he have the time to cultivate a yao art domain? In any case, he did not have the time now!

So Zuo Mo focused on organizing his newly formed Ten Crow Celestial Domain under Pu Yao's icy smile.

Then he thought about how he could inquire about Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng with Princess Xia when he met with her in three days.

For some reason, that woman gave him a feeling she was not an easy one to deal with.

————

“What do you think of Xiao Mo Ge?” Princess Xin suddenly asked.

“His power is very strange.” The sound of the heavy armored guard came from inside the armor.

“Very strange?” Princess Xin did not understand.

“En.” The heavy armor guard treasured his words as though they were gold.

Princess Xin’s delicate brow furrowed; but even in irritation, Princess Xin was dignified. Her finger unconsciously tapped the tabletop. “In that case, he is a very good choice.”

The heavy armor guard was silent.

A moment later, Princess Xin made a decision. “Come in!”

A servant pushed open the door and entered. “Princess!”

“Send someone to deliver an invitation to Mister Xiao Mo Ge to attend an evening banquet. The time will be in four days,” Princess Xin said lightly.

“Yes.” The servant acknowledged and left.

Princess Xin suddenly smiled. “A Xia might have some objections about me now.”

The heavy armor guard was silent.

Princess Xin’s mind wandered as she gazed out of the window.

————

“Grandpa Zhu, are we inviting Xiao Mo Ge?” Princess Wan asked curiously with wide eyes.

“Yes.” Zhu Ke smiled slightly. “His future is limitless, it would be a pity to give up on a talent like this. Also”

He suddenly stopped speaking.

“Oh.” Princess Wan nodded, but not in full understanding. She asked with a tilted head, “Then what are we inviting him over to

do?”

“Just to eat a meal,” Zhu Ke said with a smile.

“Will Elder Sister Xia blame us?” Princess Wan said anxiously.

Zhu Ke said with a smile, “Your Elder Sister Xia is a very strong person. However, her biggest mistake this time is aiming for too much.”

“Aiming? What is Elder Sister Xia aiming for?” Princess Wan asked curiously.

“Princess will know when it is time.” Zhu Ke put down the pen in his hand. After closely reading over the invitation, he made a satisfied expression. He handed the invitation to a servant that had been waiting at the side as he penned the letter. The servant immediately left upon receiving the invitation.

Adhering to his normal routine, Zuo Mo went to Luo Li Shixiong’s room. Luo Li Shixiong did not have any signs of energy but his body had not become rigid as was usual for death and was soft as was usual.

Zuo Mo’s worries eased slightly. No one had cultivated the Life-Death Lock before, and he had been worried. If it wasn’t that Luo Li Shixiong had been seeking death, he never would have taken it

out.

A Gui's shen power was increasing rapidly, but what made him happy was that, while the increase in shen power was astounding, the light in A Gui's eyes seemed to be increasing similarly.

Her eyes were more lively than in the past, and she had more responses.

This made Zuo Mo very happy, even happier than when he had the breakthrough.

But when he received the two invitations, he was stunned where he stood.

“Did you hear, Princess Xin and Princess Wan could not resist! They each sent an invitation to Xiao Mo Ge at the same time!”

“Tsk tsk, this time, Xiao Mo Ge has something to posture about! Three princesses extending invitations at the same time, how long has it been since this occurred?”

“Ha, Princess Xin and Princess Wan are not stupid. It would be strange if they did not try to recruit such a powerful person! Also, the matter of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion has made such a ruckus, one more expert is one more bit of power.”

“Where did this Xiao Mo Ge really come from”

The sounds on the street all fell into Nanmen Xue’s ears. Nanmen Xue had an arm around a beautiful woman as he shook his head and smiled. “This really disrupts one’s dreams.”

“Please! Right now, the entire city is crazy.” The male opposite Nanmen Xue also had a displeased expression. He then smiled strangely and said, “In the past, even Qi Diao Yu did not get this kind of attention!”

Hearing the name Qi Diao Yu, Nanmen Xue glanced at the other. “Do you not want me to have a good day today?”

The other laughed. “I just think that you have sunk and do not have any spirit. I find it strange, why you didn’t try to find trouble with Qi Diao Yu?”

“I’m too lazy to pay attention to him,” Nanmen Xue said unconcernedly. He hugged the beauty at his side, kissed her and said with pleasure on his face, “With a beauty in hand, idleness is the best of life. You guys fight and kill all day, don’t you find it bothersome?”

“That’s true.” The other seemed to agree. “In this world, the strong eat the weak. Right now, you are in Great Peace City and no one dares to target you. However, a dragon is not a part of the scenery. You are accompanied by beauties every day, you look to be carefree, but in truth, you must find it boring.”

The other did not look at Nanmen Xue and said directly, “Those say, drunken and lying in the lap of a beauty, wake with the power of the world in hand, are you someone to submit?”

Nanmen Xue roared with laughed. “No matter how clever your tongue is, what does it have to do with me?”

The other was not angry and said with a smile, “I heard that Shi Yue Yi has been searching for a person all this time.” Then he said meaningfully, “The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion has been sleeping for such a long time, it is time for it to see the light of day again.”

Nanmen Xue did not seem to hear it.

“In the past, Brother Nanmen dominated the Little Sparrow Water’s twelve jie. With one call, the heroes all submitted. But right now, you have lost your spirit and immersed yourself in drunkenness; you are a completely different person.”

Nanmen Xue smiled.

“Other people do not know the reason and laugh at Brother Nanmen for falling off the path. However, I know of Brother Nanmen’s love and your unchanging heart!” This male stared at Nanmen Xue, emphasizing each word.

Nanmen Xue’s smile suddenly faded, his expression turning cold

as his presence locked tightly onto the other!

“You investigated me!”

The light words were like the clang of bells and shot to the bottom of the other’s heart. The other felt his blood and energies roil, his breathing becoming difficult. He was shocked. Such terrifying power!

He gritted his teeth and persisted. “Nanmen Xue, do you not want to rescue the person you love?”

Murderousness flashed in Nanmen Xue’s eyes as his hand shot up.

“I have Fire Heart Gall!”

The other’s words caused Nanmen Xue’s expression to suddenly change. He grabbed the other. “Say that again!”

Looking at Nanmen Xue’s handsome features that were twisted, and his undisguised murderousness as well as the presence that was securely locked onto him; the other began to suffocate.

He gritted out, “I have Fire Heart Gall!”

Nanmen Xue’s hand opened and the male collapsed on the ground. He was unable to climb up and the beauty beside Nanmen

Xue was unconscious.

“Name your terms,” Nanmen Xue said coldly.

This male panted and his mind was filled with terror as though death was right in front of him.

After panting for a while, this male struggled out, “You have to exchange for it with an item from the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.”

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion? You believe rumors like that,” Nanmen Xue said with a cold smile. “I have been in Great Peace City for this long and never heard of a Great Peace Treasure Pavilion before.”

“It is true.” The male finally managed to struggle back up into a standing position. “You do not need to know where I learned of the information. I’m also working for someone else.”

Nanmen Xue glanced at the other and asked icily, “What do you want?”

“There are three items in the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.” The male recovered and so did his expression. “Right now, we know that there is a stone stele inside.”

“Stone stele?” A look flashed through Nanmen Xue’s eyes.

“Yes, you have studied the steles of the Great Peace Mo Steles, so you should have already guessed that they are missing one piece!” The male said gravely, “The most important piece. When Shi Zi Ming created the stele forest, he hid the most important piece. Qi Diao Yu is also looking for this stele.”

Nanmen Xue was silent. He was starting to believe the other’s words.

“Our condition is very simple. Use that stele to trade for the Fire Heart Gall.” The male said gravely, “You help us obtain that stele, and the Fire Heart Gall is yours. With the Fire Heart Gall, not just Ten Thousand Year Mystical ice, even the strongest ice energy can be dissipated!”

Nanmen Xue stared at the other. “How can I trust you?”

“Look at this.” The other took out an object and flashed it at Nanmen Xue.

Nanmen Xue’s pupils shrank into pinpoints.

Chapter 609 - Princess Xia

“How can we stand by and watch! Everyone, even though Xiao Mo Ge is strong, if we surrender so easily, after this, all three princess will end up in the claws of this man. They will cry for the rest of their lives, just how tragic would it be! We all admire the princesses, how can we stand by and watch?”

A youth talked fervently facing the other youths.

However, while he was fervent, the other people were silent. The fight between Xiao Mo Ge and Shen Yu had stunned them, and planted the seed of terror in their minds.

This person was not demotivated and continued to talk.

“I know what everyone is worried about. This man is vicious and doesn’t bat an eye when he kills. If we face him head on, it is easy for us to be defeated. Therefore, we can only use cunning and not brute force.”

He stated what everyone thought and the crowd raised their heads.

A voice sounded, “Does Brother Wang have a good solution?”

The person that was so fervently speaking to the crowd was Wang Kun. He was a faithful follower of Princess Xin. When he learned that Princess Xin had invited Xiao Mo Ge, he had been

furious. In a blink, Princess Wan had also sent an invitation to Xiao Mo Ge and this group of people exploded.

Shen Yu was dislikable but he only had intentions on Princess Xia. The suitors of the other two princess only watched. Shen Yu had been killed, but an even more vicious competitor had appeared, Xiao Mo Ge, and he had received the favor of all three princesses!

Something like this had never happened before! Never!

But everyone had watched the battle between Shen Yu and Xiao Mo Ge. Even the bravest of them did not have the bravery to openly fight back. Also, Shen Yu had been the strongest of them. Xiao Mo Ge had turned Shen Yu into ashes, and none of them were a match.

So their morale was low until Wang Kun revealed his idea and they raised their heads.

Wang Kun became more excited and said, “Xiao Mo Ge is powerful, and we naturally are not opponents in martial power. However, we have our own advantages. Xiao Mo Ge is just a brutish fighter. Would his fist be enough to break through the sky? We are of noble birth, well mannered and cultured, and have mobei, what does he have? His fists? When did we ever have to fight other people with our own fists?”

These young masters were all smart people and their eyes brightened.

Right!

When were they ever forced into a situation where they had to fight against other people themselves?

They competed in terms of their father's status, wealth, servants, and family prestige, when did they ever compare based on their strengths?

Wang Kun said with a cold smile, "Shen Yu thought too highly of himself. The heir to the Shen Family was stupid he went to fight against Xiao Mo Ge! A body that is worth a thousand gold should not put themselves into danger! We are all worth our weight in gold, very valuable. Isn't it stupid to smash ourselves against trash clay pots?"

"Brother Wang is right!" The people praised. This spoke to their hearts.

"This little brother has just realized this and has come to discuss with everyone," Wang Kun said modestly. His tone changed and he said, "Since we understand our advantage, then it is easy. The three princesses want to recruit Xiao Mo Ge but he is just one expert. However, if all of us unite, the power that we represent is not something that Xiao Mo Ge can compare to. I believe with the intelligence of the three princesses, it will not take them any effort to realize this!"

"Yes, yes!"

“Yes!, What is Xiao Mo Ge, can he compare to us?”

The people started to grumble.

Wang Kun waited for the noise to die down slightly before immediately following up with, “But we cannot just speak and not act, who will believe us? We need to show our muscle. Everyone, return and send letters home! It is easy to find an excuse. Just say that we are pursuing the princess, and the princess is show slight favor. However, there is a strong enemy and we need the family to send strong reinforcements. Everyone should be very skilled at this, and I do not need to waste my energy speaking on the specifics.”

When the people heard this, their eyes were aglow.

“Brother Wang is peerless in intelligence! This idea is very good!”

“Brother Wang has a clear plan. This one admires you! And once the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion appears, the old people in the family will not be able to sit still!”

“Yes, even more importantly, we did not lie! Haha!”

A thread of smugness flashed through Wang Kun’s eyes. “When the experts from everyone’s families gather, I believe that we can exterminate Xiao Mo Ge with a little finger!”

Everyone roared with laughter. When they imagined that scene, they felt extremely good.

Suddenly, someone suggested, “Why don’t we ally together and swear to kill Xiao Mo Ge!”

The people agreed.

Wang Kun was overjoyed inside and said gravely. “We are all the young masters of our families, and have come for the princess. Why don’t we call ourselves the Gentleman’s Flower Protecting Alliance, what does everyone think?”

Everyone nodded. This name was accurate.

With this The Gentleman’s Flower Protecting Alliance was formed.

“I need to know your plan,” Nanmen Xue said.

“Naturally,” the mystery male said, “according to our information, there is a set of conditions to open the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. Even now, we do not know what the conditions are, but Shi Yue Yi should know. Therefore, we have been observing Shi Yue Yi. However, he has Yu Shuang and Chang Yuan Hao with him and increased the difficult of this task. We have still managed to obtain some information.”

“What did you learn?” Nanmen Xue asked in a deep voice.

“Shi Yue Yi seems to be very interested in Xiao Mo Ge.”

“That is normal.” Nanmen Xue had a scornful smile on his face. “Xiao Mo Ge was able to defeat the Peacock King Plume and there are many people interested in him.”

“No!” The mystery male was not angry. He shook his head and said, “Xiao Mo Ge was able to cause the Shifting Star Sands but what most people did not notice was that the place where he caused it was the Mo Skill Steles.”

“This does not mean anything,” Nanmen Xue said.

“Qi Diao Yu noticed,” the mystery male said, “and the woman next to Xiao Mo Ge also noticed. The two met at the stele where Xiao Mo Ge had caused the Shifting Star Sands and had a fight. It is a pity that we were not able to hear what they said.”

“So you feel that Xiao Mo Ge is the key to entering the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Nanmen Xue said.

“He is the most likely Shi Yue Yi’s target,” the mystery male said.

“What do you want me to do?” Nanmen Xue was straightforward.

“You will go challenge Xiao Mo Ge,” the mystery male said.

Zuo Mo’s brow creased. In the past few days, he had been pondering how to obtain information from Princess Xia about Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, but even now, he did not have any good ideas. He shook his head. He could only act according to the situation.

When the servant of Princess Xia saw Zuo Mo, they came forward to welcome him and said respectfully, “The princess has been waiting a long time for Sir.”

Finishing, the servant led the way.

Following behind the servant, Zuo Mo secretly asked Pu Yao and Wei.

“What solutions do you have?”

Pu Yao said coldly, “It would be best if you do not think of trying to hold her hostage. The An Wei family will have arranged for a very powerful expert to guard every generation of princess.”

“Then what?” Zuo Mo asked helplessly.

“Think of a way to move her,” Wei suddenly said.

“Move her?” Zuo Mo was stunned by this way of thinking.

Wei did not reply and Zuo Mo looked at Princess Xia.

Princess Xia was lazily reclining on the sedan. There was only a light layer of silk on her body and what was underneath could be barely made out. Her left hand was propping up her chin, her waist and behind drawing out an arousing curve that caused people to uncontrollably swallow.

When had the innocent Little Mo Ge ever seen such a scene. His face immediately turned red and he stopped in his steps.

However, he quickly composed himself and repeated in his mind

–This was war!

Raising his head, his eyes imperceptibly flickered across the surroundings. As expected, in the shadows close to the sedan, there was a female attendant standing silently.

Zuo Mo’s heart shook. This middle-aged female attendant was most likely the expert that Pu Yao had spoken off. When he paid attention, Zuo Mo noticed that the middle aged attendant did not have any presence. If Zuo Mo’s gaze did not see her, then he would have been unable to detect her.

An expert!

Zuo Mo did not dare to move rashly.

“Sit.”

The lips parted and soft words that softened one's bones came out.

This was war! Zuo Mo recited to himself as he sat down.

“You are very nervous.” Princess Xia looked amusedly at Zuo Mo. The plump and white wrist was propping up an extremely beautiful face whose eyes were full of feeling.

“Hahaha, no no,” Zuo Mo laughed. His mind turned furiously. Move her, how could he move her?

Princess Xia smiled and looked interestedly at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo did not know what to say and remained silent.

The room suddenly quieted and the atmosphere became awkward.

In his sea of consciousness, Pu Yao and Wei heartlessly

bombarded him.

“You need to speak, speak more, form a connection, do you understand?”

“A Zuo, you cannot move women by doing this! You need to speak more.”

“So embarrassing! Too embarrassing! How can I have such a student as useless as you? You aren’t even able to talk to a woman!” Pu Yao was furious.

“A Zuo, this is a one in a thousand chance!” Wei led on.

“Say what?” Zuo Mo said helplessly.

Pu Yao and Wei’s voices stopped.

A moment later, Pu Yao raised his head and said with a furrowed brow, “Weather? Hobbies? Outlook on life? What do women like? Right, Corps Commander was a woman, what did she like?”

Wei also had a pondering expression. “What did Master like the most let me think wait! I remember!”

“What?” Zuo Mo and Pu Yao spoke at the same time.

“Fighting!” Wei’s face was excited. “What Master liked the most was fighting! Fighting, endless fighting! Master once said that only fighting could cause her to become excited, only by fighting would she feel that she is different from the common rogue! Oh, but what is a common rogue?”

“It describes women that are unacceptable.” Pu Yao explained with a profound expression.

“Is Princess Xia one of the common rogue?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Of course not!” Pu Yao and Wei answered at the same time.

Zuo Mo immediately realized and nodded vehemently. He said murderously, “I understand!”

Chapter 610 - Drink Wine

Princess Xia looked at Xiao Mo Ge who had a nervous expression on his face. Surprised, she felt interested. The people around her were all young masters, and which one of them wasn't experienced with women? How long had it been since she had met such a virgin?

Thinking about when she was a child and about the innocent faces around her that did not have fierce desire and thoughts of consuming her. Back when there was only the innocence of childhood, and they were her playmates.

But then, everything changed

A certain soft place in Princess Xia's heart seemed to be lightly touched.

"Are you afraid of me?" she asked lightly.

Zuo Mo who had just opened his eyes and was preparing to utter a challenge had his words forced back by the other's soft words.

His eyes widened. "Afraid of you?" Zuo Mo did not understand why Princess Xia would have such a strange idea. Did Little Mo Ge look like a cowardly person?

"You are not afraid of me, why don't you look at me?"

Princess Xia's words caused Zuo Mo's prepared words of, "Come, let's have a fight!" to be swallowed back.

Zuo Mo found that he could not keep up with the other's thoughts. Oh, why couldn't he look at her?

He opened his eyes wide and then stared at Princess Xia.

So beautiful ... that ... this feeling ... why would he think of swallowing ...

An illusory spell!

Zuo Mo shook.

Princess Xia saw Zuo Mo's change and couldn't help but burst into laughter. In that moment, she was very attractive and her smile seemed to light up the room.

Zuo Mo was almost unable to move his eyes away and his breathing rate increased.

Just ... just an illusory spell ... you want to defeat Little Mo Ge ... but ... so powerful ...

"Come taste this Night Draw Wine, this is a famous vintage in the mo world, and can rival the Granny Meng Ghost Wine. It is a pity that I only have one bottle. After drinking this, you cannot ask for

more from me.” Princess Xia poured wine for Zuo Mo with a smile. Her skin was as white as snow, and as fine as porcelain. Her body was slightly tilted towards Zuo Mo and the deep valley in front of her chest seemed to have an unusual power that caused people to unconsciously sink into it.

Zuo Mo felt a wave of heat rise from his lower half. His mouth was dry and he had a strange feeling.

Such a powerful illusory spell!

It was even more powerful than the illusory spells that the paper crane girl had cast in Wu Kong Mountains in the past!

Was this her attack?

Determination flashed across Zuo Mo’s eyes.

How could a true man not receive the move?

Without another word, Zuo Mo secretly cast a [Bone-Crushing Obscuring Flash] with his left hand as he picked up the Night Draw Wine with his right hand and drank all of it.

When the wine entered his throat, Zuo Mo couldn’t help but pause. The taste of this wine was completely different compared to the Granny Meng Ghost Wine. The Granny Meng Ghost Wine was as hot as fire, and burned like a ball of flame when it entered his throat. This Night Draw Wine was cool and light, reaching directly

into his mind and making him unspeakably comfortable.

The taste wasn't bad?

The illusory spell hadn't been broken?

Princess Xia laughed lightly, "Your rough gulping is suited to drinking the Granny Meng Ghost Wine but not to the Night Draw Wine. Sip, and let the wine swirl around your mouth before slowly swallowing it. Try it, the feeling of the wine will be different."

Finishing, Princess Xia picked up the wine cup. Her eyes were slightly closed, and her gentle and seductive red lips contrasted against the snowy white porcelain.

Zuo Mo lost focus slightly.

But he quickly raised his alertness and focused. He copied princess Xia and took small sips. When the Night Draw Wine swished a few rounds around his mouth, an unique fragrance spread into his body. In this moment, it was as though he was soaking in cool water, so comfortable that he almost groaned.

"So comfortable!" Princess Xia closed her eyes and said as though she was talking in her sleep, "When I was young, I liked to drink Night Draw Wine the most. Daddy didn't like me drinking so I sneaked into Daddy's wine cellar. One time, I accidentally drank too much and fell asleep in the wine cellar. When Daddy caught me with the goods..."

She poked out her tongue like a child that had been caught doing bad things by her parents.

“... he sealed the wine cellar. Even now, it hasn’t been re-opened. Now, no one knows that there is a wine cellar there.”

“I really miss the time when Daddy was here.”

There seemed to be something flashing through Princess Xia’s eyes. She suddenly raised her face and threw back all of the wine.

Putting down the wine cup, her cheeks were blushed and her eyes were dazed.

“What bad things did you do when you were little?”

Zuo Mo could feel the sorrow and longing in Princess Xia’s words. It was like when he thought of the sect leader and the shishu. But it was not something that he could state aloud here. Hearing her question, he shook his head, “In childhood? I don’t know.”

“You don’t know?” Princess Xia was surprised by this answer.

“My memory was erased and my appearance has been changed, I don’t know anything about my past.” Zuo Mo replied truthfully. Originally, he hadn’t wanted to say it. While this was something

that did not have to be kept a secret, he did not want to casually tell other people. However, Princess Xia's reminiscing seemed sincere to him, so he spoke of it.

"Ah!" princess Xia covered her mouth, her expression shocked. She hadn't expected it to be such a terrifying answer.

"Sorry!" she said, full of apology.

"It's nothing." Zuo Mo shook his head unconcernedly. "In any case, I don't remember it."

"It is not a bad thing to not remember." Princess Xia smiled slightly and then poured a cup for Zuo Mo. "Sometimes, it is cruel to remember."

Zuo Mo drank the wine all in one gulp. Even though it was better to sip it slowly, he liked drinking it in one gulp better. This made him feel it was very exhilarating. Princess Xia's words touched him. He thought of the phrase "do not forget" that frequently appeared in his dreams and a hint of bitterness rose.

"However, it is crueler to forget things that one doesn't want to forget."

Zuo Mo poured a cup for himself and drained it.

Princess Xia stilled. She almost couldn't believe that this was something that this innocent youth said. She slowly pondered this

and her thoughts wandered. Her mind wandered in this moment.

Moments later, she smiled brightly and raised her wine cup. “For this phrase, drink!”

Then she copied Zuo Mo to drained the cup in one gulp. When she put down the wine cup, her cheeks were flushed red, and her eyes blurred. Her appearance was slightly disheveled and it added even more attractiveness.

Her eyes moved and it became a flirtatious look. Princess Xia looked at Zuo Mo and said lightly, “I’m very curious what you have come to find me for?”

Zuo Mo was slightly tipsy at this time and had long thrown Pu Yao and Wei’s words to the back of his mind. When he heard Princess Xia’s words, he did not avoid it and said directly, “I have come to beg Princess for two people.”

“Which two people are worth you coming to make a request?” Princess Xia looked wryly at Zuo Mo.

“Two of my xiuzhe friends. I heard that Princess Xia saved them so I come to request them from Princess.” Zuo Mo did not avoid Princess Xia’s gaze and said seriously.

“Xiuzhe friends?” Princess Xia was slightly astounded. “I hadn’t thought that you actually had xiuzhe friends. Yes, I had picked two female xiuzhe previously, you have good information sources.”

The last word carried some flirtatiousness, and the eyes were glimmering.

“I coincidentally saved another friend,” Zuo Mo said honestly.

“So you wanted to lure me here?” Princess Xia had amusement on her face when she looked at Zuo Mo.

“Yes.” Zuo Mo docilely admitted.

“Are these two female xiuzhe very important to you?” Princess Xia asked.

“Very important,” Zuo Mo nodded and said without hesitation.

Princess Xia covered her mouth and giggled, “So you like female xiuzhe. If this news goes public, many female mo’s hearts will be heartbroken.”

Zuo Mo choked on the words.

“Haha, let’s continue.” A hint of mischievousness flashed through Princess Xia’s eyes. “I can give them to you but I had planned on using them as maids. Now that I give them to you, what benefit can you give me?”

“Speak!” Zuo Mo’s expression was serious. Even though he was

greedy in personality and liked to bargain, he did not have any thought of bargaining on this matter.

“Can I first think about it? Have you owe me a favor? When I think of something then, I will tell you?” Princess Xia had a sly expression.

Zuo Mo was startled and then he reacted after a moment. He said cautiously, “After finding them, I planned to leave Great Peace City.”

“Leave Great Peace City?” Princess Xia stilled slightly and a hint of disappointment flashed through her eyes. She quickly recovered and said with a smile, “So you have come especially for them.”

“Yes.” Zuo Mo nodded.

“I really don’t want to give them to you,” Princess Xia said with a light laugh. “It is not very easy to find a good person to drinking with.”

But when she saw Zuo Mo’s nervous expression, she burst into laughter and said to herself, “It is rare that I am kind, I have to maintain this. Don’t worry, don’t worry, I will give them to you.”

Finishing, she turned and gave orders in a low tone. The middle aged attendant in the corner glanced at Zuo Mo. She did not seem to move but moments later, a servant came in with two other female attendants.

Xiao Guo! Li Ying Feng!

Zuo Mo's eyes suddenly widened. It was hard to control his expression of joy but he suppressed it and did not call out to the two of them."

"Here, from today onwards, they belong to you," Princess Xia said to Zuo Mo with a smile.

Zuo Mo hadn't expected that the matter would proceed so smoothly. Looking at Princess Xia, he gravely bowed. "If Princess thinks of something you need, please request it as long as I have not left Great Peace City!"

Xiao Guo's eyes suddenly widened and became disbelieving. Li Ying Feng looked at Zuo Mo anxiously.

"Then you will owe me for now." Princess Xia's beautiful eyes stared at Zuo Mo as she said with a smile, "I like it best when people owe me. When I think of something, you cannot fail to uphold your word."

"Never!" Zuo Mo said seriously.

"Take your friends and leave, they had significant hardship on the road," Princess Xia said with a light laugh.

Zuo Mo also desired to return. He raised his folded hands to Princess Xia. “Farewell!”

He stood with one hand pulling Xiao Guo and the other pulling Li Ying Feng as he prepared to rise into the air.

Suddenly a bright voice sounded in the sky.

“Where is Xiao Mo Ge? Nanmen Xue asks for a fight!”

Princess Xia looked at Zuo Mo’s frozen expression. Her hand covered her mouth as she laughed, “This is not my fault!”

A hint of joy flashed imperceptibly through her eyes.

Chapter 611 - Ambush

Who was Nanmen Xue?

Of course, Zuo Mo knew, the person ranked third on the Great Peace Mo Rankings. After the battle with Shen Yu, Zuo Mo's ranking had shot up. And in a flash, he went from the bottom of the ranking to the seventh rank.

But why would the other challenge him?

This shouldn't be happening!

If the third ranked challenged the seventh ranked, the victory would not be fair and there were no benefits to winning.

Zuo Mo found it bewildering. He walked into the yard and raised his head to see Nanmen Xue with his black robes flapping in the wind.

"You are not going to accept the challenge?" Princess Xia suddenly crowded over. The beautiful face was mischievous.

"This person's mind is faulty." Zuo Mo stared at Nanmen Xue in the air as he muttered, "I did not offend him ... so strange!" He thought and then shook his head, "I won't accept."

"Why do you not accept?" A hint of confusion flashed through

Princess Xia's eyes. "If you do not accept, your reputation will drop. People in Great Peace City that do not accept challenges will be laughed at."

"I can't win." Zuo Mo threw up his hands with a helpless expression.

Princess Xia was stunned. It was the first time she had met someone who would admit their weakness in front of her. The other men would try to show off their strength in front of her, show off their wealth, show off all kinds of qualities, each of them like peacocks with their tail feathers spread out.

There was someone who actually admitted in front of her that he could not win

"Then" After a long while, Princess Xia did not know what to say.

"Let him cool himself up there, the wind is pretty strong." Zuo Mo shook his head and moved his gaze away. He prepared to take Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng to leave.

Princess Xia couldn't help but laugh at these words. The person in front of her didn't have any of his previous seriousness and was like a little hoodlum. Princess Xia's eyes moved as she said, "What if he were to pursue you outside the city?"

Zuo Mo turned around and said with a serious expression,

“Actually, I never told you before, but what I am most skilled at is fighting using many against few.”

“Fighting with many against few... ..” After repeating it once, Princess Xia finally reacted. Her body trembled as she laughed. Pointing at Zuo Mo’s nose, she said, “You are a rascal!”

Zuo Mo’s eyes accidentally saw the motions at Princess Xia’s bosom. It was like he was struck with lightning and he froze immediately where he stood.

Illusory spell it came again was this kind of illusory spell something that was automatically cast?

Princess Xia was a perceptive person and immediately noticed Zuo Mo’s state. She was not bashful, and she blinked her eyes at Zuo Mo as she covered her mouth and laughed lightly.

“Hem!” Zuo Mo awkwardly coughed and then said, “Is there a back door? One that I can sneak out of.”

Seeing Zuo Mo act like this, Princess Xia felt like laughing. She summoned a servant and said a few words before she said to Zuo Mo, “You can follow her.”

“Thank you!” Zuo Mo’s words were sincere. He bowed to Princess Xia. Princess Xia was completely different compared to what Pu Yao and Wei had spoken of. He didn’t not know how Princess Xia appeared in other people’s eyes, but in his eyes, she

was a good person. Waving a hand at Princess Xia, he took Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng as he moved away with the servant.

Watching Zuo Mo's figure disappear, a hint of dispiritedness flashed through Princess Xia's eyes. But it faded in a blink. The smile on her face faded, and her gaze became sharp again. Confidence and ease came back onto her face.

She suddenly glanced at Nanmen Xue in the air and said faintly, "Force him down, it is an eyesore to look at."

The middle aged female attendant was about to act when her expression changed. "Someone has come."

As she finished speaking, a strange demonic sound seemed to burrow out of the deep of the earth. A man dressed in snowy white robes appeared near Nanmen Xue. The crowd that was watching, shifted.

Qi Diao Yu.

Nanmen Xue's gaze slowly became cold. "Qi Diao Yu!"

"I have come to challenge you." Qi Diao Yu's indifferent voice immediately caused a furor.

The sudden appearance of Qi Diao Yu at this time attracted speculations from many people—was he helping out Xiao Mo Ge?

With an icy expression, Nanmen Xue suddenly smiled, “As I expected”

Even though the other did not say what was expected, Qi Diao Yu’s expression suddenly changed. Not good, he had fallen for a trap! His body suddenly flashed.

Almost at the same time, Nanmen Xue appeared in front and blocked his path.

Nanmen Xue smiled, showing his teeth. “Since Brother Qi wants to challenge me, then let’s have a good fight.”

The two top experts were at a standoff and the fight could be set off by anything!

————

Zuo Mo snuck out the back door after following the servant. In order to disguise himself, Zuo Mo put on a little illusory art on his face. He felt grateful to Qi Diao Yu who had appeared. This was a good person!

Just after coming out of the door, he heard Xiao Guo who was under his arm say in a trembling voice, “Shixiong, is it you?”

Zuo Mo stopped walking and lightly rubbed Xiao Guo’s head with

his hand. “Xiao Guo is really smart.”

Xiao Guo couldn't hold it back any longer and started to cry as she hugged Zuo Mo. Like a child, she hugged Zuo Mo tightly, tears and snot flowing down.

Zuo Mo sighed inside as he lightly patted Xiao Guo. Li Ying Feng also reacted at this time, and there was a disbelieving joy on her face. “Zuo Shixiong, are you really Zuo Shixiong?”

Zuo Mo said with a smile, “Li Shijie, I'm still used to you calling me Zuo Shidi.”

Li Ying Feng also could not hold it back and cried from joy.

Zuo Mo did not know how to comfort them and could only pat the two of them lightly.

There were not many people on the streets, as all of them were focused on the faceoff between Qi Diao Yu and Nanmen Xue in the air.

Zuo Mo abruptly stopped walking and said lightly, “An enemy is present.” He warily scanned the surroundings as he slowly put Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng down. Hearing this, the two immediately stopped crying.

The scenery around him suddenly twisted. The trees on the road seemed to be kneaded into a ball by an invisible hand.

In a flash, the surroundings around the three of them were completely transformed.

Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng had ashen faces. However, they did not make a sound in fear they would disturb Zuo Mo.

Domain!

Zuo Mo's gaze suddenly became icy. This was an ambush that had been planned. By the time he had detected that something was wrong, he had already fallen for the enemy's trap.

They had actually sent an expert that comprehended Domain to ambush him!

A golem of mud slowly rose from the ground. His body was covered in wet mud and only the general shape of a person could be seen.

"Who are you?" Zuo Mo thought of Nanmen Xue who had just challenged him. He felt there was a connection between the two of them. He suddenly said, "So Nanmen Xue has given his allegiance to you people."

"You are actually smart." The other reflexively responded, but he immediately realized that he had fallen for a trap. He smiled darkly. "Your realization has come too late. If you want someone to blame, blame Qi Diao Yu for being too dumb."

“Qi Diao Yu?” Shock flashed through Zuo Mo’s mind. How was this matter related to Qi Diao Yu? However, no matter how hard he thought, he could not think what connection he had to Qi Diao Yu.

“Haha, it is useless no matter how much you think about it, submit peacefully.” The mud golem smiled darkly.

Zuo Mo suddenly felt his feet become heavy and his body sank down slowly. At some unknown time, the hard ground under his feet became soft mud like that of a bog.

There was a strong attraction force that came from within the bog that pulled the bodies of the three of them downwards.

This was strange!

The strange presence of corrosiveness were in wisps that burrowed into Zuo Mo’s body like insects. Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng’s expressions were ashen. Their cultivation was too low and they were fragile in front of a Domain.

Zuo Mo plucked the two of them from the bog and put them on his back. With his strength, the mass of the two women was negligible.

But when he did this, his body suddenly sank further.

The bog reached past his calves. The dark and cold presences were like a group of strange and mad insects that continuously burrowed into his body. But the Sun Crystal Seed in Zuo Mo's body would not tolerate its territory being invaded. It immediately sent out a few streams of fire that swept out, clearing out the dark and cold energies.

He had the Sun Crystal Seed and he cultivated the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus. While he could not be invaded by anything evil no matter how Zuo Mo struggled, he could not break free of the force that was pulling him down. Watching as he continued to sink, Zuo Mo could not care for anything else and activated his still incomplete Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

A dash of red light spread from Zuo Mo's feet. Zuo Mo felt his feet lighten and his body rose up slightly.

"Oh, I had assumed that you would use the Reversed Stellar Revolution first, not your incomplete Ten Crow Celestial Domain." The mud golem smiled darkly. "The Ten Crow Celestial Domain is powerful, but that is only after you achieve it. It is naïve to think you can stop me with what it is now."

The bog suddenly spread from under Zuo Mo's feet. In a blink, what Zuo Mo could see was just a bog as vast as the ocean.

The strong force pulling his feet had multiplied. It was like there was a monster hiding under the bog that was pulling him down. The power was so strong that Zuo Mo almost couldn't raise his arm. In a blink, the mud reached his knees.

Damn it!

Zuo Mo had not expected that he wouldn't have any power to fight back!

His gaze landed on the Reversed Stellar Revolution. His mind shifted and the handful of sparks shot at the mud golem.

The mud golem laughed and suddenly entered the bog. His body disappeared and the sparks missed.

"Slightly interesting." The voice came from behind Zuo Mo. The mud golem appeared behind Zuo Mo like a ghost. His tone carried a hint of smugness. "I heard that it was your Reversed Stellar Revolution that defeated the Peacock King Plume? It seems that the Peacock King Plume isn't anything special after all. So disappointing."

Zuo Mo was silent. The handful of sparks turned into a stream of light and shot behind him.

Almost at the same time, a mud golem suddenly rose from the bog in front of him.

"Is this the extent of your abilities?" The mud golem was slightly disappointed. "If this is all you can do, then your life will end here today."

As he finished speaking, one mud golem after another slowly rose up from the bog.

In a flash, there were an endless amount of mud golems.

Chapter 612 - The Mud Golem Mo Visitor

Why had the other ambushed him?

This thought flashed through Zuo Mo's mind before disappearing. He closely watched the mud golems that rose from the bog of mud. A strong feeling of danger caused all the hairs on his body to stand on end.

This person's domain was not as bright and colorful as Shen Yu's Peacock Eyespot Domain but Zuo Mo could feel that the other's domain was more complete than Shen Yu's.

This person was more experienced than Shen Yu. From the ambush in the beginning, to even this action, they were not slow or rushed, he controlled the pace of battle.

This was very terrifying!

Expert! A definite expert!

The Reversed Stellar Revolution returned to Zuo Mo's hand. The strong power pulling down on his feet constantly disrupted Zuo Mo's focus.

There was no leverage in the bog. Regardless of how strong Zuo Mo was, he could not use his strength. The mud domain of the ambusher was the perfect counter to Zuo Mo. This was an ambush that had been planned for a long time and the enemy found his

weakness.

After this short contact, he landed in a well-planned net.

However, how could he admit defeat so easily?

Waves of heat came from the Reversed Stellar Revolution. The muddy water that flew at him was stopped.

Every spark in the Reversed Stellar Revolution was formed from sun shen power!

The other definitely would not have thought of this.

Zuo Mo smirked coldly and the hand with Reversed Stellar Revolution suddenly pushed into the muddy bog under his feet!

Boom!

The bog under his feet trembled violently, followed by a sudden scream so loud, it almost ruptured Zuo Mo's eardrums. Streams of steam rose up, and his vision was shrouded in white.

The strongest quality of a bog was its flexibility. This was something given to it by water.

Water was the greatest bane of fire, but the opposite was also

true. If the fire was strong enough, it could subdue water! Zuo Mo's Reversed Stellar Revolution was made from sun shen power and unparalleled in its fire attribute. There had been many tribal heroes that had been turned to ash under the power of the sun shen power!

When the sparks entered the bog, the domineering fire attribute of sun shen power was completely stimulated.

In a flash, every spark expanded and turned into a ball of fire. Like a flood of fire, the Reversed Stellar Revolution rampaged under the bog. Everywhere it passed, the moisture in the bog dried up. When the dried soil was passed over by the wave of fire, it melted and turned into beads of glass.

If one looked down from the sky, they could see that heat wave was spreading rapidly with Zuo Mo at the epicenter. Everywhere it passed, the mud golems seemed to be paralyzed and immediately lost their moisture as they stood.

The mud golem was stunned and wanted to escape. But the sun shen power was too strong. Before his feet could leave the bog, the sun shen power spread to him.

The mud golem lost moisture in front of Zuo Mo at a visible rate and turned into a statue.

Then the statue started to crumble as though it was weathered by sand. The pieces of mud dropped to the ground and smashed into dust. The speed of crumbling increased and it finally could not

stand under its own weight and turned into a pile of dust.

Boom!

On the dry bog, the numerous mud golems seemed to have received an order and collapsed at the same time.

The scene was spectacular.

On Zuo Mo's back, Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng were dumbstruck with wide eyes.

Zuo Shixiong was this powerful

The Reversed Stellar Revolution once again returned to Zuo Mo's hand. Once it back came to him, Zuo Mo found that the color of the Reversed Stellar Revolution was much dimmer than before.

The scenery around them resumed to normal.

The streets were normal. Those that were walking nearby didn't even detect that a battle of life and death had occurred here just now.

There was only a pile of mud specks in front of Zuo Mo. Coincidentally, a gust of wind blew, and the powder was caught up. It dissipated into the air.

He did not have a smug expression. Zuo Mo cautiously inspected the surroundings, and without a word, started to sprint.

Moments later, two figures appeared at where Zuo Mo had been fighting.

“We underestimated him.”

“Yes, never thought that even the Mud Golem Mo Guest would not be a match for him. The appearance of Qi Diao Yu has proven our speculation. Xiao Mo Ge is that person.”

“Nanmen Xue has been exposed.”

“His original use was to be exposed. He can help attract attention from us when we act.”

“What do we do now?”

“Do not be impatient. One throws a rock to test the road. As the rock is thrown, there naturally are people that cannot bear the loneliness.”

“En.”

Zuo Mo sprinted back to the compound without any other trouble.

When he reached the compound and saw Shu Long and the others, he finally sighed in relief. Everyone saw Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng who Zuo Mo was holding and perceptively did not ask.

When they returned to the inner compound, Zuo Mo's mind finally relaxed.

Xiao Guo asked timidly, "Shixiong"

Zuo Mo turned his head and smiled at Xiao Guo. "Were you frightened?"

"A little bit." Xiao Guo timidly nodded. She seemed to have returned to the time of Wu Kong Sword Sect, with that shixiong that kept supporting her having returned to her side. She felt as though she was dreaming. For some reason, the rims of her eyes reddened and her voice went deeper. "Shixiong is very strong"

Li Ying Feng's eyes were also red. The experiences she had were like a nightmare. However, she was trying to be strong and forced it back. She said, "Shixiong, if you have matters at hand, you can attend to them first."

She saw the people in the yard continuously bowing to Zuo Mo. Even though she was filled with surprise, she understood that Zuo Mo was the leader of this group. The ambush on the road just now had been unusual and Zuo Shixiong definitely had matters to take care off.

“You should prepare. We might leave this place immediately,” Zuo Mo said gravely. Then he turned and walked towards the outside.

Shu Long saw Zuo Mo come out of the yard and moved towards him. “Daren!”

Zuo Mo asked directly, “Is everyone here?”

Shu Long stilled but then immediately understood. Something had happened. He said after a moment of thought, “A Wen, Nan Yue, Cang Ze, Ming Jue Zi, the black and orange yao are all at the Mo Skill Steles.”

“Send someone immediately to call them back,” Zuo Mo said gravely. “Have everyone else pack up. When they come back, we will leave here immediately.”

“Yes!” Shu Long heard the urgency of the commands. Without another word, he turned and left.

Zuo Mo’s face was dark. He had a feeling that a large whirlpool that he could not see was coming closer to him.

The black smoke yao devoutly studied the characters on the stele in front of him. He had an eidetic memory and did not forget what he saw. In these past days, he had visited almost every one of the mo skill steles.

But

His gaze landed on A Wen and Big Orange. A Wen did not pay attention to anything in the environment. His hands subconsciously moved. Even the black smoke yao could feel the hint of profoundness in those normal movements. Big Orange was completely different. He paced in front of the stele like an ant on top of a fire, and then grabbed at his hair. Sometimes, he would talk to the sky. His orange hair now looked like a bird's nest. He could not just hold still. The lightning, hail, and flames that erupted around his body was frightening which caused the mo skill steles around him to be empty.

These two freaks!

The black smoke yao felt great admiration. These two had the best talent out of the group.

He did not know A Wen well, but he felt deep admiration for how Big Orange, someone with such an unusual mind, had great talent. While he admired it, he felt even happier for Big Orange. Truthfully, when he had first found those cultivation notes, he had

discovered that Big Orange had much greater talent than he did. This was also why he had pulled Big Orange along on this journey.

However, the black smoke yao also found that with every mo skill stele imprinted in his mind, he quickly noticed something that was overlooked by all the others. There were some descriptive phrases that would appear on some steles. These phrases were not long, and appeared normal. Some were related to philosophy and others that were hard to understand.

But the black smoke yao was an attentive person. When he found these phrases, he thought of the notes he had found.

Phrases like these had also appeared in the notes. The notes had said that Shi Zi Ming had always been searching for something. He had roamed the three realms of yao, mo and xiu in search of this thing. The followers did not know what Shi Zi Ming was searching for, but he had faithfully copied down what Shi Zi Ming had said.

Those words and the phrases that appeared on the steles were in the same style.

Was there a secret contained in these?

That was the first thought that flashed through the black smoke yao's mind. He felt very excited by this idea. His cultivation talent was not as great as the orange haired yao but his intelligence was outstanding.

These phrases scattered on the steles, that did not attract much attention, were like an unknown secret that deeply attracted him.

He started to organize all the stone steles in his mind. His powerful memory was extremely useful. He quickly picked out those phrases that were unrelated to cultivation from all the stone steles.

Consequently, he quickly found that several of the phrases had appeared in the notes as well.

This result caused the black smoke yao to become even more excited. The time of the notes should have been the time that Shi Zi Ming had been roaming. Shi Zi Ming had said these words during that time he traveled, and Shi Zi Ming had only built Great Peace City many years later. He had engraved these exact words onto the Mo Skill Steles.

It was not a coincidence!

There definitely was a deeper meaning contained in these phrases that other people did not know!

Thinking about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion that everyone was talking about, the black smoke yao's mind moved. Were these phrases related to the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?

When he had first heard the rumors, he had researched the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. It had existed at the beginning of Great

Peace City, but Shi Zi Ming had eventually sealed it and it gradually faded from people's minds.

Why had Shi Zi Ming sealed the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?
What was really inside the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?

This was a riddle that had never been solved.

When the black smoke yao carefully pondered the phrases he copied from the steles, he seemed to see an almost indiscernible line connecting the puzzle pieces.

Chapter 613 - Conspiracy

Looking at the enemy battalion crumbling in front of him, Gongsun Cha's expression was as calm as usual.

Beside him, a thread of fearful respect flashed through A Zha Ge's eyes. The battalion that was falling apart in front of them was the ninth battalion that they had defeated.

Lil' Miss Daren was really too powerful! He could not describe his respect and reverence of Lil' Miss Daren. A Zha Ge had been one of the three great battle generals of the Rahula Clan and held a high opinion of himself. But after he personally saw Lil' Miss Daren's terrifying control of the battlefield, he was left with deep respect. He never believed that a battle general could be so powerful!

Winning every battle with undefeatable attacks!

All nine battalions had crumbled in engagement round!

Vermillion Bird Camp was like a peerlessly sharp blade. Nothing could stop its advance.

As a battle general that was here due to surrendering, A Zha Ge knew that he needed to do more than other people in order to earn his place in this faction. Right now, he was full of confidence in this faction. He was full of confidence in its strength and vitality. Their battalion's performance would directly affect the well-being of his clansmen. A Zha Ge and his battalion worked very hard.

However, he quickly discovered that Lil' Miss Daren did not think of them as cannon fodder. Whenever they encountered a powerful battalion, Vermillion Bird Camp always charged at the very front.

A Zha Ge was left feeling of grateful.

In the mo realm where the strong ate the weak, surrendered battalions like theirs were usually used at the frontline and given the most dangerous positions. The rate of death was very high, and they received the worst supplies. No one cared about their life or death.

But here, Lil' Miss Daren did not have any negative opinions about them. He frequently took care of them and taught them. They did not need to worry that they would be used as cannon fodder and no one would hate them because they were mo.

Everyone held an account of favours and grievances in their heart.

A Zha He held one, and so did his soldiers. What they could do in reponse was fight as hard as they could.

Even though Vermillion Bird Camp took the lead in the majority of battles, A Zha Ge Battalion also experienced several hard battles. As the state of affairs in the mo world continued to escalate, the skill level of battalions in each area continuously rose. The leader of every faction understood that without a powerful battalion,

they would not be able to survive in such chaotic times.

Every battle they experienced was not easy. Compared to Vermillion Bird Camp that was unstoppable, A Zha Ge Battalion had a much harder time. Almost a sixth of the battalion had died.

But the overall strength of the battalion skyrocketed.

Every elite force was forged in countless difficult battles. This was not a lie. After several battles, A Zha Ge Battalion had gained the morale of an elite force. Everyone had steadier presences, and their teamwork rose. The fatality rate decreased drastically. In the battle just now, only nine people had died.

Even though they had only just gone a quarter of the journey, everyone was filled with confidence.

“Rest for the night. We will advance in the morning.”

As the sun set, Lil’ Miss’ orders echoed in the silent battlefield.

“What did you say?” yelled the Sound Fall Jie master, he could be heard from far away.

“Daren! This is true! The East Lu Battalion of East Lu Jie only managed to resist for one hour!” The subordinate’s voice trembled.

“This subordinate saw it, it is true!”

“One hour?” The jie master’s expression almost froze on his face.

A moment later, he murmured in disbelief, “How is it possible? The strength of East Lu Battalion”

He knew very well that East Lu Battalion was on par with the strongest battalion under his command. This battalion that came out of nowhere was this strong? One hour!

“Daren!” the subordinate hurriedly said, “this battalion of unknown origins did not occupy East Lu Jie!”

“Did not occupy it East Lu Jie?” the jie master focused and was very curious. “Why didn’t they take over East Lu Jie?”

“This subordinate also did not understand. According to what this subordinate heard, they did not take over any of the jie that they passed. This subordinate speculates that they are travelling! This subordinate caught some of the survivors from East Lu Battalion and discovered after interrogating them that this battalion had requested for East Lu Battalion to let them pass. They were refused by East Lu Battalion and then they attacked East Lu Battalion!”

“Are they only just passing through?” The jie master felt that this was a joke.

“This subordinate thinks so.”

“I don’t believe”

“Daren! This battalion has defeated nine battalions along their way! They are so strong they can rank within the top fifty battalion of Hundred Savage Realm! If they want to attack Sound Fall Jie, this subordinate fears” The subordinate did not continue but the words did not have to be spoken.

The jie master hesitated for a while before gritting his teeth and saying, “Allow them to pass, and prepare our forces in case you are wrong. But do not attack first!”

Zuo Mo’s expression was terrible.

A Wen and the others had suddenly disappeared. The people of Guard Camp searched through all of the stele forest and did not find a shadow of A Wen and the others. Having just experienced the ambush, Zuo Mo’s first conclusion and reaction was: was someone conspiring against them?

But he quickly shook his head. A Wen’s group was six people. If they were attacked, there wasn’t any way that it would have gone completely unnoticed. Guard Camp who had gone to search for them had asked the other people in the stele forest. Those people had all nodded and said the group had been there just a while ago.

The orange haired yao was too eye-catching to forget.

But no one knew how they had disappeared.

If someone wanted to steal away these six people without any disturbance, it was only possible if the kidnappers were all experts, attacked before they could react, and had attacked with equal numbers was it then possible.

There was no trace of Nan Yue and the others in the Ten Finger Prison.

“Someone is targeting you,” Pu Yao said coldly.

“Starting with Nanmen Xue, this string of events is not quite right,” Wei followed.

“I’ll go find Nanmen Xue!” Zuo Mo thought and then said.

“There is no use.” Pu Yao shook his head. “Nanmen Xue is clearly a pawn thrown out as a distraction. He probably acted because of a transaction he made. He probably doesn’t know anything at all.”

“What solutions do you have?” Zuo Mo suppressed the murderousness inside his chest and asked Pu Yao.

Pu Yao said, “The best way is to remain calm and not do anything.”

Wei explained, “If they were really kidnapped, the culprit’s true target is you. No matter what aims the other have, they will come find you. You need to wait and be calm.”

Zuo Mo thought and then felt the two of them were right. He forced himself to calm down.

He suddenly felt he was very stupid. In terms of scheming, there wasn’t anyone more skilled than these two old bandits. What was he doing thinking by himself?

“You say that they are targeting me? Why?” Zuo Mo decided to throw the problem to the two old bandits.

A bloody light danced in Pu Yao’s bloody pupil. He felt slightly excited. It had been too long since such an exciting event. His mind worked quickly as he said, “First, it definitely isn’t a grudge. The ambusher today did not try and assassinate you, they wanted to capture you alive.”

Zuo Mo thought back and immediately found it reasonable. “Yes, after you mention this, I have also noticed it. He did not use a killing move.”

“He wanted to capture you but not kill you so the possibility that this was motivated by a grudge is not high. Then it must be that you have something that they want, or they want you to do something.”

As expected from old bandits. After a few sentences, Zuo Mo immediately felt his thoughts clear up.

“What do I have? What can I do?”

“You have many things. Like shen power, the Sun Crystal Seed, these are all objects that people would want,” Wei said slowly. “There are even more things you can do. For example, seduce Princess Xia!”

“Haha!” Pu Yao heartlessly roared with laughter.

Zuo Mo was slightly angry. “You are in the mood to make a joke at this time?”

“Relax.” Wei said with a smile, “The more normal you appear now, the less the other will be able to keep calm.”

“You do you mean?” Zuo Mo wasn’t able to react.

“Do what you had planned to do before, like the two invitations the princesses sent you. Why don’t you go? It is good if you listen to what they say!” Wei urged. “You are not the local snakehead, you do not have any spies. If you want to lure others out, you will have to act as bait. The more people you come into contact with, the more panicked the other will be because they cannot guess what you will think of doing next, and what you plan.”

A cold smile rose at the corner of Pu Yao's lip. "What a schemer is most afraid of is not knowing."

With the two old bandits supporting him, Zuo Mo felt reassured.

He did not make any ruckus over the disappearances but he quickly received a letter from Lan Tian Long. The letter said that they were thinking of ways to help him search for his missing subordinates and told him to be careful of his own safety.

Moved, Zuo Mo immediately realized that the entire city probably knew that A Wen and the others had disappeared.

This was not strange. Guard Camp had not concealed themselves when they were searching and had asked many other people. The news would not be able to be concealed.

Princess Xia also quickly sent someone with a letter. The contents were generally the same. It said that she would help ask around for him and tell him if she had news.

Princess Xia's letter caused Pu Yao and Wei to become excited again.

The two said that Princess Xia was pursuing Zuo Mo and urged Zuo Mo to work harder to get this pretty flower.

Inside, Zuo Mo thought that the two old bandits wanted to retaliate against Princess Xia. Also, in his mind, Princess Xia was his friend to whom he also owed her a favor. How could he harm her? He completely disregarded the suggestions from the two fogies.

The letters from all the families quickly followed. Right now, Xiao Mo Ge was a personage and had a limitless future. There were many that wanted to establish relationships with him.

But there was no information about A Wen and the others at all in these letters. There was also no news from the Ten Finger Prison.

The guard around Zuo Mo's yard became even heavier.

Patiently waiting for news, Zuo Mo cultivated like usual. Suddenly, he felt a strange ripple come from his ring.

En, what was this?

Zuo Mo's mind moved and then immediately, he had a joyful expression.

Chapter 614 - The Awoken Black Gold Seal Soldier

A lazy yawn floated out of the ring.

Then a figure flashed and a dark gold figure appeared in front of Zuo Mo. The black gold seal soldier! The face that was a mirror-image of Zuo Mo's instantly smiled and then he rushed over.

“Big Brow, I'm hungry, is there something to eat?”

Zuo Mo's brow twitched. Eat? This glutton! He had already eaten all two hundred ling beasts in one go and then had slept until now. Once he opened his eyes, what he wanted to do first was eat.

“No!” Zuo Mo's face was stern as he stared with unfriendliness at the glutton in front of him.

The black gold seal soldier suddenly sniffed. His eyes lit up and then his body disappeared.

Wails from mo steeds came from outside the room.

Zuo Mo smacked his forehead with his hand. He looked upwards and was speechless. Little Mo Ge had always been clever and rarely got involved in unprofitable business. However, he tripped up on this glutton.

A ball of wind blew by and the black gold seal soldier appeared in front of Zuo Mo. He licked his lips and said with discontent, “There wasn’t much flavor.”

Zuo Mo’s already unfriendly glance immediately became even more unfriendly.

He decided to have a good talk with the black gold seal soldier. It was best to adjust the incorrect perspectives of a delinquent youth now from just knowing to eat and sleep.

“You want to eat well?” Zuo Mo had a pure smile.

“Of course!” The black gold seal soldier’s eyes lit up. “Big Bro, where, where?”

“If you want to eat well, you have to work hard. Those that work can eat, those that don’t work can’t, the more you work, the more you can eat.” Zuo Mo said with a smile. His expression was very similar to Wei.

Bam bam bam!

The black gold seal soldier beat his chest and it rang out metallically. He said with bravado, “Big Bro, I’ll do what you say!”

Good, good, this delinquent youth was not at a level that was unsavable.

Zuo Mo rejoiced inside and his eyes moved. “Do you know how to fight?”

“Born to Battle.” The black gold seal soldier paused slightly and then said seriously, “I will fight if there is food, but I will not fight if there is no food. I will fight more if there is more food!”

Zuo Mo’s smile froze on his face.

So other than looking the same as him, this guy was as cunning as he was.

Zuo Mo felt a headache.

Just at this time, Ceng Lian’Er suddenly walked in. She saw the black gold seal soldier with his familiar appearance and had a curious expression.

“What is this?” She pointed at the black gold seal soldier and asked Zuo Mo.

“Miss! Please do not use terms casually!” The black gold seal soldier said seriously, “I am not a thing, I am Black Gold. Oh, Big Bro, who is she? This girl is pretty beautifully, Big Bro, your tastes finally leveled up. However, you abandoned A Gui? Big Bro, how can you do that? You abandoned the first wife, I had a wrong opinion of you! As expected of my big bro, a cruel rake, a libertine, I need to learn from you”

Zuo Mo wanted to die.

Other than being a glutton and a sleeper, this was a chatterbox! Heavens, so many valuable materials wasted on creating him, all of it for nothing, truly no profit at all!

Ceng Lian'er looked with interest at the black gold seal soldier.

The black gold seal soldier had keen eyes and rushed to A Gui's side like a gust of wind when he saw her. "A Gui, A Gui! Big Brother didn't abandon you! I was just saying, Big Bro is such an honorable person, how could he abandon A Gui. A Gui, A Gui, is there something to eat? I'm so hungry!"

A Gui suddenly turned around and walked outside. The black gold seal soldier immediately followed behind her and started to flatter her.

Zuo Mo was dumbstruck.

"He is?" There was a smile at the corner of Ceng Lian'er's mouth. This caused her eyes to become even more alluring.

"A terrible accident." Zuo Mo spread his hands with an expression of distaste.

"There are many xiuzhe that have come to Great Peace City."

Ceng Lian'er suddenly said.

“Xiuzhe?” Zuo Mo stilled. After staying for so long in the mo world, even he felt slightly unfamiliar when he heard the word xiuzhe.

Ceng Lian'er's eyes curved slightly as she said, “It is the four great sects. At least twenty people, and some are very strong. Their disguise is very good, no one has discovered them yet.”

“The four great?” Zuo Mo was surprised and his expression immediately turned grave. “How come the four have come?”

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.” Ceng Lian'er spat out the four words.

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Zuo Mo didn't quite believe it. What kind of sects were the four great sects. When the Sun Shen Temple in Cloud Sea Jie had opened, only Tian Huan had come. And even then they had sent just one yuanying xiuzhe. For sects like the great four that had a long history, there were very few treasure hoards that they would target.

Zuo Mo didn't quite believe that the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion would attract the great four.

“I fought against them.” When Ceng Lian'er threw the words out, she scared Zuo Mo half to death.

“You’re crazy!”

Now he believed it and immediately felt a headache. On this side, A Wen and the others had suddenly disappeared and there were undercurrents swirling in Great Peace City. Now, even the xiuzhe had come to participate. Even as dumb as he was, he knew the situation would become even more complex.

He suddenly thought of a question. “What is in the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion? Why would even the four great sects of the xiuzhe come?”

Ceng Lian’er was silent.

Zuo Mo stared directly at her.

A moment later, she said serenely, “Inside the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, there are three treasures. The other two are unidentified but there is one that many people know of. It is a stele.”

“A stele?” There was a disbelieving expression on Zuo Mo’s face.

“The most crucial stele of the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles.” Ceng Lian’er’s eyes were blurry. Her voice was ethereal. “Ever since the ancient era and after the era of shen power, the xiuzhe, yao, and mo have rose to power. Yao arts, mo skills, xiuzhe spells, these three cultivation methods have been the most popular. The method of shen power cultivation has been lost, but as the

cultivation realms increased, the experts of the three races found that they encountered a block in their cultivation. They tried many ways to surpass this blockade but they could not break through this barrier.”

Zuo Mo listened quietly. Ceng Lian'er's ethereal voice added a faint mysteriousness to these secrets.

“These ancestors traced back to the origins of cultivation for multiple generations and found that the only method of breaking through this barrier is to cultivate shen power. All three powers are derived from shen power but because of this they are all also incomplete. When the three powers are cultivated to their limits, if one wants to increase further in power, they have to return to shen power. However, the way to cultivate shen power was lost long ago. They started to search for all kinds of shen power inheritances, but they are all unable to be connected with the present cultivation systems. The legends say that Shi Zi Ming found the solution. This mo skill stele records his knowledge but Shi Zi Ming did not dare to release the contents so he sealed it in the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.”

“You also have come for this stele?” Zuo Mo stared at Ceng Lian'er.

“I didn't consider it in the beginning,” Ceng Lian'er said serenely, “but since I am here, why not?”

“You already cultivate shen power, what is the use in having that?” Zuo Mo asked in bewilderment.

“My shen power inheritance is more complete than yours but it has also lost sections over generations. This stele is very important to me, and can supplement my [Moon Shen Records.]” Ceng Lian’er looked at Zuo Mo and said, “You are the most talented person I ever saw in cultivating shen power. Other than you, I have never seen anyone perform shen power breathing. However, your understanding of shen power is not as good as mine, even with your talent you are still only knocking on the door of shen power. Only by obtaining this stele can you finally step through the doorway to shen power.”

Only now did Zuo Mo understand why the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was causing so many to be obsessed.

“What does all this have to do with me?” Zuo Mo smirked coldly. “I was pulled in. Don’t tell me this is a coincidence.”

“It really isn’t a coincidence.” Ceng Lian’er’s gaze was unfocused as she said serenely. “The rumors are that two keys are required to open the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. No one knows what the first key is, but the second key is supposed to be a special person.”

“Special person?” Zuo Mo stilled. He had never thought it would be such an absurd reason. He pointed at his nose and didn’t know whether to laugh or cry as he said, “Is this special person me?”

“Right now, you are the most likely.” Ceng Lian’er’s eyes curved with mirth.

Zuo Mo was dumbstruck. “Why is it me?”

“Causing Shifting Star Sands at the Mo Skill Steles. You were the first to cause a worldly apparition there.” Ceng Lian’er’s eyes curled even more. Her flawless face was like a picture. “Shi Yue Yi also seems to have an interest in you. Qi Diao Yu discovered that you cultivate shen power. He also discovered that I and A Gui do too.”

It was such an absurd reason.

“There is something else you missed. When you achieved shen power breathing, the Mo Skill Steles responded to you. The city only suspects that you are that person, but I am the only one certain that you are.”

Ceng Lian’er looked deeply at Zuo Mo and then disappeared.

Zuo Mo was stunned by Ceng Lian’er’s words.

The black gold seal soldier followed behind A Gui and looked around occasionally. He appeared sneaky and his nose moved with hunger on his face.

A Gui did not make a sound as she walked and jumped past the wall, it was as though she was walking on flat ground. She didn’t attract any attention as she walked. The black gold seal soldier

sneakily followed behind her with excitement and anticipation.

With a few jumps, A Gui led the black gold seal soldier into a yard.

This was the yard of the Celestial Planet Guards.

A Gui suddenly appeared behind a Celestial Planet Guard like a ghost. With a light touch, this Celestial Planet Guard immediately fell unconscious and dropped to the ground.

Then A Gui pushed open the wooden door that this Celestial Planet guard had been guarding. There were all kinds of mo steeds inside. This was the stable where the Celestial Planet Guard kept their mo steeds. The Celestial Planet Guard was the personal guard of Ceng Yi and their outfitted equipment was topnotch. Their mo steeds were not an exception to this. None of the mo steeds were of a low grade.

The black gold seal soldier's eyes immediately lit up and started to drool.

He opened his mouth and sucked. Hundreds of mo steeds were unable to react before they drastically shrank and fell into his mouth like a flood of dumplings. In a blink, the full pens were empty.

The black gold seal soldier burped with a contented expression. He went to fawn over A Gui.

A Gui was the best!

At this moment, the smile on his face suddenly disappeared as he turned around.

Murderousness flashed across the dark gold face that was a replica of Zuo Mo's face.

Someone was sneaking in!

Chapter 615 - Each With Their Plan

Fei Fei's expression was extremely nervous. The security around this compound was so heavy that he found it hard to imagine. He seemed to have come to a very scary place. There were not many at his cultivation level that could rival his concealment and stealth movement. But even so, he almost fell for some of the traps along the way.

If it wasn't that the woman's intentions were really strange, he would have immediately turned around and left.

His intuition told him that this place was too dangerous!

For the mission this time, the sect had used a hidden chaos rift. This chaos rift had been one that they had originally planned to use for an ambush at a crucial time.

Even with these precautions they had been attacked after just entering Great Peace City. A woman of unknown origins attacked without any warning. This woman was very strong and even with the people from the sect fighting together, they were unable to capture her. She also seemed very certain they didn't dare to make too much of a ruckus.

Had their identities been exposed? Everyone's hearts sank. All of them knew very well what it meant if their identities were exposed in the mo territories.

When that mysterious woman left, Fei Fei hid himself and

followed her from afar.

The other was even warier than he had expected and took a winding path to shake of any tail. Fei Fei had almost lost track of her several times. In the end, this woman entered this estate. Fei Fei had originally decided to leave but he had found a flaw in the defenses. He could not resist and sneaked in.

A guard of this calibre was full of holes in his eyes.

But after he entered, he found that the situation inside was the reverse of what he had imagined.

The estate was better protected than he had imaged. That flaw he had seen seemed more like a trap. As he continued inwards, his wish to retreat increased.

At this time, he suddenly saw a woman and a completely dark person walk over.

He hurriedly hid and didn't dare to breathe.

This woman was not like the woman that had attacked them. There weren't any energy ripples coming from her body. The dark gold person beside her seemed to be a mo puppet.

However

Was that really a mo puppet?

The flattery was varied as it came out of the mo puppet's mouth. In the shadows, Fei Fei felt ashamed. If he had this level of skill in the sect, his status in the sect would not be what it was now.

He was shocked as well. It was rare to see such a lifelike mo puppet.

But the next scene caused his jaw to drop.

Hundreds of mo steeds were swallowed up by the mo puppet.

In Fei Fei's eyes, the small mouth of the dark gold mo puppet suddenly became a gaping maw that could consume anything. A mo puppet that swallowed mo steeds probably would also be interested in swallowing xiuzhe. Thinking about how the mo puppet would consume him, Fei Fei trembled.

Suddenly, the dark gold mo puppet turned his face and looked towards the corner he was in.

Fei Fei's mind blanked. He was discovered!

He was very experienced in battle and calmed down. He decisively activated his spell. His body blurred and he appeared on the verge of turning into a ball of mist.

Fei Fei started with his life-saving ultimate technique [Smoke Travel Spell]!

[Smoke Travel Spell] was a sixth grade spell. It could turn a person's body into a ball of smoke that would dissipate. Once one turned to smoke, they could not attack the enemy but the majority of attacks were ineffective against them. It was a top spell for escaping.

This technique had save Fei Fei an unknown number of times.

So when he detected that the situation was not right, he immediately used the [Smoke Travel Spell]. He could detect the threat from the dark gold mo puppet. If he turned to light smoke, he could return to Shixiong's side. His Smoke Return Pillar was on Shixiong's body.

Yet just as he was about to successfully escape, the mo puppet appeared in front of him.

The black gold seal soldier stared at Fei Fei whose body was becoming faint. His eyes were indifferent without any of the cheer that was just there. He reached out and an ancient character on his palm lit up.

Fei Fei's eyes widened and terror showed on his face.

The black gold seal soldier's hand already pressed onto Fei Fei whose body was blurring and then he quickly moved his palm away.

The bright character was imprinted on Fei Fei's almost transparent body . Fei Fei's body melted at a visible rate like a snowman under a bright sun.

Fei Fei's features twisted as he furiously screamed but he couldn't make any sounds.

The black gold seal soldier looked indifferently at him.

Not five minutes later, Fei Fei completely disappeared.

Clink.

A light sound. It was a ring that dropped to the ground from the smoke.

The black gold seal soldier picked up the ring. The indifference on his face disappeared. He was full of smiles like before as he presented the ring to A Gui.

“Fei Fei is dead.” A hint of grief flashed through Lin Qian's eyes but his tone was very cold.

The other people stared at each other with sadness and terror in their eyes. Even though they all knew that the mission this time would be dangerous no one had thought they would lose someone just after arriving in Great Peace City.

Their start was not a good one!

“What that woman used was shen power.” Lin Qian’s expression was calm as he said, “She should have come for the Great Peace Stele as well. Everyone, be careful. Do not expose your identities before the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion appears.”

“Yes!” Everyone answered simultaneously but it was apparent their morale had suffered.

Lin Qian did not look at them and said to himself, “The mission is very hard and dangerous this time. Even I do not have the confidence of victory. But our Kun Lun’s thousands of years of prosperity was won by our forebearers through life and death struggles. Now, the world is uncertain, and these next few decades will determine the next thousand years!”

His gaze landed on the other people and his authority came through in his indifference.

“On matters related to the fate of Kun Lun, how can we retreat?”

Everyone’s expressions steadied. Most of them were born in Kun

Lun and had deep feelings towards Kun Lun. Their families were also at Kun Lun and their lives were deeply connected to Kun Lun.

One person said in a deep voice, “Eldest Shixiong is right, even if we die, we will have a place in the Kun Lun’s Sword Home!”

“How can we, the people of Kun Lun, fear those yaomo?”

“At most, it is just another thousand year battle!”

Lin Qian did not speak. Morale rose and everyone’s gazes became more determined. This time, those that were selected were all yuanying experts. All of them had strong sword hearts and their spirits rose.

When the noise faded, Lin Qian said with a small smile, “Even if that person recognized us, that is alright. Great Peace City is a gathering of many mo factions and the complexity of the situation is almost unimaginable. These mo all have their own plans and are suspicious about those around them. There are also people making waves from the shadows to muddy the waters. We are just one of the factors in Great Peace City. Some people will care about our identities, but there are also people that hope we have come to disrupt the situation and provide them with an opportunity.”

Everyone nodded and agreed when they heard this.

“So the plan will not change.”

The Celestial Planet Guard was in a furor. All the mo steeds in the beast pens had disappeared. What was even more crazy was that there wasn't any signs of fighting near the beast pens.

Shou Ping's face was black. Someone had come and stolen all the mo steeds. This had actually occurred under his leadership.

Miss hadn't said anything but Shou Ping was so ashamed he wanted to burrow into a crack in the ground. Nothing had happened to the other yards, only his steeds had been stolen from!

Embarrassing! Too embarrassing!

The Celestial Planet Guard had been at the bottom of the pack in cultivation. How could the proud Shou Ping tolerate something like this happening?

The pitiful Celestial Planet Guards were tormented to death because of a glutton.

But the culprit had forgotten about this matter.

"This is part of your plan?" Nanmen Xue stared coldly at the person in front of him.

This male shook his head. “We did not do this.”

“I do not believe it.” Nanmen Xue said coldly, “Our partnership ends now. I have great doubts about your sincerity.”

The male’s expression was normal. He still shook his head. “We did not do this. We had sent people to capture Xiao Mo Ge, but he killed them. The disappearance of his subordinates has nothing to do with us. We are also investigating but there hasn’t been any clues yet.”

Nanmen Xue stared at the other. Seeing that the other’s expression did not change, he believed that the other had not lied.

“Now all clues point towards me,” Nanmen Xue said coldly. “Don’t tell me you do not have other plans.”

“We do,” the male said gravely. “We are now sure that Xiao Mo Ge is that crucial person. However, we are not the only ones to realize this, the other people probably also have as well.”

Nanmen Xue listened silently and did not speak.

“Right now, everyone is looking at Xiao Mo Ge. As long as we are not targeting Xiao Mo Ge, no one would care about us,” the male said calmly, “the waters of Great Peace City have started to muddy.”

He suddenly smiled. “They are all staring at Xiao Mo Ge so we will go find the other key to Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.”

“You know who has the key?” Nanmen Xue was shocked.

“No.” The male smiled slightly. “We have a few targets.”

Nanmen Xue started at the other and suddenly said, “Is there anything I need to do?”

“Of course!” The male had a satisfied expression. “You are an integral part of our plan.”

Then he told Nanmen Xue his plan in a lowered voice.

Nanmen Xue’s eyes were bright as he listened and nodded occasionally. The other’s plan was outstanding.

However

When the other finished telling him the plan, Nanmen Xue looked at the other and smiled. “It is an outstanding plan! However, I want the Fire Heart Gall.”

The other’s brow furrowed. “As long as you complete”

Nanmen Xue shook his head. “I want it now.”

The other's expression changed slightly. "That is not possible!"

"Really?" Namen Xue smiled and said, "Your plan is so exquisite and detailed. If one part goes wrong, the whole plan falls apart. So many steps are related to me, I am a very important pawn."

"There is no benefit if you go back on your word! You will regret it!" The other's face was dark as he gritted out.

"Fire Heart Gall or you lose, choose one." Nanmen Xue still smiled. "Oh, right, I believe that you can also see that it is not a very easy matter if you want to withdraw from our partnership now."

The other's complexion was ashen.

Chapter 616 - Tattletale

Zuo Mo played with the ring, thoughts of murder spreading in his eyes.

Kun Lun!

He hadn't expected that it was Kun Lun!

The ring was given to him by A Gui. While rummaging through it Zuo Mo was shocked to discover that its owner had been a Kun Lun xiuzhe. He asked A Gui and naturally did not receive a response. Only when he asked that glutton, Black Gold, did he understand what had happened.

Kun Lun had come to their doorstep!

Zuo Mo's eyes were dark. Kun Lun was their mortal enemy!

There were a lot of things in the ring, but for the present Little Mo Gei, it wasn't that much wealth.

Kun Lun!

Zuo Mo smirked coldly. Since they had run into Great Peace City, then he couldn't be blamed for informing others of their presence.

Zuo Mo sat in front of Princess Xin.

Princess Xin's and Princess Xia's auras were of completely different. Princess Xia was seductive and attractive, Princess Xin was elegant and understanding.

“Has there been news of your subordinates?”

Princess Xin's first words earned good feelings from Zuo Mo. The concern in her tone caused people to feel her kindness.

“Not yet.” Zuo Mo shook his head and thanked her, “Many thanks for the concern.”

Princess Xin said seriously, “If there is some place Xin can help, please speak. Xin might be limited in ability but will not refuse if Xin can help.”

Hearing the sincerity in the other's tone, Zuo Mo's heart warmed slightly. “Alright!”

In the sea of consciousness, Wei who was usually calm was filled with disbelief. His expression was as though he had seen a ghost as he exclaimed in shock, “Gravestone Armor!”

Gravestone Armor?

Zuo Mo stilled. A moment later, he suddenly reacted and almost shouted out loud.

But he quickly realized where he was and suppressed the shock in his heart. He asked the other, “Wei, where is the Gravestone Armor?”

There was deep shock in Pu Yao’s bloody pupil.

“In the corner, that armored guard, the armor he is wearing is Gravestone Armor!” Wei’s voice had lost all sense of calm and had begun to tremble slightly.

Armored guard?

Zuo Mo’s gaze immediately moved towards the armored guard in the corner behind Princess Xin.

Gravestone Armor

Princess Xin noticed the thread of unnaturalness on Xiao Mo Ge’s face and then watched his gaze move to her guard behind her.

“Does Mister Xiao know Xia?” Princess Xin suddenly asked.

“Xia?” Zuo Mo reflexively answered. He quickly focused and hurriedly shook his head. “No, no.”

Princess Xin smiled. “I see that Mister Xiao is very interested in Xia.”

Having refocused, Zuo Mo’s reaction was quick. He said with a smile, “Yes, heavy armor mo are very rare nowadays.”

“Oh.” Princess Xin nodded and changed the subject. “Mister Xiao is so young and accomplished so much. You must be from a famed house.”

“This will probably disappoint Princess, but even now, this one does not know what family this one comes from,” Zuo Mo said helplessly. Almost everyone would ask him this question. He glanced at the guard dressed in Gravestone Armor in the corner and suppressed his curiosity.

Princess Xin was slightly shocked. She saw that Xiao Mo Ge’s expression did not seem to be an act.

But this was good news to her. Experts without a family were easier to recruit. She was about to speak when Zuo Mo spoke up first, “Does Princess know of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion that is causing such a fuss recently?”

Princess Xin’s back unconsciously straightened. “I’ve heard of it. Is Mister Xiao also interested in it?”

Zuo Mo grimaced. “It is not that I have an interest in it, but it has an interest in me.” Then he counted on his fingertips. “Princess, you have to say there is no reason in this world. I did not provoke anyone, but trouble finds me.”

Not waiting for Princess Xin to speak, he started to complain, “I went to Princess Xia’s to drink a bit of wine, and then Nanmen Xue chased me there. I managed to sneak away but was ambushed on the road. I almost lost my life. When I just managed to return home, my subordinates disappeared. I still don’t know who did it. Not to mention that just yesterday, even people from Kun Lun tried to sneak into my estate!”

Princess Xin finally showed a truly shocked expression. “Kun Lun?”

Zuo Mo’s expression was bitter. “Yes, Princess! Kun Lun also came, I don’t even know what to say!” His tone changed and he said with righteous fury. “I don’t care who has aims on the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, but I am mo, and it is better for this event to benefit us rather than Kun Lun. What is Kun Lun? What rights do they have to target the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?”

“Yes!” Princess Xin’s expression was grave. “I hadn’t thought that Kun Lun would scheme against the treasure of us mo! They have gone too far!”

“Yes, Princess!” Zuo Mo added on. “The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion is the ultimate treasure that Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming left.

Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming is an elder of us mo, what is the rationale in having xiuzhe touch his estate?”

He then said righteously, “I know that everyone is keeping a close eye on me. Even though I do not know the reason, for the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, it is nothing even if I have to make a personal sacrifice. But if I land on the hands of xiuzhe, I will resist to the death!”

Princess Xin hurriedly comforted, “Mister Xiao, do not worry. Great Peace City is the territory of us mo and definitely not somewhere where xiuzhe can step! I think that this is the attitude from everyone in Great Peace City! Mister Xiao, do not be worried. Everyone is on the same side against xiuzhe!”

Beside him, Ceng Lian’er slowly drank tea as though she did not hear. Mirth flashed through her eyes.

“Princess needs to act quickly!” Zuo Mo had a crying expression. “Look at me, I need an escort when I go out now, I’m afraid!”

Princess Xin comforted him some more.

After a while later, Zuo Mo left with Ceng Lian’er.

Princess Xin’s gaze landed on Zuo Mo’s figure as he walked away. She suddenly spoke, “Xia, he is very interested in you.”

“En.” Xia’s voice came out of the thick armor.

“What do you feel?” Princess Xin asked nonsensically.

Xia was quiet for a moment before speaking, “Truth and lies.”

“Just as I thought.” Princess Xin smiled slightly. “I just don’t know why the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion has landed on this person who is so much like a hoodlum.”

Xia was silent and did not respond.

Princess Xin said to herself, “However, this Kun Lun is too daring!”

When she said this, murderousness flashed through her eyes.

“Wei, you said he was wearing Gravestone Armor?” When Zuo Mo left, he immediately asked Wei.

“En.” Wei’s expression was normal and showed none of his former loss of composure.

“Weren’t the Gravestone Armors lost?” Zuo Mo asked curiously, “I had thought that there were no other Gravestone Armors except for you. So there actually are others!”

“I had also thought that there weren’t any left.” Wei glanced at Zuo Mo. “You need to be careful. The inheritance of the Gravestone Armor is very powerful.”

“How powerful?” Zuo Mo thought and then asked.

“The core of the Gravestone Armor is self-sacrifice,” Wei said calmly. “Every Gravestone Armor has an armor soul that had once been a sacrifice. In the ancient times, this was one type of sacrificial worship and also the most difficult kind because it used only one sacrifice, the sacrifice of the self. But the benefits it brings is also great. The Gravestone Armor either has great power, or something unique to it. However, its greatest advantage is the armor spirit. Armor spirits can exist for a very long time. Over the ages it will continuously learn, become stronger, and the amount of knowledge that it can pass down would increase.”

Zuo Mo was silent. He knew what this meant.

“But every thousand years, there is an ordeal for the Gravestone Armor’s armor soul. If they can pass it, they can continue to survive, if they do not, they dissipate,” Wei said lightly. “Meaning the armor spirits that have survived until now are all powerful armor spirits. In other words, only very powerful Gravestone Armors still exist.”

“Even stronger than you?” Zuo Mo didn’t believe it.

“He accepted the Gravestone Armor, you did not.” Wei glanced at

Zuo Mo. “In the succession rite, other than knowledge, there is also power granted, the power of the Gravestone Armor! It is greater than you can imagine!”

Pu Yao snorted coldly, “There are always tradeoffs. The power of the succession is not so easy to take. What Gravestone Armor, it is a con that uses easy power as the bait!”

“That is not an incorrect way of putting it,” Wei said with a smile. “It is a con, but it is a con that people are willing to enter into.”

Seeing the two about to fight, Zuo Mo hurriedly interrupted, “Then how powerful is that person?”

“It is best if you do not provoke him,” Pu Yao warned.

“You’ll know after trying,” Wei said with a smile.

The two completely opposite answers allowed Zuo Mo to immediately understand that the person’s power was not something he could match.

He was just curious about the Gravestone Armor. He and Princess Xin were not enemies. Also, Princess Xin was of noble status and it really was normal for her to have a powerful expert.

Thinking about how he had tattled on Kun Lun today, Zuo Mo felt very good.

The matter of Kun Lun targeting Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was something that Zuo Mo thought many people would close their eyes to if no one made it public. But if something was pushed to the open, then every faction would express the same attitude.

After Zuo Mo came out of Princess Xin's residence, he sprinted for Princess Wan's residence. Then he also narrated the matter of Kun Lun there. Princess Wan's response was the same as Princess Xin.

Then Zuo Mo met with Shi Yue Yi and Lan Tian Long.

Very quickly, all the major powers in the city knew that Xiao Mo Ge had been attacked by Kun Lun.

At night, Shi Yue Yi invited the major factions of Great Peace City to discuss how to deal with Kun Lun.

Kun Lun's reputation was so great that no one in the mo world did not know of them. The major factions, with Shi Yue Yi as the leader, knew that Kun Lun was their greatest enemy right now.

Kun Lun was very powerful, and those they dared to send to Great Peace City would all be experts.

Great Peace City was full of experts, but the true experts of each faction were not here. Facing an existence as terrible as Kun Lun, no one had the confidence. Everyone firmly believed that if they

did not eliminate Kun Lun, no mo faction would be able to benefit from the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.

Lin Qian would have never thought that Zuo Mo was arranging such a great surprise for them.

Chapter 617 - Little Landlord

Great Peace Palace

Shi Yue Yi's expression was stern. It was very rare to see such an expression on the normally gentle city master. The atmosphere inside the hall was tense.

“I know that many people have come to the city for the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion and I do not care in whose hands it ends up. My teacher once said that everything is up to fate. However, I never thought that even the sword xiu of Kun Lun would infiltrate into Great Peace City. This is a shock to me.”

Shi Yue Yi's voice echoed in the large hall. Everyone had focused expressions and many showed expressions of shock. Shi Yue Yi was Shi Zi Ming's student and technically the successor of Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. So, it was a shock to many to hear him be so indifferent about it.

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion holds the product of my teacher's life long labor. I believe that no one can accept it ending up in the hands of xiuzhe. I have invited everyone here today to discuss how to eliminate these xiuzhe that have sneaked into Great Peace City. Here, I have to tell everyone that it isn't just Kun Lun that has come into Great Peace City, but all four great sects!”

When the words came out, there was a furor. Everyone had shocked expressions.

“Great Peace City, it is us mo’s Great Peace City! Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, it is us mo’s Great Peace Treasure Pavilion!”

Shi Yue Yi’s words were like steel.

The people agreed and the crowd was furious.

The decision was quickly made that the large factions would eliminate the xiuzhe led by Kun Lun and the one in command would be Princess Xia.

Shi Yue Yi had recommended her and she received support from everyone else. Princess Xia was intelligent and cunning. She herself also represented the Anwei Family, and was the most suitable commander.

An unprecedented mission quietly started.

They still hadn’t received any news about A Wen and the others. This made Zuo Mo very restless.

“Daren, Qi Diao Yu asks for a meeting!” a subordinate reported.

Zuo Mo stilled. Qi Diao Yu? This guy had come to visit him?

He turned to look at Ceng Lian'er. Ceng Lian'er shook her head. "I don't know."

He thought and then said, "Invite him in."

Taking this opportunity, Zuo Mo asked Pu Yao in the sea of consciousness, "Pu, what is this guy coming for?"

"Possibly for an alliance," Pu Yao said gravely. "No matter what, you do not need to worry."

Zuo Mo thought and found that the words were right. Even if Qi Diao Yu wanted to use force, Zuo Mo could completely suppress him while in this compound. With A Gui and Ceng Lian'er, the two assistants present, adding on himself, there were three people. Zuo Mo did not believe they could not defeat Qi Diao Yu.

He glanced at Wei. Ever since Wei saw the gravestone armor last time, he had sunk into silence. Zuo Mo speculated that Wei was thinking of past events. Or maybe he felt something after encountering one of his kind?

Zuo Mo did not know how to comfort Wei.

There was something that Pu Yao was right about. He really didn't have any interest in the gravestone armor. Even though he wasn't clear about what restraints the gravestone armor would place on him, but he was sure that there would be many restraints.

He disliked being restricted.

He quickly saw Qi Diao Yu. It had to be said that Qi Diao Yu had a very good appearance. With his snowy white robes and extraordinary beauty, his presence was stunning.

“Brother Qi hasn’t changed at all!” Zuo Mo insincerely gave a greeting.

“I want to make a deal.” Qi Diao Yu did not waste a word and headed for the topic.

“What deal?” Zuo Mo also didn’t mince words and asked straight out.

Qi Diao Yu looked at Zuo Mo with star-like eyes. He said briskly, “I will help you, and you will give me a copy of the stele inside the treasure pavilion.”

Now Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. He looked at the other and asked amusedly, “How do you know that I can enter the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.”

“It is not that you can, but you are the one most likely to,” Qi Diao Yu explained.

Zuo Mo understood a bit. He smiled and said, “Then what can you help me with?”

“I can protect your life,” Qi Diao Yu said.

Zuo Mo stared at Qi Diao Yu for a moment and then roared with laughter. “Are you joking? Protect me? Can you beat her?” He pointed at Ceng Lian’er who was idly drinking tea by the side. Ceng Lian’er focused on her tea and didn’t even blink as though there was only empty air in front of her.

Qi Diao Yu glanced at Ceng Lian’er. “We are evenly matched.”

Zuo Mo then pointed at A Gui. “Her?”

A Gui was also unaffected. At the side, the black gold seal soldier, that glutton, lazily opened his eyes, examined Qi Diao Yu and then closed his eyes with a relaxed expression.

Qi Diao Yu’s gaze swept the black gold seal soldier. His eyelids flickered. “We will be evenly matched.”

“That’s it, if you were very powerful, it would be fine if you make such a deal with me. But you don’t even have the confidence to beat either of them. Even if I wanted to do business with you, I won’t be able to get a good price.” Zuo Mo said with an expression of regret. “I already have two experts. If one more is added, it can increase my strength, but won’t bring me up another level. Also, it is very hard for me to trust you. You are asking for too much, but giving too little. I, Xiao Mo Ge, won’t do such unprofitable business.”

“I have information.” Qi Diao Yu forced himself to remain calm.

Zuo Mo spread his hands. “But you are not the only one with that information, while I am the only one.”

Zuo Mo said the last phrase meaningfully. Originally, he had wanted to take leave of the brewing storm as quickly as possible. He hadn’t expected A Wen and the others to disappear and force him to stay in this storm. Ever since he understood he became a key to entering the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, he perceptively recognized the business potential here.

What kind of business was the easiest to profit from? Of course it was the business where you had a monopoly!

Zuo Mo did not have any ambitions about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. He knew that with so many eyes on them, whoever got the treasures would not be able to live.

But he could take the chance to get rich. For those families, they wouldn’t have any trouble paying a price to gain some advantages in this fight.

So Zuo Mo unhesitatingly refused Qi Diao Yu’s initial offer.

What kind of joke was this!

If his first transaction was so cheap, then the next customers definitely wouldn't give higher offers.

Zuo Mo seemed to have an instinctive obsession towards the pursuit of profit.

Qi Diao Yu was silent. The reason he had come to find Zuo Mo today was that he detected this fight was becoming more cruel. He was just one person and couldn't affect the overall situation, so he thought of finding Zuo Mo to work together. He hadn't thought that Zuo Mo was more clever than he expected.

There was a gentle and harmless smile on Zuo Mo's face. "When you have a suitable offer, you can come find me."

Qi Diao Yu glanced at Zuo Mo and left without a word.

Zuo Mo smiled as he watched Qi Diao Yu leave.

He knew that the news that Qi Diao Yu came here would spread over Great Peace City very soon.

By that time, there would be even more customers.

He really anticipated it.

————

Zuo Mo looked at the beautiful Princess Xia in front of him and grimaced. “How come it is you?”

“Why can’t it be me?” Princess Xia rolled her eyes. The unconscious flirtatious look would cause people’s hearts to speed up.

As Zuo Mo resisted the illusory art, he continued to grimace and said, “I was waiting for the others to come and bleed them for a lot.”

Ha, Princess Xia laughed so hard her shoulders curled. Her finger pointed at Zuo Mo. “You are so bad so bad!”

Zuo Mo said with a serious expression. “This is such a good chance. If I miss it, the heavens will strike me with lightning!”

Princess Xia laughed so much her hair dislodged from her hairdo. She panted slightly which added a hint of mature seductiveness. She brushed the hair that had fallen down on her forehead and said with a smile, “Don’t you have any ideas about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?”

“That is a matter for the big landlords to play with, I can’t afford to play.” Zuo Mo said with a matter-of-fact expression. “It is not worth it to lose my little life over that.”

A strange look flashed through Princess Xia’s eyes. “You see it clearly.”

Zuo Mo said smugly, “Of course. It would be unprofitable if I don’t take the chance to make some more.” But then his expression dropped. “But since you came, I cannot do that. I owe you a favor from last time, I can’t do that to you.”

Princess Xia smiled mischievously. “I can’t bear to use the favor for something like this.” Then she copied Zuo Mo’s tone. “It would be unprofitable!”

Zuo Mo laughed.

“Why did you recommend me?” Princess Xia suddenly asked something completely unrelated.

“Recommend you?” Zuo Mo stilled.

“Don’t play dumb,” Princess Xia said, “City Master told me that you recommended me to him.”

“Oh, that!” Zuo Mo realized. “Because you are very strong!”

He added inside: especially in illusory arts

“Strong?” Princess Xia smiled. “In your mind, I am such a schemer?”

Zuo Mo scratched. “I just felt that you are relatively smart.”

Then he couldn't help say, "You definitely have to take those Kun Lun people down, don't let them escape."

"With your personality, you wouldn't chase after them like this. It seems that they have offended you greatly, there definitely is something else." Princess Xia looked smilingly at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo's heart shook. This woman was too smart. He had to be careful!

He could only play dumb.

The two talked about various topics. Princess Xia had extraordinary knowledge. Other than the illusory arts that were automatically cast which made it difficult, it was very pleasurable to talk with her.

However, Zuo Mo didn't dare to drink this time.

"The Anwei Family is very interested in you." Finishing, she took out a mo weapon and placed it in front of Zuo Mo.

This mo weapon was a short dagger-axe. It was completely red and at the horizontal blade, there was a black eye. It caused the entire weapon to seem eerie.

"This Crow Eye Dagger-Axe was forged from the beak of a black fire crow mo through hundreds of years of refining. It is very powerful and a top notch mo weapon. Your mo skill is fire-type

and this is suitable for you. How about it, are you satisfied?”

Zuo Mo picked up the Crow Eye Dagger-axe. Immediately, a vicious and vast presence passed from the dagger-axe to his hand. He couldn't help but exclaim, “A good mo weapon!”

“This is a meeting gift from the Anwei Family, you do not need to return it.” Princess Xia blinked her eyes at Zuo Mo and giggled. “With it as a good starting point, don't be kind when you bargain.”

Finishing, she waved at Zuo Mo and left.

Zuo Mo was speechless.

Chapter 618 - Activation

Zuo Mo's business was open.

Ever since Princess Xia's visit, Zuo Mo's estate had become a popular place. The families that thought themselves possessing some power, all offered olive branches to Zuo Mo. All kinds of mo weapons, all kinds of rare treasures, and some families were so generous as to even give jie to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo accepted them all. He was profusely grateful in words but did not mention anything else.

These factions did not mention it either. This was just them feeling out the road. Zuo Mo was something rare but nothing had started at this time. It was not the time for them to truly give their prices.

As to these things, they were nothing to these large and powerful factions.

Inside the estate, the gifts piled up in a mountain. There were many precious treasures but Zuo Mo was not very happy. There was no news yet of A Wen and the others. They seemed to have disappeared into thin air. Zuo Mo had practically asked all the factions in Great Peace City but hadn't found anything.

Luo Li Shidi was still in seclusion. Zuo Mo was very worried about his condition. Sometimes, there would be a thread of life, but most of the time, there wasn't any vitality.

The state of affairs in Great Peace City was complex. Even Zuo Mo could not predict which way it would develop.

He was something rare and desired. In other words, everyone knew him.

There were countless pairs of eyes staring at him openly and from the shadows. With the slightest misstep, he would die. What he was most worried about were A Wen and the others. This mastermind was able to remain so composed and it put great pressure on Zuo Mo.

He could only wait patiently. Other than waiting, there wasn't anything more he could do. Everyday, he had to suppress the restlessness he felt, be patient, and cultivate.

Yet at this time, an invitation from City Master Shi was delivered to him.

When Zuo Mo arrived at a room hidden deep in the Great Peace Palace, there were already eight people inside.

The people greeted him when they saw him. Right now, everyone in Great Peace City knew that Zuo Mo was a person important to the opening of Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. All the families hoped to develop a closer relationship with him and had friendlier

smiles.

Shi Yue Yi, Chang Yuan Hao, Yu Shuang, Princess Xia and the others were among those present.

Moments later, more people came in. About an hour later, the room closed up. Zuo Mo looked around and inhaled in shock. This room contained almost all the important personages in Great Peace City.

What was happening?

Zuo Mo thought inside.

The first to speak was Shi Yue Yi. “I have invited everyone today because we have intelligence on the xiuzhe in Great Peace City.”

Then Princess Xia stood and bowed to the crowd. She said, “Those xiuzhe are very well disguised. If it wasn’t that they first lost to Mister Xiao, it would really have been difficult to detect them. We secretly sent people to investigate all recent newcomers to the city and finally had a result today. However, there is trouble. Many of them are still hidden, and our investigations have already attracted their attention.”

The room was very quiet. The people present were all leaders and naturally could hold their composure.

Princess Xia wasn’t timid at all. She was at ease and her seductive

eyes now flashed with an intelligent light. “I suspect that xiuzhe sects like Kun Lun probably had spies in Great Peace City a long time ago. Otherwise, how could there be such a coincidence that they knew that the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion is about to appear?”

“Hmph! These xiuzhe still won’t give up on eliminating us mo!” Yu Shuang shorted coldly, his expression frosty.

Princess Xia smiled and brimmed with strong confidence. “Elder Yu is right, and we shall give them a memorable lesson.”

“Princess, tell us what arrangements you have. On this matter, there is no reason for us to refuse!” one person shouted.

The others all agreed.

Princess Xia’s eyes turned. “This plan requires the support of Mister Xiao in order to proceed.”

“Me?” Zuo Mo pointed at his nose and looked dazedly at Princess Xia.

“Yes!” Princess Xia blinked her eyes at him.

————

“You are not kind to drag me into this!”

Inside Princess Xia's residence, Zuo Mo waved his arms around in displeasure. Princess Xia was smiling in front of him.

"However, aren't you the person with the greatest grievance against Kun Lun? How can this be called pulling you under the water?" Princess Xia said innocently. Mirth flowed deep in her eyes.

Zuo Mo was unable to form words. He had been the one urging this matter. Princess Xia was correct. But this completely disrupted his previous plans. He had originally wanted to help urge this matter forward and strike at Kun Lun using the mo.

But now, it became him going forward to give Kun Lun a blow. How could he remain calm?

Yes, he had a grievance against Kun Lun. But if he went to make trouble for the other before he was strong enough, that was just throwing meat buns at the dogs. Zuo Mo knew just how vicious Kun Lun would be.

Great Peace City was full of experts but no one had the certainty of victory when facing Kun Lun's experts.

The xiuzhe were stronger than the yaomo and Kun Lun was the most powerful sect in the xiuzhe realm. In other words, Kun Lun was the strongest sect in the world. The other three great sects were also terrifying titans. Facing the experts sent by the four great sects, other than having an advantage in numbers and being

in their territory, the mo didn't have any other advantages.

This would be a hard battle!

Zuo Mo was able to imagine the ferocity of this battle, he could feel it even in his toes. If he wasn't careful, his little life would end. This was also why he wanted to borrow a blade to kill someone rather than going for it himself.

Yet what he had never expected was that Princess Xia had put the most important step of the plan onto his shoulders.

This almost caused him to spit blood!

If this was someone else, Zuo Mo would want to kill them.

Almost as though she saw Zuo Mo's concerns, Princess Xia comforted, "Do not worry, no one would let you die. You are very valuable right now. You did not see those people. They wanted to shove all their guards at you."

Zuo Mo's expression almost seemed to cry. "Don't force me in like this, I only have one life!"

Princess Xia burst into laughter. "As expected, you are cowardly and afraid of death. Adding on your shamelessness, you cannot be saved!"

“Yes, yes!” Zuo Mo’s head bobbed like a chick eating rice. “I’m afraid of death! Very afraid! Princess Daren, please spare me!”

“You truly want to pass upon a chance to capture them all in one go?” Princess Xia looked wryly at Zuo Mo. “For you, I borrowed Xin and Wan’s guards. They are all very powerful experts. Even Qi Diao Yu agreed to help.

Zuo Mo’s mind shifted upon hearing this. He thought of Princess Xin’s guard, Xia, and Princess Wan’s Butler, Zhu Ke. These two were of unfathomable power.

Nothing had to be said more of Qi Diao Yu’s power. He was a top power in Great Peace City. Adding on Chang Yuan Hao and Yu Shuang, the team was pretty terrifying and it should be enough to deal with Kun Lun.

If this was another time, it would not be an easy matter to gather so many experts together!

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth. “Fine!”

Princess Xia said smilingly, “You really have a deep grudge against Kun Lun!”

Zuo Mo was silent. He had to be even more careful when he spoke to this woman. However, he could feel that Princess Xia did not have malicious intentions so he said honestly, “Yes, deep bloody grudge!”

Princess Xia was a little shocked, before smiling. She said gently, “Then you won’t regret it.”

“I hope so!” Zuo Mo turned his face around. “How should I start?”

Entering the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles again, for some unknown reason, Zuo Mo felt slightly emotional. This period of time had been like a dream and too many things had happened. He didn’t even have the time to sort out his thoughts. The events came one after the next, and he didn’t even have a chance to breathe.

How were A Wen and the others now?

Zuo Mo’s mind was heavy as he slowly walked between the steles. He was in a dispirited mood. Today, there were many people visiting the Great Peace Mo Steles. Ever since the news of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion had spread, the number of people that were headed towards Great Peace Mo Steles had multiplied. Everyone wanted to find clues to the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion from these stone steles.

As he thought, without realizing it, Zuo Mo went deep into the stele forest.

There were not many roaming around here. This was the deepest part of the stele forest. Every stele here was cryptic and profound. If one did not reach the stage, it would be indecipherable. Even the people that copied down the Great Peace Mo Steles were too lazy to copy down all the contents here because for most people, they would never need such profound content their entire life.

Ever since having an epiphany here, Zuo Mo had never come to the stele forest again. Walking here today, he started to browse these stone steles.

The content on the stone steles was not unfamiliar to him. He had a complete copy of the Great Peace Mo Stele Writings, and had memorized the content. He did not understand all of it. He was just at the edge of [Domain] and there was still a long way off from reaching the peak of general. A lot of the content was very profound to him.

Seeing the time was still early, he found a random stone stele and started to read phrase by phrase. Unconsciously, he immersed himself.

What this stone stele was talking about was [Domain]. Shi Zi Ming had his own understanding of [Domain]. Zuo Mo seemed to see an old man talking enthusiastically in front of him. His body was so weak and withered that a wind could blow him over, but those eyes were unusually dark and bright.

A moment later, Zuo Mo gradually recovered and everything returned to normal.

The stone stele was silent. Where was the old man?

Zuo Mo laughed. He had been too immersed, so much that he was seeing illusions.

However, when he noticed the darkened sky in the surroundings, he found it was terrible.

Not good!

He had been too focused and forgot what he had come to do!

A round silver ball appeared on his hand. There seemed to be a layer of light flowing around the silver ball. This silver ball was the most important part of the mission this time.

He was about to crush the silver ball on his hand when he saw a row of characters on a stone stele out of the corner of his eye. He froze as though someone cast a body paralysis curse on him.

He stood there motionless!

Chapter 619 - “World”

“What is he doing over there?” Lan Rong couldn’t help asking.

Lan Tian Long was also slightly confused. He looked at Zuo Mo that was in a daze between the steles and said uncertainly, “Did he drink today?”

“He probably wouldn’t have. Such an important event today ...” Lan Rong’s expression was slightly ugly. He suddenly recalled what had happened after Zuo Mo had got drunk at the Great Peace Palace last time and the rest of his words faded.

The two Lan brothers looked at each other with strange expressions.

Behind them, a smile came onto Princess Xia’s face. She turned and ordered, “Tell them, pay attention to what is happening.”

A servant silently left.

“Xiao Mo Ge is young but he can keep his composure.” Yu Shuang couldn’t resist praising.

Princess Xia brushed away some locks of hair on her forehead and smiled, “One that isn’t composed cannot lure out those xiuzhe. They have come in alone and it is shocking how long they have prepared for this. There probably are many of them in Great Peace City. If we are not careful, our plan will fail.”

Yu Shuang smiled and said, “Princess Xia is peerless. Even I would fall for this. City Master Shi is probably stirring them into an uproar right now!”

In Princess Xia’s plan, Shi Yue Yi would gather the major factions inside the city today, to discuss how to deal with the xiuzhe. He would make a big furor and gather all the factions inside Great Peace City. However, the true experts would be hidden near the Great Peace Mo Steles.

The bait for the entire plan was Zuo Mo.

Any faction with some power knew that Zuo Mo was a crucial piece of how to get into the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. Even though no one knew the reason, there were countless eyes that stared at every action Zuo Mo made. The xiuzhe would definitely be paying attention as well.

He quietly appeared at the stele forest and pretended to appear as though he was searching. If these experts did not know Princess Xia’s plan beforehand, they would definitely think that Zuo Mo was searching for the entrance to the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. He also lingered for a whole afternoon and had waited long enough for the xiuzhe to gather.

Zuo Mo had a Star Luring Mo Ball. This Star Luring Mo Ball was one personally made by Shi Yue Yi. It only had one use, it could cause one star to fall from the sky. There would be great noise, and the mo matrixes inside the Great Peace Mo Stele would activate at

the same time to create an illusion

–The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was about to appear!

This was the bait to lure the xiuzhe.

Princess Xia gave the xiuzhe a dilemma. If they were slightly hesitant, they would lose the opportunity. Even if the xiuzhe knew this was a trap, would they gamble on it?

This was actually a psychological battle. What Princess Xia gambled was that even though the xiuzhe had sent people in before this, the spies of the xiuzhe would not be able to penetrate the upper ranks of major mo families! Only a few knew of this plan. Those that knew were the leaders of each clan. It was very unlikely for people like this to be spies for the xiuzhe.

They were coming in alone, and without sufficient intelligence. Facing such a realistic trap, there wasn't much room for the xiuzhe to choose.

Princess Xia wanted to use this plan to get all the xiuzhe in one swoop. The place that they were hiding was very hidden and at the edge of the stele forest. This was the place where the Anwei Family usually spied from. For this mission, Princess Xia really paid a great price.

The plan was not complex but all the elders praised it. If it was them, there was a high possibility that they would also be fooled.

“This is because of the support from all the elders.,” Princess Xia said with a smile.

Chang Yuan Hao suddenly moved forward a few steps. At the same time, a strange look flashed across Yu Shuang’s eyes. “En.”

Everyone’s gaze moved towards Zuo Mo inside the stele forest.

Qi Diao Yu’s expression changed slightly as his eyes lit up. He stared hard at Zuo Mo.

The blurry figure in the distance suddenly emanated an indescribable feeling of danger.

This guy what was going on?

“When consciousness and ling power reach an extreme depth of the body, the world will reappear.”

The short phrase placed in the corner of the stele was not eye catching at all. This stone stele was discussing the three powers, and this phrase was not something attention-catching among the text. However, what attracted Zuo Mo’s attention was the word “world” in this phrase. This word was in a different writing than all the other stele text as though someone had written it on the

stele with a finger.

Zuo Mo had browsed through almost all the mo skill steles. All of the content on the steles had used the same style of writing and were exquisitely carved. If one did not notice the word “world,” they would have missed it. Even if one noticed, they would have thought that someone had made a mistake when engraving this stele and then corrected it.

But when Zuo Mo noticed the strangeness of this part, he froze where he stood.

Because he understood this phrase.

“When consciousness and ling power reach an extreme depth of the body”

He had used this technique when he had modified the mo matrixes for Bie Han’s Sin Battalion. When consciousness and ling power reached deep into the body, the world would truly become different. He would enter a wondrous state where he was calm and emotionless.

Truthfully, Zuo Mo did not like this state but this state gave him the feeling of being inhuman. He was like a puppet that did not have life or emotion. He would be precise, but without any spirit.

When “world” was put into this phrase, it caused his mind to shift.

Did ... this world have another meaning?

Zuo Mo thought for a moment and then decided to try it. He channeled and the suns of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus lit up. His consciousness and ling power continuously moved deeper into his body.

His mind started to become cold, his emotions seemed to be bared in an extreme environment without any warmth.

His eyes became cold and indifferent, his emotions quickly disappearing. A thin layer of gold light appeared but there was also a hint of white.

A new world appeared in front of him.

Countless half-transparent lines criss-crossed between the stone steles. The entire stele forest was like a cage made from countless lines of light.

The stunning scene in front of Zuo Mo did not cause any change in emotions. He moved his head, his eyes were emotionless, as he looked at the surroundings.

A faint handprint appeared on some of the stone steles.

The stone steles which had handprints were the stone steles

where the most threads intersected.

He did not pause. He walked in front of a stone stele and pressed his hand on the faint handprint on the stone stele.

An extremely light tremor came to his hand as though there was a tremble very deep in the earth. It was unusually small. If Zuo Mo wasn't in this state, he definitely would not have detected it.

Zuo Mo could accurately capture every ripple. The ripples had an unique rhythm.

In this state, Zuo Mo's mo skill was at its maximum. Without even thinking about it, the muscles in his hands trembled and responded to the stone stele with the same rhythm.

The trembling of the stone stele suddenly stopped. In Zuo Mo's eyes, it suddenly became bright.

Countless streaks of light flowed into the other steles along the half-transparent lines like water flowing outwards.

Zuo Mo's expression was indifferent as he appeared in front of another stone stele which had a handprint.

————

“Those inside cannot send anything out.” A shidi next to Lin

Qian shook his head. He tried his best to communicate with “Eyes” but there hadn’t been any results.

“Eyes” had been summoned to Great Peace City to discuss how to deal with the xiuzhe. But the Great Peace Palace was blocked off from all communication with the outside. They could not pass any messages out.

“It seems that these mo are not stupid,” another shidi said with a smile. He smirked coldly and said, “Trying to redirect our attention so crudely like this, they really underestimate us.”

Lin Qian’s eyes were suspicious. He suspected this could possibly be a trap. All of their information was supposedly broadcast by Xiao Mo Ge. They had learned that the mysterious woman they had fought with when they entered the city had been Xiao Mo Ge’s personal maid. Fei Fei probably lost his life when he entered the other’s residence.

No matter from what angle, Xiao Mo Ge had enough reasons to want to deal with them. It wasn’t as though it was unlikely for him to plan such a trap.

But what surprised Lin Qian was what happened when he saw Xiao Mo Ge the first time.

This was the first time he saw Xiao Mo Ge. Even though he had heard this name countless times before. In the report from “Eyes,” Xiao Mo Ge was a crucial part of opening the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. He had caused the Shifting Star Sands, defeated Shen Yu

who had comprehended the Peacock King Plume, obtained the Reversed Stellar Revolution, reached the edge of Domain, and was a genius youth that had recently attracted attention in Great Peace City.

Lin Qin was the first ranked disciple among the third generation disciples of Kun Lun. He knew more than most people. He noticed that Xiao Mo Ge's name had also appeared in the intelligence reports from the yao. It had also been a youth called Xiao Mo Ge who was a young battle general that defeated gold battle general Corps Commander Yu Heng, completed a prison-breaking battle, and astounded the yao realm.

He suspected that these two were the same person.

If they really were the same person, then it was frightening!

Such a monstrous person would be rare even in Kun Lun which was full of geniuses.

So the moment that he saw Xiao Mo Ge's name from "Eye's" report, Lin Qian decided, no matter what, he had to kill this person. When he thought about the consequences a person with such potential in the yaomo camp would bring, he couldn't restrain his murderousness.

But when he saw Xiao Mo Ge, he was very shocked.

Because he felt a strange sense of familiarity from Xiao Mo Ge.

He was sure he had never seen this face before, but this sense of familiarity was so clear.

He had definitely interacted with Xiao Mo Ge before!

When a person reached cultivation of his level, a wrong feeling would almost never appear. The sword essence he cultivated was profound and he knew that his sword heart would not lie to him.

Yet when he thought it over in his mind, he could not understand where he had seen Xiao Mo Ge before.

It was a pity there was no time. Lin Qian sighed inwardly. If he was meditating, and his sword heart was clear, he would definitely identify the other.

He quickly threw the stray thoughts to the back of his mind. He looked at Zuo Mo with a sword-sharp gaze. Suddenly, his expression changed. In his eyes, Xiao Mo Ge's presence suddenly changed dramatically.

In Lin Qian's eyes, Xiao Mo Ge was like a mo puppet, empty and cold.

This was

Lin Qian was shocked and suspicious.

Then he saw Xiao Mo Ge reach for a stone stele.

A moment later, Lin Qian's expression changed drastically!

There was movement deep within the earth!

Chapter 620 - Lie Becoming Truth

“This place is quite ghastly!” Ming Jue Zi muttered. They had been trapped for so many days and still hadn’t found the exit.

The black smoke yao said with self-recrimination, “It is all my fault! If it wasn’t for me”

“Old Black, that’s alright, this might be our good fortune.” Nan Yue hurriedly comforted the black smoke yao. “There are many people outside that want to come in, they wouldn’t expect that we got ahead of them.”

Cang Ze added with a smile, “Old Black, think hard. We are putting our hopes on you to find the treasures.”

A Wen was slightly worried, “There is no way to enter the Ten Finger Prison from here. Daren would definitely have gone there to look for us.”

Everyone was silent.

The orange-haired yao spoke up, “Don’t worry, don’t worry, he is loyal, he won’t abandon us. Worst case, we will find a few more treasures and give him a few.”

“Where are there any treasures?” Ming Jue Zi looked around and said dispiritedly. “This place is dark, and I doubt we are even in the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. We’ve been searching around for so

long and still haven't found the exit!"

That day, the black smoke yao had made a discovery and came excitedly to find them. They had gone in search following the clues, and hadn't expected to fall into a maze that was pitch black. The maze was dark and didn't have anything. However, the paths were complex and intercrossed like a spider web. They had been searching for the exit for the past few days but hadn't made any progress.

"We are below the Mo Skill Steles, is there another place here except the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?" Cang Ze's expression was puzzled.

"Who knows!" the orange-haired yao said carelessly. "That old man has been dead for so many years!"

"Do not be disrespectful to Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming!" A Wen glared at the orange-haired yao. "We have benefited from him these past days! If not for the grandmaster, where would these mo skill steles come from!"

The orange-haired yao was not angry and muttered, "I didn't say that he wasn't good, but if he is a good person, he should be good to the end. He engraved the mo skill steles, and he should give us some treasures as well. Then he would be a good person! A very good person! Oh, don't worry, I won't take them all."

The other people were used to the orange-haired yao's casual and thoughtless words. Everyone laughed.

The black smoke yao's brow was tightly furrowed. Ever since they had dropped into this pitch black maze, he had been thinking of ways to get out. It was because of him that everyone had ended up in this predicament. Even though no one blamed him, he could not forgive himself.

Fortunately, there weren't any dangers in the maze so they were not very nervous.

Ever since they entered the maze, the black smoke yao had been pondering why there would be a maze under the mo skill steles. He believed that a person like Shi Zi Ming would have his own reasons for doing every single thing.

This maze would definitely have another purpose. If that was the case, it should have an exit.

His spirit consciousness spread out as he carefully searched the surroundings. In such a dark environment, the consciousness was much more useful than the eyes. Suddenly, his consciousness swept a rock and he abruptly stopped moving. "Wait!"

Everyone stopped warily.

"What is it?" Nan Yue asked.

"We passed by this rock yesterday!" The black smoke yao crouched down and picked up a rock by his foot. His tone was

unusually certain. “It is this one, I remember it clearly!”

“Have we been going in circles all this time?” Nan Yue was slightly shocked.

“Very possible.” The black smoke yao raised his head to look up. “We might just be wandering in circles below the mo skill steles.”

Then he said to himself, “So this is a recursive maze. The path we pick each time is different but we are still going in circles. All paths lead to one, oh, I understand”

He suddenly moved his gaze and said to the orange-haired yao. “Big Orange, hit the ground a few times!”

The orange haired yao immediately became energized. He had been suffocated these past few days. He rolled up his sleeves. “No problem! How big of a hole? How deep? I will show you guys a new yao art that I comprehended recently. It is the best at making holes. If you want a circle, I won’t give you a square. If you want three zhang, I won’t make it five zhang. Ooh, do you want something slightly more difficult? Flower shape? Too common! Or maybe a portrait?”

Nan Yue and the others were speechless.

But A Wen was excited. “Such a powerful yao art? How about we compete? I recently comprehended some things as well.”

The orange-haired yao was excited and hurriedly ran in front of A Wen. “Alright, let’s compete! Let’s make a portrait!”

“Alright!” A Wen was excited as well.

“Five zhang deep is good.” But everyone disregarded the black smoke yao’s weak voice. Everyone’s attentions were put on these two that were going to make portraits.

Nothing more had to be said about A Wen’s talent. The orange-haired yao appeared absent-minded and slightly odd, but his talent in the yao arts was usually unexpected. He could always make some strange and weird yao arts.

“Who do you think will win?” Ming Jue Zi was full of interest.

Nan Yue said, “A Wen.”

Cang Ze hesitated and said, “Big Orange!”

Ming Jue Zi looked at the black smoke yao. The black smoke yao said helplessly, “Big Orange.”

Ming Jue Zi snickered. “I favor A Wen, two on two!”

The orange-haired yao postured as though he was an expert, hand palm up, he beckoned at A Wen. “Young man, I will not go easy on you! However, Young man, your life will become more

complete after losing to this loyal orange-haired yao.”

A Wen stared back, not backing down. “Come on! Red haired monster, let me show you what the first expert of Guard Camp is like!”

Looking at Zuo Mo’s ghostly figure and indifferent expression, everyone felt danger that could not be pushed away. Every one of them had grave expressions. Those present were all experts and naturally could see the change in Zuo Mo.

Princess Xia’s lips were tightly pressed together and her expression changed slightly. Xiao Mo Ge in the distance seemed to have changed into a completely new person that she felt extremely unfamiliar with.

However, she quickly suppressed the stray thoughts in her mind. Xiao Mo Ge was the crucial part of the entire plan. His change would affect the plan hugely. Up until now, Xiao Mo Ge had not used the Star Luring Mo Bead in his hand, and he was moving in ways that people did not understand.

Princess Xia suddenly had a realization, Xiao Mo Ge had found the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion!

Once this thought appeared, her expression became ashen!

Her previous plan had been to create an illusion that the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was about to appear in order to lure the xiuzhe out. She had never thought the act would become truth! Once the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion appeared, the entire plan would be full of flaws. The morale of the xiuzhe would be at their highest and their counter-attack would be unusually fierce. On the opposite side, the mo experts would be targeting the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion so they would each have their own plans. The alliance would fall apart.

Under such circumstances, the plan that had been flawless would become a mess!

At that time, this place would become a melee battle. Melee battles were the most advantageous for the xiuzhe!

What worried her even more was Xiao Mo Ge who would be at the center of the melee battle would be placed in the most dangerous situation.

Her expression quickly recovered and she said indifferently, “The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion is about to open. The plan has changed. Everyone, charge in, and keep the xiuzhe out!”

Princess Xia’s words caused everyone to shake. They looked in disbelief at Princess Xia. Their attention had been on Xiao Mo Ge’s transformation. While they had felt that his actions were slightly strange, no one had connected them to the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.

Princess Xia's gaze flashed across the pairs of eyes that had started to burn. She combed her hair and smiled, "Everyone, be careful of Xiao Mo Ge's safety. If those xiuzhe want to act against Xiao Mo Ge because they are unable to get the treasures, they might ruin this for all of us and then we won't have anything. He is still useful now, and at such an important time, I hope that the elders present will not hold anything back."

Everyone's gazes met and then moved away.

Yu Shuang stood up and said with a smile, "We need to show something to these xiuzhe. Otherwise, they will think that there are none capable among us mo. They dare to come and go as they wish, do they think this is their backyard?"

The other people also rose.

Chang Yuan Hao and Yu Shuang walked together. The guards led by Xia protected Princess Xin and the guards led by Zhu Ke protected Princess Wan. Qi Diao Yu was moving by himself

In a flash, the alliance fell apart and each camp was clearly divided.

"You have intentions about him? The middle-aged attendant beside Princess Xia suddenly spoke.

Princess Xia glanced at her and asked back, "What do you feel?"

“Then why are you helping him?” The middle-aged attendant stared at Princess Xia and said coldly, “You know very well that if you enter this conflict, you will have nothing to do with him anymore!”

Princess Xia smiled slyly. “Don’t you feel that it is to our advantage to direct their attention towards Xiao Mo Ge?”

The middle-aged attendant’s expression eased slightly. She said coldly, “Don’t do anything stupid.”

Princess Xia seemed to not hear it. She raised her head to look at Xiao Mo Ge that was reaching towards a stone stele and suddenly said, “You just couldn’t wait.”

The middle-aged attendant’s expression froze.

The stele in front of him was the last mo skill stele that had a handprint.

The half-transparent thin threads in his vision were as bright as rays of light. Ripples moved along these criss-crossing lines like waves against the shore that came from all directions towards this stone stele.

The moment that Zuo Mo’s palm came into contact with this stele, a strong vibration pulsed from the stone stele. Even the

ground under his feet seemed to be violently shaking. There seemed to be an ancient being which was suppressed here that seemed to shift.

Zuo Mo's expression was cold and indifferent, void of all expression.

In response to the enormous tremors that came from the stone stele, the muscles on Zuo Mo's plan were quickly vibration at an astounding rate.

At this moment, all light stopped at the simultaneously.

But in the next second, the lights that had paused seemed to be startled away and then redirected towards the stele from all directions!

Boom!

A ray of white light suddenly came out of the stone stele. Like a ruler-straight sword of light, it pierced the sky and entered the void.

The white light was like a burning flame that moved towards all directions. In a flash, all of the mo skill steles released a fierce white light.

The ground was trembling fiercely, all of Great Peace City was trembling!

Great fissures started to appear on the ground around the stele forest. Then the stele forest started to slowly rise.

Boom boom boom!

The stele forest that was covered in rays of light slowly rose. There seemed to be an enormous beast underneath it that was pushing it up.

That blinding ray of white light was like a rope that was pulling the stele forest up!

And beside that ray of light, a cold and indifferent figure gazed down at the ground under the white light.

Chapter 621 - One Sword Strike From Lin Qian!

“Start!”

“Start!”

A Wen and the orange haired yao shouted at the same time and moved simultaneously.

A Wen’s eyes were widened, the black plumes on his armor stood on end and vibrated in unison. He was slightly crouched, his arms pushed out as though he was about to hug someone, as he breathed and suddenly pushed down.

The ground under his feet soundlessly sank. A deep hole with smooth walls was formed. It was as though there was a diagram on the ground made with a tool, the outline was clear and sharp.

The orange haired yao shouted strangely. Lightning flashed across his body and crackled. His orange hair exploded into a poof. It was hilarious to watch because he was still shaking and swaying his head.

The ground underneath him was crumbling and disappearing at a visible rate underneath his feet. The hole’s outline traced out a picture; a picture of woman appeared in front of everyone.

Nan Yue and the others were stunned. They all had admiration in their eyes. These two were clearly a level above the rest of them.

These were two freaks!

When A Wen had acted, they hadn't detected one vibration at all. The outline was so clear, the lines looked as sharp as if cut by a blade. It showed just how stunning A Wen's control of power was.

They found that they understood even less about the orange haired yao's yao art. It had actually caused the dirt to crumble from the inside. Even though it was lightning, it was corrosive and uncanny.

"Hey, youth, you aren't too bad!" The orange haired yao was slightly shocked.

"Hmph! Next time, I will defeat you!" A Wen said, undaunted.

Under the shocked gazes of everyone else, the two started to compete fiercely again. Each working on their portrait.

"Hm, isn't this A Gui? Young person, so you have been secretly pining for A Gui?" The orange haired yao pointed at the portrait under A Wen's feet as he shouted.

"Idiot! You need to call her A Gui Daren!" A Wen glared angrily and then snorted coldly. "A Gui Daren's beauty isn't something that a common person like you can understand!"

“A Gui is a good girl, but not a beauty.” The orange haired yao shook his head and said smugly, “What I drew is a beauty!”

A Wen stared for a long time at the drawing under the orange haired yao’s feet. His expression suddenly became slightly strange as he muttered, “Why does your portrait seem a bit like Old Black”

The black smoke yao’s body trembled and then he charged over.

The orange haired yao had a smug expression. “Haha, young person, you are right! In the past, Old Black frequently cross dressed in the yao art house, and bewitched many men”

The black smoke yao’s eye twitched continuously. What had happened in the past was something he was unwilling to mention. This damned person! He was on the edge of losing his temper. The other people retreated perceptively and looked sympathetically at the black smoke yao.

Just as the black smoke yao was going to explode, there were violent tremors from the ground. Almost everyone was unable to stay standing up.

“Whoa whoa whoa! Did we dig through the maze?” The orange haired yao had an excited expression.

“Idiot!” The other people whose expressions had changed

couldn't help but curse at him simultaneously.

The shaking of the ground increased in intensity. A great noise came from deep within the ground like an ancient beast that was waking up from its slumber.

“Damn it! The ground is rising up!” The black smoke yao's expression changed dramatically.

Everyone's expressions abruptly changed!

————

With the mo appearing, Lin Qian no longer doubt that the stunning scene in front of him was a trap! That ray of light that shot straight into the sky and the vibrations that came with it was enough to show the terrifying power it contained. This power was so strong that even Lin Qian felt his heart tremble slightly. In this moment, he felt some respect for Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming who he had never met before.

In a blink, his gaze became clear again and that ripple in his mind disappeared without a trace. He did not think further on who Xiao Mo Ge was. At this moment, that was not important!

Crack!

The air around him suddenly exploded. The dense sword essence spread into the surroundings without any more concealment! In

this moment, he was like a treasure sword that was drawn from its sheathe; no longer concealed its sharp edge!

Around him, every person showed excitement as their fighting spirit rose. The sword essences gave off different colors of light. Each person was like a sword wanting to drink the blood of their enemies!

“Does everyone remember the plan?” Lin Qian looked around and asked.

“Yes!” All of them were solemn.

“This mission is related to the glory and decline of our Kun Lun. We may break our bones and our bodies, but we will not retreat!” Lin Qian’s expression was determined. No one could look directly at his burning eyes. He slowly drew out his flying sword.

“Will not retreat!” The group responded in unison with serious expressions. Fanatic flames flashed through their eyes as their flying swords appeared in their hands.

Lin Qian turned around and suddenly raised the flying sword in his hand. He shouted, “For Kun Lun!”

All of his ling power suddenly boiled and his presence rose to a peak. In the night, his sword essence was like a tangible burning flame. Within the darkness, in this land of the mo, he displayed his power without any fear.

Lin Qian's fighting spirit and enthusiasm infected every Kun Lun sword xiu. The fiery passion they felt caused their ling power to boil. All of their terror and timidity disappeared. Fighting spirit burned every inch of their skin and they reflexively shook.

At this moment, for Kun Lun, even if they were to die, they would not frown one bit.

They raised their flying swords in unison and shouted, "For Kun Lun!"

Before the sound dissipated, Lin Qian flew into the sky first. He turned into a sword light that tore the night sky as he shot towards the stele forest that was rising up!

The other people saw this and moved without hesitation!

In this moment, the sword howls were like a tide and the lights were like rain!

The force that the pillar of light gave off as it rose disturbed the air. The turbulence caused Zuo Mo's clothing to flap in the wind.

He looked down.

He saw the mo experts that were flying over, and the blinding sword lights. He saw the experts from the other sects that had sneaked into the city. That pair of emotionless eyes looked indifferently at all of this.

His mo skill had been channeled to an extreme, while his consciousness and ling power were still streaming deep into his body.

This icy world became increasingly clear in front of him.

The rest of the stele forest was continuously rising and the spot he was standing in had started to sink.

The stele in front of him was the entrance to the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.

“Treasure Pavilion’s entrance!”

Someone shouted and this caused a ruckus. The area that was sinking was very small and not even two zhang in radius.

Watching as Zuo Mo slowly sank down, the experts that were rushing forwards felt even more urgent. Even the sword lights from Kun Lun sped up and the howl from the swords increased in volume.

“Take control of the entrance!” Yu Shuang shouted.

The other mo hesitated slightly and then made their decision. They gritted their teeth and leapt at the incoming sword lights.

If Kun Lun gained control of the entrance, no one would be able to enter.

The disciples of the other three great sects moved at the same time, but their presence was lacking compared to Kun Lun. Almost all the mo targeted Kun Lun.

————

Facing the mo that was charging at him, Lin Qian was fearless. With a clear hum, the sword light grew. The high pitched howl suddenly became low and deep. Like a meteor crashing down from the sky, it smashed towards its enemies.

“Protect Eldest Shixiong!”

The sword xiu that had been following behind Lin Qian suddenly increased in speed. Like a flower blooming, they drew out elegant curves as they moved to intercept the other mo experts.

They did not pay any attention to the enemy in front of Lin Qian.

Everyone had absolute confidence in Eldest Shixiong.

The person in front of Lin Qian was Yu Shuang.

Yu Shuang's pupils contracted into pinpoints. The other did not have any room to retreat, and his sword essence was determined. He shouted, "Come!"

His body was immediately covered in green mo matrixes. The green mo matrixes were unusually beautiful, the lines thin and complex. The entire mo matrix looked like a blooming green flower.

With Yu Shuang as the center, the complex and fine blue flower matrix spread into the surroundings. Bright pink roses bloomed from these green matrixes and it was beautiful to see.

This was Yu Shuang's [Rose Greenery Domain]!

Suddenly, all the roses shook slightly. The petals crumbled soundlessly. In a moment, the pink roses around Yu Shuang turned into a sea of flower petals.

The pink rose petals were torn into pieces and slowly became green at a visible rate.

Woosh!

The green rose petal pieces seemed to be caught in a wind. It turned into a green flower wind that headed towards Lin Qian.

The mo that noticed this all felt their hearts shake.

Yu Shuang's first move was his famed killing move, [Green Flower Rain]!

There was a strange energy field between every green flower petal. The innumerable flowers that appeared in the flurry of petals was the result of the countless fields overlapping on each other. It formed a terrifyingly powerful bog. Once one was trapped inside it, even the strongest power would be restrained by the energy fields. It was like being trapped in a bog. The person would move slower and slower until they were unable to move.

Countless numbers of people had fallen to the [Green Flower Rain].

As Yu Shuang's power increased, and his fame spread, it was rare for people to see this Green Flower Rain.

So when the mo saw Yu Shuang's [Green Flower Rain], they became excited. The unique and strange power of [Green Flower Rain] was the bane of the sharp sword essences.

They seemed to see this sword xiu being tangled up like an insect in a spider web!

The fighting spirit in Lin Qian's eyes heated up.

The flying sword in his hand seemed to feel his excitement and uncontrollably hummed to respond to its master.

The flying sword in Lin Qian's hand was not an ordinary one. It was the famed sword, Tai'a. The body of the sword was like a clear spring and exceptionally nimble.

Facing the rain of green flowers coming at him, a burning light lit up at the tip of Tai'a. It seemed to be a spark created by Tai'a scraping against the air. What was strange was that the sword did not turn red, but became even clearer and transparent as though it was made of ice.

Lin Qian's left eye was as red as fire, and his right eyes as blue as ice.

Hiss!

Like a sharp blade slicing through cotton cloth.

The resilient and sticky Green Flower Rain was cleaved apart by this single sword blow!

Yu Shuang gave a muffled grunt. His eyes were filled with shock and fear. A thread of blood slipped from the corner of his mouth.

One move! He was defeated in one move by Lin Qian!

Who was this person?

His one strike shook all of the Great Peace City!

Zuo Mo was unaffected, as he slowly sunk into the ground looking indifferently at Lin Qian's stunning blow.

Chapter 622 - Anti Dragon Claw

Lin Qian's single sword strike had intimidated the entire battlefield!

Yu Shuang was ranked second on the Great Peace Mo Ranking. In Hundred Savage Realm, he was a top-ranked expert but he was wounded by a single blow.

Lin Qian was still midair as he held Tai'a. The light at the tip of Tai'a was as bright as the sun. There wasn't any of his usual gentleness. His red and blue eyes were filled with pride, arrogance, and disdain as he slowly glanced over everyone.

His movements were extremely slow but it held a suffocating pressure. No one dared to meet his gaze.

The entire battlefield was silent.

The mo of Great Peace city lost their nerve after seeing Lin Qian's sword strike.

All of the Kun Lun disciples looked with heated gazes at Eldest Shixiong, who in turn was looking down at all present. They felt excited and wanted to roar.

Kun Lun!

We are Kun Lun!

Eldest Shixiong's peerless stature as though he ruled the world was deeply imprinted in their minds.

"I have not asked for Sir's name?" Chang Yuan Hao's voice broke the silence.

Everyone finally woke up from their shock and looked at this youth holding the sword. Even the disciples of the other three sects had ashen complexions as they looked at Lin Qian who was like a god of the sword in the air.

Floating in the air, Lin Qian did not seem to hear this. He descended step by step with his sword drawn, walking as though there were invisible stairs under his feet. He was at ease but no one dared to block him.

Suddenly, three figures appeared before Lin Qian and stopped him in his steps.

Zhu Ke, Xia, and the middle-aged attendant.

"Ah, these old bones of mine are going to get damaged today!" Zhu Ke said to himself smilingly.

Xia did not say a word but the long spear in his hand suddenly flicked up!

The middle-aged attendant looked at Lin Qian with a dark face.

Lin Qian did not pause. He walked down from the sky as though he didn't see the three at all.

As Zuo Mo's figure slowly sank into the ground, the sound outside was blocked off.

He entered a new world.

Half-transparent threads crossed in the air. Other than these threads, there was nothing else in the surroundings. Some of the threads formed a path that seemed to be made out of spider-webs Zuo Mo's field of vision. Zuo Mo advanced following the path.

With every step, a mo matrix would appear out of the emptiness and support his foot.

The spider-web path spread into the distance and it was possible to see thin threads along the way.

Zuo Mo noticed these thin threads seemed to be gathering in one direction and the same direction as the spider-web path.

As he moved forward, this became even more evident.

Even now, Zuo Mo did not know what these thin threads were, and why he could only see them in this state.

The thin threads increased in density.

Zuo Mo suddenly stopped in his steps. He lifted his head. The scene in front of him caused a ripple even in his present state of mind.

A claw was tangled up by countless threads in the air.

This claw was enormous. It was like a high mountain peak reaching into the clouds. Even looking from a distance, he could feel its peerless enormity!

In front of this enormous claw, Zuo Mo was as minuscule as an ant.

But what truly had caused a stir in Zuo Mo's mind was not the enormity of this enormous claw but that he had seen this enormous claw before!

“Anti Dragon Claw!”

“This is impossible!”

Wei and Pu Yao's exclamations sounded at the same time.

Zuo Mo had seen this dragon claw before. When Wei he had disguised himself as his previous master he held a claw that was identical to this, except it was smaller then.

“The Anti Dragon Claw had landed in Shi Zi Ming’s possession...” Pu Yao murmured. He looked dazedly at the mountainous Anti Dragon Claw and a glimmer of tears appeared in his eye.

Many distant scene appeared in front of him. That peerless beautiful face that had changed his entire life was so clear. Even the years which could corrode anything didn’t seem to have left any mark on it.

Wei was silent, his face sorrowful and reminiscing.

Zuo Mo suddenly stepped towards the Anti Dragon Claw.

“Stop! Quick, stop!”

“Don’t go near it!”

Pu Yao and Wei were frightened by Zuo Mo’s action. Their expressions changed and they warned him.

But Zuo Mo seemed to be possessed and didn’t hear their shouts. His steps did not falter at all as he continued to walk towards the mountainous Anti Dragon Claw.

Boom... .. Boom... .. Boom... ..

The rhythmic beating grew clearer until it shook people's minds. As Zuo Mo went closer, the power of the beating increased.

The source was the Anti Dragon Claw. It seemed to have a heart that was continuously beating.

When Zuo Mo walked under the Anti Dragon Claw and raised his head, he truly felt the colossal nature of it. That peerless pressure caused his mind to waver.

But Zuo Mo's eyes were tranquil, cold and indifferent.

It was alive.

When Zuo Mo's hand touched the Anti Dragon Claw, he could clearly feel the terrifying power and strong vitality contained underneath the scales harder than metal, as well as deep unwillingness!

"Don't move it, it is not something you can use now!" Pu Yao's voice was so urgent it changed in pitch.

Zuo Mo did not seem to hear Pu Yao. The half-transparent threads in his vision seemed fragile but securely restrained the Anti Dragon Claw so that it was unable to move at all.

Wei said rapidly, “The Anti Dragon Claw is one of the ten celestial mo weapons, it is not something that you can subdue now. Only marshals are able to subdue them. Master had been a marshal and almost lost her life when subduing this!”

The Anti Dragon Claw seemed to hear Pu Yao and Wei’s words. Zuo Mo could feel the claw laughing at him for reaching far beyond his limits. Its heart was beating even more heavily. Vast power spread from it and the thick strands were unable to block off all of it.

he thin threads that reached into the dark void would shake with every pulse, every beat. This power would reach into distant places. However, no matter how strong the Anti Dragon Claw was, it could not break free of the tens of thousands of slender threads.

Zuo Mo’s expression did not change at all.

His upraised face was cold and indifferent, and his eyes were icy.

His gaze landed on a part of the Anti Dragon Claw. Within his vision, that was the place where there was the most threads.

He suddenly flew up and gazed at the layers of thin threads. He suddenly reached out and pushed into this ball of thin threads.

Pu Yao and Wei’s faces became ashen!

Suddenly, the Anti Dragon Claw stopped beating. The entire space sank into a silence. All vibrations, all sound, even the light on the thin strands stopped moving.

A moment later, the entire space started to shake violently.

Boom boom boom!

All of the thin threads were violently trembling, every single thread!

In this instant, even the Anti Dragon Claw gave off a nervous vibration!

Suddenly, a legend that Pu Yao had almost forgotten flashed through his mind. A disbelieving look suddenly came out of his eyes as he blurted, “This is”

Boooom!

The space started to crumble.

————

Lin Qian’s hair was disarrayed and the light of the Tai’a sword in his hand was dim.

The three experts had worked together to successfully stop his advance. All three of the experts were unfathomable in their power. They were not famous, but they were the strongest within their respective families.

“You should be proud to be able to force the three of us together.” Zhu Ke’s tone carried a thread of admiration. Before today, he had never thought that he would work with the two beside him to attack a young sword xiu that was in his twenties.

It had been more than a decade since he had fought, much less with the other two by his side.

Such a great genius, even he had never seen one like this before.

Kun Lun, as expected of Kun Lun!

So terrifying!

Xia did not speak but his upraised long spear didn’t dare to move away from Lin Qian.

The most shocked among them was the middle-aged attendant. Her expression changed constantly and she was shocked. Her mother had served Shi Zi Ming and she had been very knowledgeable from a very young age. After working hard on her cultivation in these years, she had reached the cusp of shen power. She was also just one step away from marshal level.

Even so, she had to work together with other people to subdue this Kun Lun youth.

He really was terrifying!

The other sword xiu were also entangled up. Qi Diao Yu and the others were lacking compared to Lin Qian, but they were evenly matched to the other Kun Lun disciples.

The fighting between the two was extremely intense.

The other three sect disciples also were fighting hard. The mo were on home territory and they had the advantage of numbers. At this time, they were fighting in a fury, and they did not care about fatalities.

There were xiuzhe constantly dying and the situation was becoming increasingly disadvantageous towards them.

————

Lin Qian appeared disheveled, but his left eye that was completely red became even more heated as his blue eye became even colder. His usually gentle smile was as sharp as a sword edge.

He had predicted how difficult this trip to the Great Peace was but he had not expected that he would encounter three opponents that were this powerful.

These three people were extremely strong.

The old man's mo physique was also eerie and hard to predict. Even Lin Qian did not recognize it. [Soul Mo Lure] was one of the top mo skills among the mo and supposedly had been passed down from the ancient times.

He was even more shocked by the male in heavy armor. That was gravestone armor!

The middle-aged female had a strange power, and Lin Qian even detected a thread of shen power from her.

These three, any one of them, should be a top expert in the world.

He was meeting three at once!

Fighting three against one!

Lin Qian's fighting spirit burned. He did not have any timidity or fear. The Tai'a sword in his hand seemed to come alive again.

He suddenly raised the Tai'a sword!

The blue Tai'a sword was like a sword of ice as a tiny light lit up at its tip.,

Holding the Tai'a sword, Lin Qian drew with the sword in the air.

The light of the sword drew out streaks of light in the air. They seemed to be lines drawn on paper and did not dissipate.

With every stroke of the Tai'a sword, a roar of thunder would sound.

The three people facing him changed expressions. They recognized the power. All the power in the surroundings were vibrating uncontrollably with the strokes of the Tai'a sword!

They were just about to attack when their bodies froze. They abruptly turned around to look at the stele forest behind them!

In this moment, their faces were filled with shock.

Chapter 623 - The Dragon Claw Coming Into The World

“Is there really a Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” the subordinate asked curiously.

“Of course,” Bu Heng replied without turning his head. He gazed at the ray of light that reached into the sky and was slightly absent-minded as he thought of other matters.

“Haha! Brother Bu is peerless in your intelligence and has set up a gigantic trap. This little brother has never respected a person but has to say I respect Brother Bu!” The one who spoke was a large man that looked to be in his forties. He had a pair of bright eyes.

“Brother Ming is too complimentary.” Bu Heng bowed slightly and said with a smile, “If it wasn’t for Brother Ming, this one would not dare to act so dangerously.”

“Going with the flow, Brother Bu is a true genius!” Ming Hui clapped his hand and praised, “You have such an elite battalion. If you can take this jie, the power of the Yaksha clan will increase exponentially! The Yaksha clan’s prosperity is in sight.”

“I do not think so.” A beautiful female next to Ming Hui couldn’t resist smiling coldly and said, “The world respects the authority of Great Peace. We have already broken unspoken rules by preparing to attack them. If Bu Daren leads the Yaksha clan in taking this territory, people will most likely come to attack you!”

Ming Hui hurriedly said in apology, “Brother Bu, please forgive. This one has spoiled Sister very much. Do not keep her nonsense on your mind.”

Bu Heng shook his head. “Brother Ming does not have to be so. Miss Yu Wei is right.” He suddenly raised his head and gazed at Great Peace City in the distance. He said lightly, “However, how can there be a perfect solution in such troubled times? If one does not advance and retreats, they will die without a fight.”

Ming Yu Wei was startled when Bu Heng said such harsh words in such a light tone.

“If one does not want their clan to have to submit to others, then one needs to have a place of their own. My Green Yaksha clan has roamed for too long, the clanspeople have a hard life, and the branch families mostly live as marauders, living off banditry. Bu’s wish is to conquer a place for my clan to rest. These are troubled times, but even if this was a peaceful time, Bu might still fight.”

Ming Yu Wei was stunned by the speech while Ming Hui showed admiration. He said with a laugh, “Brother Bu’s words are great. A man should be like this in life! However, in my opinion, there is nothing wrong in raiding. It is an exciting life!”

Bu Heng’s subordinates looked with respectful and reverent expressions at Bu Heng from behind him.

“This little brother can only envy the freedom of Brother Ming.

However, there is nothing to be done about ties to the family. As for the future attacks that Miss Yu Wei speaks about, it is possible, but there is nothing to worry about in the short-term,” Bu Heng said confidently. “The major factions that are close to Great Peace are too busy fighting against the xiuzhe now and do not have attention to spare. If Brother Ming cleans up all the traces, and not leave anything behind, no one can find an excuse to attack us. Also, if I have a buffer time, I will definitely be able to create an even stronger battalion!”

The last words were steely and strong confidence was evident.

“This little sister has worried too much! Brother Bu, please forgive my rudeness just now!” Ming Yu Wei suddenly bowed with a serious expression.

Bu Heng hurriedly returned the bow. “Miss Yu Wei is too polite.”

“Brother Bu seems to be very familiar with the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, can you tell us more,” Ming Hui said. “I only know that there is a stone stele within it.”

Bu Heng said gravely, “I do not know much. It was just coincidence that I learned some things. There are three treasures in the Great Peace Treasure pavilion. I know of one of the others but not of the last.”

“What is the other treasure?” Ming Hui was very curious.

Bu Heng slowly said, “Anti Dragon Claw!”

Ming Hui and his sister’s expression changed dramatically. Ming Hui exclaimed, “Sky mo weapon Anti Dragon Claw! Impossible!”

A hint of desire flashed across Bu Heng’s eyes but it quickly cleared up. “It really is one of the ten great sky mo weapons, the Anti Dragon Claw. I was also very surprised when I learned this. Brother Ming, you must know of the history of the Anti Dragon Claw. While I do not know how Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming obtained it, but since it was hidden for so many years, it seems that even the Grandmaster had been afraid of the inauspicious history of the weapon.”

Ming Hui recovered from his shock and said when he heard this, “Inauspiciousness? If a mo weapon is auspicious, is it even a mo weapon? Something used to kill, it is best for it to be inauspicious!”

His gaze was burning hot. “I am even more curious about the last treasure!”

“No matter what, it is Brother Ming’s.” Bu Heng’s expression was normal. “However, Brother Ming, do not let any of them escape.”

“Ha, Brother Bu, don’t worry. My Ming Bandits have a nasty reputation but we do not break our word.” Ming Hui laughed viciously and said, “Those young masters are the top notch fat sheep! As to the three princesses, they can be maids for Sister.”

“Brother Ming needs to be careful. The three princesses all have experts with them,” Bu Heng reminded.

“Brother Bu, many thanks for the reminder!” Ming Hui said laughingly, “Against an army, the experts are just so. Ha, it wasn’t a waste to come, we will definitely make a profit!”

Suddenly, Ming Yu Wei’s gaze moved and her expression changed slightly. She pointed at Great Peace City in the distance and shouted in shock, “Look!”

Everyone followed her finger and looked.

Their expressions all changed!

The pillar of light that connected the earth to the sky suddenly disappeared.

At this time, the stele forest was pulled up hundreds of zhang from the ground. Looking from afar, they were like a lonely pillar of stone, but nearby, people unconsciously stopped breathing when they looked at them.

The sides of the stone pillar were smooth as though they had been cut and polished. The black material was as warm as jade. The area taken over by the stele forest was over hundreds of mu and when they were all pulled up, the thick stone pillar covered

with exquisite mo matrixes was a wondrous sight!

The black sea outside Great Peace had been restless starting when the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion had come out of the ground, and wailed like ghosts.

Yet at this moment, the sea quieted.

All of Great Peace City sank into a strange silence.

Crack!

A stone stele dropped from above the stone pillars and shattered when it hit the ground.

This was

Everyone had shocked expressions and a strong feeling, it was coming!

Crack! Crack

The stone steles continuously fell down.

Following that was a string of cracks. Countless lines quickly spread across the thick black pillar.

In a blink, the cracks covered all of the stone pillar.

The sudden changed shocked everyone. They unconsciously stopped fighting and looked at the stone pillar that was about to transform.

Woosh!

It was not a loud sound but it was like a signal. The stone pillar covered in cracks began crumbling apart. Fragments of various sizes came down like a rockslide.

The people close by paled and hurriedly flew into the air to retreat.

As they flew and looked back, their pupils contracted. They couldn't help but stop breathing.

Oh, Heavens!

Above that pile of rock, an enormous dragon claw that was hundreds of zhang large was floating in the air.

The Anti Dragon Claw that was seeing the light of day again seemed unusually excited and the five digits lightly tensed.

Boom!

A vast vicious energy suddenly ripped into the surroundings like a violent tide!

“Careful!”

Zhu Ke and the other two disengaged from Lin Qian and appeared immediately in front of their respective princesses.

Boom!

Light lit up on the bodies of the three as they managed to stop the vicious energy that reached them. Every one of them had a serious expression. The guards around them were blown away by the violent wave of energy like dried grass in the wind.

Lin Qian's expression was shocked as the Tai'a sword was braced in front of him. When the vicious energy swept past, the Tai'a sword hummed and shook violently!

Qi Diao Yu, Chang Yuan Hao, and the others managed to withstand this vicious energy.

But those that were weaker were wounded if they tried to resist.

After the wave passed, it was completely silent and everyone had ashen faces. This item was so vicious it was shocking. Just its energy was so powerful. How terrifying would it be if it was used at full power?

At this time, the ones that were still standing were either experts from Great Peace City or from the four major sects. But when these experts raised their heads to look at the enormous dragon claw, their minds wavered.

“Anti Dragon Claw!”

Someone shouted and everyone shook. Even Lin Qian couldn't help the expression of shock that appeared on his face. As the eldest disciple of Kun Lun, he naturally knew of this name.

“Anti Dragon Claw” Zhu Ke's gaze became unfocused for a quick moment before he quickly recovered. However, the heat in his eyes could not be disguised.

The other people also had burning gazes.

Anti Dragon Claw, one of the ten great sky mo weapons!

No wonder it was so powerful and vicious!

Sky mo weapon, the strongest mo weapons. Every sky mo weapon was a legend. Of the ten great sky mo weapons, there were only three whose locations were known and the people who possessed them were the strongest in the mo realm.

It was the mo weapon that everyone mo dreamed of!

Wait!

That was

Everyone's gazes focused and landed on the shadow cast by the lower half of the Anti Dragon Claw.

It was Xiao Mo Ge that had just went underground!

One of his hands was touching the Anti Dragon Claw. His eyes were closed as he silently floated in the air. Compared to the enormous size of the Anti Dragon Claw, Xiao Mo Ge was as small as an ant. Adding on that he was in the shadow of the Anti Dragon Claw, no one had initially noticed him.

But when people noticed his existence, their expressions changed.

He was

Lin Qian's expression changed slightly. Even he had felt pressured by the power of that vicious energy but Xiao Mo Ge hadn't reacted at all.

He was trying to claim the Anti Dragon Claw!

When this thought flashed through Lin Qian's mind, the next

thought was –stop him!

He still did not remember who Xiao Mo Ge was but his intuition told him this was someone dangerous!

Lin Qian's murderousness was burning but he did not act. He was searching for the stone stele of legend. He did not understand why he felt such strong murderousness towards Xiao Mo Ge but at this moment, the stone stele was more important!

With the stone stele, Kun Lun would find the key to cultivating shen power!

His gaze suddenly focused.

There!

In the pile of stones under the Anti Dragon Claw, there was a small section of a grey and nondescript stone stele showing.

Without hesitation, Lin Qian shot at that stele like lightning.

Also at this time, Zuo Mo's tightly closed eyes opened. That pair of indifferent and icy eyes reflected everything. He was like a god in the air coldly gazing down at the figure moving so fast it was near impossible to spot.

Chapter 624 - Attack!

The other people present might not have spotted Lin Qian's charge, but Zhu Ke and the two others who had fought against him had been keeping an eye on him.

They were extremely wary of Lin Qian!

When Lin Qian moved, the three moved in tandem.

Murderousness filled their minds. Previously, the situation had been unclear and they had other considerations. Now with the Anti Dragon Claw in the air, the mo skill stele below, the treasure pavilion reappearing, they had no other considerations. Their murderousness could not be suppressed!

Midair, light flowed through the red and blue eyes. His long hair danced in the wind. Lin Qian knew that this was the time when victory was to be decided. He suddenly shouted, "Kun Lun!"

"Kun Lun!"

The sword xiu of Kun Lun responded. Almost at the same time, they threw their flying swords at Lin Qian.

Light rose in the air as the swords flew across the sky.

The seven flying swords had seven different sword essences. Cool

and dim, or blinding and bright, or pressuring, or heavy, they were all from Kun Lun. While they were different, they were all passed over to Lin Qian at the same moment the three people moved, the seven sword lights flashed and had gathered in front of Lin Qian.

At some time, Lin Qian had turned around and faced the three people. His expression was grave, his right eye cold as ice, his left burning as fire. The seven sword essences criss-crossed in front of him and formed a seven colored wheel.

His upraised Tai'a sword tip was the center where the seven swords spun.

A dot of light suddenly was emitted from the sword tip!

“Kill!”

A sound came from Lin Qian's tongue. The air in front of him seemed to be heavily impacted and exploded!

The seven swords revolved in counter-clockwise direction like a flower blooming. The seven colored wheel of light expanded to about ten mu in size in a flash. It was like an enormous net that came crashing down on the trio.

Inside the sword wheel, sword essence roiled like the enormous maw of a gaping beast about to consume the people.

Zhu Ke's expression changed slightly as he shouted, “You want to

die!”

The middle-aged attendant’s gaze was cold and she was clearly angry. Xia’s right leg braced against the ground, the long spear raised as his presence increased continuously.

Pew pew!

Two water droplets shot through the chest of a Kun Lun sword xiu and created two blooms of blood. The pupils of this Kun Lun sword xiu suddenly expanded as he dropped down.

Bam, he fell onto the ground like a block of wood. On the face covered by the billowing dust, a slightly difficult smile slowly froze.

Qi Diao Yu’s expression changed slightly. He had made a successful sneak attack but he had intended to disturb these Kun Lun sword xiu.

That killing move was clearly a battle formation technique. It was powerful but it required a high level of teamwork. Qi Diao Yu had originally thought that when these sword xiu were threatened, they would recall their flying swords. But this Kun Lun sword xiu would die rather than call his flying sword!

Kun Lun!

For some reason, Qi Diao Yu felt a chill.

Other people saw that in Zuo Mo's hand was on the Anti Dragon Claw but they didn't know that the Anti Dragon Claw was covered in invisible threads. Zuo Mo's hand was among these threads.

In Zuo Mo's sea of consciousness.

Pu dazedly murmured, "Three Thousand Threads of Worry ... there really are Three Thousand Threads of Worry in this world ..."

When Wei heard Pu Yao's words, his body shook. Shock climbed onto his face. He exclaimed, "Three Thousand Threads of Worry!"

Three Thousand Threads of Worry!

Knowing the name of the threads wasn't of any help to Zuo Mo.

The other ends of these threads had originally been tied to those skill steles but now that the stele forest was destroyed and the steles shattered, these thin threads lost their anchors and floated in the air.

They floated in the air like sea grasses and rippled with the wind.

No one noticed their existence except for Zuo Mo.

The area that Zuo Mo had reached into was where the threads were thickest, and the central part of the threads.

He was touching a small bead, no, more accurately, it was a clear ball of something like mist. If it wasn't that his vision was modified by his state, and his hand was directly touching it, he would not have noticed it.

But in his gaze, he could see that it was a bead.

All the slender threads extended from this bead.

When Zuo Mo touched this bead, all the thin threads that floated in the air and wrapped around the Anti Dragon Claw suddenly froze.

The Anti Dragon Claw that had been so vicious and pressuring also froze!

That transparent ball of mist suddenly became burning hot like molten metal. If Zuo Mo was in his usual state, his first reaction would be to release his grip and throw away the object.

But at this time, in an inhuman state, Zuo Mo was unaffected. It was as though what was being burned was not his hand. He looked coldly at the bead without any change.

The feeling of burning increased. Even though Zuo Mo had superior strength from cultivating the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, he felt it was slightly burdensome now, and his hand started to tremble.

In his vision, the threads floating and waving in the sky suddenly moved to wrap around him as though they encountered danger.

The thin threads wrapped around the Anti Dragon Claw reflexively tightened. The Anti Dragon Claw started to tremble violently. The vicious Anti Dragon Claw didn't have any power to resist these thin threads.

Facing the incoming threads, Zuo Mo did not dodge and reached out his left hand.

The threads were unusually quick and tightly wrapped around Zuo Mo in a flash.

Zuo Mo finally felt the suppression that the Anti Dragon Claw did. These threads were terrifyingly strong. Once he was tied, he felt as though he was unable to breathe. Even if his Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique was the third ranking mo physique in general level, it was as fragile as paper in front of such power.

At this time, a light suddenly flashed across Zuo Mo's cold and emotionless eyes.

He was an experienced hunter and had patiently waited for a chance. When the chance appeared in front of him, he did not hesitate.

He suddenly acted!

————

The death of his shidi did not affect Lin Qian at all. But in the depths of his icy right eye, an emotion that was hard to describe flashed and disappeared. His movements did not pause at all. As the sword wheel moved towards the three that were the greatest threat to him, he had already turned around.

Like a large bird spreading its wings, he charged at the stone stele.

The area in front of him was flat and without any obstructions.

In the sky, the Anti Dragon Claw violently trembled. Xiao Mo Ge seemed to be taming it. Lin Qian forced his murderousness down and still aimed for the stone stele.

With Xiao Mo Ge's present strength, it was akin to death to seek to tame the Anti Dragon Claw. It would be impossible to subdue such a vicious object without being marshal level or having a special method. This was not something that could be solved by talent. Treasures like sky mo weapons had to go through tribulations to form. There were too many chance occurrences

required to tame it!

Lin Qian didn't have any thoughts of taming the Anti Dragon Claw.

As to the third treasure of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion in legend, he was curious but it was just curiosity. Up until now, he still hadn't seen it.

However, even if he saw it, he would not act even if it was tempting.

He only had one goal. The mo skill stele.

He was extremely quick. At this time, there were no other people in his field of view. Even with his composure, his heart couldn't help but beat faster. If he could obtain the Great Peace Mo Skill Stele, he had absolute confidence no one could take it from him!

Even if he was the only one left, he had the confidence he could take the stone stele and kill his way back to Kun Lun!

Closer!

Almost in his hand!

Just as a hint of irrepressible joy flashed through Lin Qian's eyes, a figure suddenly shot out of the stone debris.

Lin Qian's pupils contracted!

His reaction was rapid. The Tai's sword in his right hand stabbed at the figure!

A blinding spark lit up on the sword tip of the Tai's sword!

————

A Wen was covered in dust as he climbed out of the rubble. When the maze had suddenly collapsed, they had almost been buried alive. However, they reacted quickly. The moment the maze collapsed, they had cast yao arts to protect themselves.

Otherwise, with the yao's relatively weak bodies, they would have turned to meat paste.

At this time, the benefits of cultivating a mo physique like A Wen did was clear. He fought his way out of the pile of stones relying just on his strong body.

However, the moment he came out and without knowing the situation, a terrifying sword essence locked onto him!

His expression immediately turned pale!

The sword essence was so strong it was almost unimaginable. His

soul almost left his body.

But the harsh training of Guard Camp showed their results. His mind was completely blank but his body instinctively reacted.

The armored plumes on his body vibrated in unison as his mo skill was channeled to its maximum. The mo spear in his hand, he instinctively took a step forward, and a text-book stab was completed like lightning.

Without any thinking, he breathed and shouted, “Kill!”

At the tip of the mo spear, a thick black spear energy flashed and shot out of the void just in front of the Tai’a sword!

Under the pile of stone debris, a purple arrow light suddenly flew out. It drew out a rule-straight streak of light in the air and aimed at Lin Qian. It was Nan Yue’s [South Sky Arrow Art]!

A layer of faint green-grey mist that rippled strangely spread towards Lin Qian’s feet in a blink. Cang Ze’s [Grey Scar Art]!

Both the purple energy and the green-grey mist had a watery tinge that was hard to see with the eye. Ming Jue Zi’s [Water Wood Light Art]!

The ground under Lin Qian’s feet suddenly crumbled. A strange field suddenly surrounded him. It was like an invisible rope that caught him!

“Haha! A man that can lasso a horse is strong and masculine!” The orange-haired yao’s heartless laugh came from the pile of stones.

The black smoke yao did not attack but leapt straight for the stone stele. He knew that he was the weakest but he was extremely smart. He immediately found the best way to disrupt the other’s thoughts.

Everyone had been working together for a long time and had built up their teamwork. In this attack, their cooperation and timing had been perfect. And this was the first fight after their power had increased. Every attack contained all of their strength. It was definitely their strongest ever attack!

The killing intent filled the air!

Chapter 625 - Assimilation

Surprise flickered across Lin Qian's mind.

He was not threatened by the power of these attacks but what he was surprised at was that the mo skills and yao arts these people cultivated were not normal!

It was just because they were not strong enough yet to express the power of their mo skills and yao arts that he was able to deal with them.

Who were these people?

Lin Qian was slightly shocked but with the stone stele within reach, he did not plan on wasting time on these questions.

The Tai'a sword did not waver as it stabbed forward!

The spear energy, the purple arrow energy, the green-grey ripples, they all seemed to sink into a bog and suddenly slowed down.

The Tai'a sword also shook once.

Pia!

The lights shattered. A Wen and the others were sent flying as

though they were hit with hammers!

Lin Qian's body wavered slightly.

His expression changed slightly. When the Tai'a sword had come into contact with the energies, he found that there was a layer of a faint and strange power covering them. Even so, he had the power to defeat them but he hadn't expected that the restraining power that came from under him was acting one wave after another, in the form of three waves!

With the two other waves interfering, he had lost slightly.

His mind shook. He knew that he had underestimated these people. These few were not strong but their teamwork was good. He also had let down his guard after the hard fight just now.

Damn it!

Lin Qian's retaliation was unusually strong. Including the black smoke yao, everyone was thrown far away as though they were hit by charging wild beasts.

Attacking in anger, Lin Qian's attack was very exquisite. Killing them was not as important as getting the stone stele!

But when two figures suddenly appeared in front of him.

Lin Qian's pupils abruptly contracted!

For the first time, he stopped moving.

————

A strong suction force suddenly formed from the spirit consciousness and ling power inside Zuo Mo's body. The slender threads were immediately pulled into his body without any warning.

There was no change in his cold thinking. Like a puppet, Zuo Mo controlled his body.

There were three treasures in the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion.

When Zuo Mo saw the thin strands covering the Anti Dragon Claw, he realized that these slender threads restraining the Anti Dragon Claw was the third treasure!

In an icy state, Zuo Mo was unusually sensitive.

The stone stele had reminded him that he could only find the "world" in this icy state. When he confirmed that these slender threads were the third treasure, he thought that obtaining these threads would be related to his icy state.

The icy state was produced because his spiritual consciousness

and his ling power continuously went into his body. These slender threads definitely had something to do with spiritual consciousness and ling power.

The slender threads continued to burrow into Zuo Mo's body. His thoughts were still calm.

Zuo Mo's daring surpassed Pu Yao and Wei's expectations. They gaped with wide eyes as they looked at Zuo Mo's mad action. They almost didn't believe their eyes. Zuo Mo was slightly fickle but it was rare to see him do such a crazy thing.

Was this the influence of his present state?

The two did not know but their hearts were in the air.

"This guy is crazy!" Pu Yao's voice trembled. It wasn't that he had never seen treasures before. He had been a sky yao. But because he had seen many treasures, he felt that Zuo Mo was insane!

The more powerful the treasure, other than chance encounters, the more strength one needed. The top treasures all had intelligence and chose their masters. Those without strength would not be able to even tolerate the power of the treasure and would die immediately.

Seeing a good treasure and charging up to grab it was the best way of dying immediately.

Thinking how Zuo Mo was just in general rank now, his heart trembled.

“This guy is greedy to the bone! He doesn’t want to live!” Pu Yao gritted his teeth and shouted. He and Wei were both in Zuo Mo’s sea of consciousness. If Zuo Mo died, they would naturally turn to dust with him.

Wei was silent for a moment and then said with a smile, “Don’t you feel that he has the same mannerisms as Master?”

Pu Yao stilled. That face appeared in front of his eyes. He blinked, and a thread of pain in his heart dissipated. He said coldly, “She was marshal level!”

“The Anti Dragon Claw should not end up in the hands of anyone else.” Wei raised his head and murmured as he looked at the enormous Anti Dragon Claw.

The words voiced what Pu Yao thought. He was silent.

“It is definitely impossible for a general to subdue the Anti Dragon Claw,” Wei said directly. “I experienced the entire process of Master subduing the Anti Dragon Claw. With her marshal strength, she still almost lost her life. The key to subduing is on the Three Thousand Threads of Worry!”

Pu Yao was still silent.

Wei raised his head to gaze at the Anti Dragon Claw and said, “Shi Zi Ming is a true genius and found something that is a bane to the Anti Dragon Claw. Three Thousand Threads of Worry, it really is true to the name, even the most brutal power cannot hold against threads of worry!”

Pu Yao said solemnly, “I do not know much about the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. I just know that it is one of the most mysterious yao star cores. There are some rare mentions of it in history but just a few mentions. It is said only those that cultivate both spiritual consciousness and ling power can see it.”

Wei nodded. “A Zuo’s strategy appears to be correct.”

“This boy is filled with strangeness.” Pu Yao’s tone became normal. After some thought, he suddenly said, “There is a stupid method to taking a yao star core, it is to assimilate it.”

Just as his words came out, a light flashed across Zuo Mo’s cold eyes.

Assimilation!

At this time, countless thin strands headed into the depths of his body. They were just like Zuo Mo’s consciousness and ling power. Following the rush of threads, Zuo Mo suddenly felt a thread of thought that was slightly timid.

The yao star core!

Zuo Mo didn't hesitate and the Soul Setting Divine Light inside his body flowed like a fish along Zuo Mo's arm into the yao star core in Zuo Mo's hand.

The yao star core suddenly froze!

Three Thousand Threads of Worry was suddenly filled with terror and panic. It was like a child that was scared and didn't dare to move. Even the slender threads that were moving into Zuo Mo's body froze.

The Soul Setting Divine Light pulled the yao star core slowly into Zuo Mo's palm.

"Soul Setting Divine Light" Wei looked dazedly at this scene. The Soul Setting Divine Light's inheritance had always been with him but he had never comprehended it and didn't know that it was so powerful.

Pu Yao was also slightly dumbstruck.

Even the Three Thousand Threads of Worry was so docile in front of it!

The yao star core merged into Zuo Mo's left palm.

When it completely merged into Zuo Mo's palm, Zuo Mo felt all the pressure restraining his body disappear. A handful of slender threads came out of his body and connected to the Anti Dragon Claw.

At the center of the sun script on Zuo Mo's left hand, there was a little star. It would be extremely hard to notice if one did not pay attention.

Zuo Mo was not content. Taking advantage of the chance, he raised his head and his cold gaze swept across the mountainous Anti Dragon Claw.

The Anti Dragon Claw shook!

Zuo Mo had accepted Princess Xia's arrangements but out of consideration of safety, he still decided to bring A Gui and Ceng Lian'er along.

At this most important time, the two appeared.

Ceng Lian'er was dressed in black as she stood. Her gaze was blurred as she said serenely, "Kun Lun sword xiu, why come to our mo territories to steal our treasures?"

A Gui did not speak and looked expressionlessly at Lin Qian.

Lin Qian's expression was grave and he did not seem to hear it. All of his ling power was channeled. The Tai'a sword was held horizontally in front of him. A thread of blue appeared in his right red eye and a flicker of fire appeared in his blue left eye. His expression was devout.

“Kun Lun!”

As though he used all the power in his body, the shout that came from his chest was forceful.

Ceng Lian'ers onyx eyes suddenly became as bright as stars. Her serene voice was uncertain in the air, “Kun Lun sword xiu, so vicious, are you not afraid of karma?”

Her sleeve seemed to flow weakly towards Lin Qian.

Just as Ceng Lian'er acted, purple energy flashed across A Gui's eyes. Her hand suddenly flicked at Lin Qian.

The moment the two attacked, under the sword wheel, Zhu Ke and the middle-aged attendant's expressions changed. Xia's body shook slightly. None of them had expected the two females with Xiao Mo Ge to be so powerful!

For the first time, they felt wary of Xiao Mo Ge. What was the origin of this youth?

Lin Qian ignored the attack from the two. His gaze focused on the Tai'a sword as he cut down without hesitation!

Under this chop, all the air within ten li seemed to solidify!

In the world, there was only the Tai'a sword!

The power from the three collided in a show of strength.

Boom!

The deep explosion exploded in people's minds.

In this moment, everyone seemed to lose control of their body. Their blood and muscles shook. When the sound dissipated and they recovered, their expressions changed.

On the battlefield, Ceng Lian's sleeve had exploded up to her elbows. A large hole that was fifty zhang was under A Gui's feet. Other than the stone stele, everything else had been torn to pieces!

A thread of blood flowed out of Lin Qian's mouth as he stared with his red and blue eyes at the two.

He reached up to wipe the blood from his mouth. With his right hand holding the dimmed Tai'a sword, he said coolly, "I hadn't expected to encounter two experts that cultivate shen power."

When these words came out, all the mo present were shocked.

Shen power! These two females cultivated shen power!

Ceng Lian'er was intimidated. Lin Qian stated the two of them cultivated shen power because he wanted to make them the targets. If the other mo had other desires, the situation would turn to chaos again.

She detected the gazes that had all focused on her. Everyone's gazes became suspicious and hesitant.

This man was really powerful and cunning!

She knew that nothing she could say now could help. Once the seed of suspicion was planted, it could not be killed.

"So Kun Lun sword xiu make a living based on their mouth!" Ceng Lian'er said coolly. Her hands moved into a strange position.

The purple energy in A Gui's eyes increased.

Lin Qian did not fear her and said with a smile, "You might cultivate shen power but it is a pity. One has just started and the other's soul is corroded. You do not qualify to stop me."

At this time, a cold voice suddenly came from the sky.

“Qualifications? What qualifications are needed to kill the people of Kun Lun?”

Chapter 626 - A Sword Strike And A Block

The one who spoke was Zuo Mo.

One of his hands was pulling the Three Thousand Threads of Worry as his body hung from the Anti Dragon Claw. However, in the eyes of everyone else, his posture was very strange because they could not see the Three Thousand Threads of Worry in his hand.

Everyone on the battlefield turned to look at Zuo Mo.

Even Zhu Ke and the other two inside the sword wheel couldn't help but slow down.

But the one most shocked was Lin Qian. His heart jumped. Had Xiao Mo Ge tamed the Anti Dragon Claw?

Impossible!

Mo weapons like the Anti Dragon Claw were not something that general level mo could tame. However, why didn't the Anti Dragon Claw respond? The Anti Dragon Claw was famed for its savagery and viciousness, how could it tolerate someone close to it?

Lin Qian' expression was normal but he was shocked inside. His murderousness towards Xiao Mo Ge was so strong, even he was surprised about it. But he had forcibly suppressed the murderousness. The stone stele was the priority, and he had

thought Xiao Mo Ge would turn to ash under the backlash of the Anti Dragon Claw.

But Xiao Mo Ge was untouched!

This was unexpected to him. He suddenly found that there were too many unexpected occurrences today. The group of people emerging from the pile of rubble was unexpected, the two women who cultivated shen power were unexpected.

Almost everything unexpected was related to Xiao Mo Ge.

Thinking about his thoughts of killing Xiao Mo Ge, Lin Qian grimaced. Had this been Heaven's will?

This thought only flashed through his mind and his eyes lit up again.

The dim Tai'a sword rose again. His blue and red eyes were unfathomably deep. The situation was disadvantageous to him. He was already uncertain he could defeat the two women in front of him. Now add on Xiao Mo Ge!

The sword wheel would not last for much longer, he did not have a lot of time left.

He took a deep breath. At this time, all words were a waste to him. Only two words could awaken his fighting spirits and motivation!

“Kun Lun!”

The light words were full of determination as it echoed.

The other Kun Lun sword xiu changed expression. Eldest Shixiong was going all out!

The dimmed Tai’a sword shook and suddenly released a blinding and burning light. The sparks flew off as the blade moved.

Lin Qian stood up straight. His usually gentle brow was fierce and determined, and his face pale.

He was like an unsheathed sword!

The ground continued to tremble. The vast sword essence was like a lead cloud that weighed down on people. The ground underneath Lin Qian cracked, split and crumbled to form a perfectly round pit. The edges of the round hole was rapidly spreading outwards.

It was unable to be stopped!

At the same time, the Tai’a sword that was like a firework sparkler; it gave off a grievous hum as it melted. A hint of sorrow flashed across Lin Qian’s face but his movement did not stop. His sword arm decisively chopped into the air!

The grieving hum of the Tai'a sword echoed through Great Peace City.

The blinding light suddenly expanded and a terrifying sword essence immediately covered all of Great Peace City!

As though a sun was rising at Great Peace City!

Roar!

A savage and vicious roar was like thunder. The ground shook as though it was being hammered, all of Great Peace City shook. The vast wave of air was like a hard wall that swept outwards. Those that were weak were thrown into the air as though they were hit by something! Even Zhu Ke and the other were almost unable to stay standing. All of them stumbled and had to use all their strength to steady themselves. The blood drained from their faces.

Even they couldn't help but feel fear in the face of such a terrifying sword essence.

The terrifying wave of air that was like a metal wall rolled through Great Peace City.

When the light dissipated and the scene appeared in front of them, all of them had ashen complexions. More than half of the soaring structures in Great Peace City had been cut down.

But when they recovered from their shock, they immediately looked towards the stele forest.

Lin Qian stood upright like a sword.

Between himself and Xiao Mo Ge stood a dragon claw. Near the two, the ground had been erased. Only the ground under Xiao Mo Ge had not disappeared. It was like a slice of cake had been cut from the earth and stretched out behind him.

Zuo Mo used the Anti Dragon Claw to block this blow.

At the crucial moment, he channeled the Three Thousand Threads of Worry and pushed the Anti Dragon Claw in front of him to stop Lin Qian's sword strike!

The Anti Dragon Claw had shrank after enduring this blow and became Zuo Mo's height.

Zhu Ke and the others stared with wide eyes and looked in disbelief at Zuo Mo. Even they didn't dare to touch the power of that blow just now and Xiao Mo Ge had managed to stop it!

Xiao Mo Ge had really tamed the Anti Dragon Claw!

They had no more doubts. If he had not done so, Xiao Mo Ge would not be able to stop the power of that sword strike with his own power!

Lin Qian's strength shocked them but Xiao Mo Ge's display was even more unexpected.

A general level was able to subdue the Anti Dragon Claw. It was absurd to hear but it happened in front of them.

From the moment Xiao Mo Ge had appeared in Great Peace City, a string of impossible events had continued to occur. The worldly apparition Shifting Star Stands, surpassing Qi Diao Yu's record, defeating Shen Yu who had comprehended the [Peacock King Plume], causing the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion to appear, and now subduing the Anti Dragon Claw and blocking that stunning blow.

He was not favored each time but he would always achieve victory.

Xiao Mo Ge seemed like a freak and there seemed to be a group of freaks around him.

This guy

Lin Qian's eyes were stunned and his complexion was ashen white.

He had not expected that Xiao Mo Ge could stop his blow!

He had gambled everything on this blow. At a cost of wounding himself, and the Tai'a sword being destroyed, he had used a secret method to temporarily increase his cultivation in order to use such great power.

He had never fought so hard, never.

In past battles, he had always been untouched and at ease. He had never lost before, he was always full of confidence in himself. From a very long time ago, he did not participate in the tournaments between the third generation disciples because his strength had even surpassed majority of elders in the sect.

At his age, he stood as one of the most outstanding geniuses in Kun Lun's history.

Even deep in the mo territories, he was not afraid. He had absolute confidence in himself.

The sect leader had also been full of confidence in their mission. Everyone believed that Lin Qian would not have a match below marshal level.

Yet the reality in front of him allowed him to discover that his pride was laughable.

A general rank youth that was younger than him had easily

stopped his most powerful sword strike.

Anti Dragon Claw!

Looking at the almost-living dragon claw, for a moment, Lin Qian's eyes were dazed.

The power of the mo weapon?

The Tai'a sword was lacking greatly compared to the Anti Dragon Claw. He knew this well. It was not that Kun Lun did not have better flying swords but the Tai'a sword was the most powerful sword that he could currently use. He did not have enough cultivation for the ancient and great flying swords sealed in the Sword Pavilion.

But this guy who was just general level had tamed the Anti Dragon Claw.

This completely upended his knowledge of the world.

No wonder he felt murderousness towards the other, was this a fated enemy?

Lin Qian smiled. He was not an ordinary person and quickly recovered his calm. But he knew that he did not have any more power to fight. He had truly failed in his mission.

He quickly recovered his confidence and the red and blue retreated from his eyes. He looked at Zuo Mo and suddenly said in a loud voice, “This one is the first seated disciple of Kun Lun, Lin Qian. Xiao Mo Ge, if you and I ever meet, let us fight again!”

Finishing, Lin Qian turned and walked away.

Pew, the stone stele behind Zuo Mo turned to powder.

Yet at this time, no one dared to speak. Everyone was deeply attracted to this figure of extraordinary presence. Many people showed realization. The first seated disciple of Kun Lun, no wonder he was so extraordinary!

No one dared to stop him.

The remaining Kun Lun sword xiu silently flew next to Lin Qian and formed a defensive perimeter around him.

Everyone in Great Peace City would remember the name Lin Qian.

But then everyone turned to look at Zuo Mo. If it wasn't for Xiao Mo Ge, all of the mo in Great Peace City would have ended up as side-acts to Lin Qian. Many people felt great pity that the Mo Skill Stele had been destroyed but compared to it being stolen by Lin Qian, everyone could accept the present result.

This battle was fated to shake all of the mo territories. They were

undoubtedly a minor accompaniment in a battle like this, and it was a humiliation for them.

In the eyes of the world, Xiao Mo Ge who had stopped Lin Qian was the hero of the mo.

This youth that had come out of nowhere and was of unknown origins.

Along with this battle, his name would spread throughout the mo territories!

Yet no one realized that an even greater danger was silently marching towards them.

Zuo Mo was completely void of strength and unable to move. His eyes were filled with shock and fear.

Lin Qian's blow had managed to force himself out of his icy state. If he hadn't used the Three Thousand Threads of Worry to pull the Anti Dragon Claw in front of him at the crucial moment, he wouldn't have been able to survive.

Terrifying and unparalleled strength!

Even if Zuo Mo had a deep hatred of Kun Lun, he couldn't help

but feel terror at Lin Qian's power. He was unable to imagine how this person had cultivated.

He had never underestimated Kun Lun's power but when he truly fought against Kun Lun, he found that Kun Lun's strength was even greater than he had predicted!

Just one Lin Qian was so powerful

He really couldn't imagine it!

Zuo Mo laughed. His thoughts of finding Kun Lun and getting revenge seemed so laughable and out of his reach.

But no matter how laughable and distant it was, so what?

Who made it so that we had a grievance to settle?

Fighting spirit flashed through Zuo Mo's eyes and he became motivated again! His expression suddenly changed and he wailed, "A Gui, A Gui, help me, my feet are trembling, I can't stand up, can't stand up!"

When his gaze casually looked into the sky, he froze.

There was a dense group of black dots in the air like a black cloud coming at a rapid speed.

Zuo Mo's eyes were keen and his expression changed. That was a charging formation!

He suddenly used all the strength he had and shouted at the top of his lungs, "Shu Long!"

Chapter 627 - The Ming Bandits

The estate that Shu Long and the others lived in was not left unscathed under Lin Qian's blow and collapsed. But because they had been preparing to leave, all of them were unharmed.

When Zuo Mo's shout howled out, all of Guard Camp suddenly shot into the air like a drawn bow string. With a few jumps, they appeared next to Zuo Mo.

They had finished forming a battle formation in the air. When they landed next to Zuo Mo, they surrounded him in the middle. The movements was so dazzling that all those who noticed this scene had strange looks on their faces.

"Find A Wen and the others!" Zuo Mo asked gravely, "Is everyone else here?"

"All here!" Shu Long nodded reliably. Behind him, several figures flew out and quickly found A Wen and the others.

Zuo Mo noticed Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng among the group and Li Ying Feng was carrying Luo Li on her back. His nerves immediately relaxed. When he saw Bie Han and Sin Battalion, his expression eased further.

But his brow quickly furrowed again.

The black dots in the sky became increasingly clear. The

battalion that was flying towards them was astoundingly large. From the scale, it probably had more than ten thousand people!

“Bie Han, prepare to fight!” Zuo Mo lost his politeness at this time and briskly ordered.

Bie Han’s cold face remained motionless. He nodded and turned to leave.

“Miss Ceng! Please give the command of the Celestial Planet Guards to me!” Zuo Mo said with a serious expression.

Ceng Lian’er did not waste words and shouted, “Shou Ping!”

“Present!” Shou Ping immediately came out of the ranks. Miss’ battle just now had frightened him half to death and the reveal of Miss’ strength had shocked him.

“From now, you will be under Xiao Mo Ge Daren’s command. Anyone who disobeys will be executed!” Ceng Lian’er swept Shou Ping with a glance and said in a light tone.

Shou Ping’s heart shook and he responded respectfully, “Yes!”

“The Ming Bandits! The Ming Bandits have come!” In the sky, many mo stumbled as they landed. Their faces were ashen and their expressions filled with terror.

“Ming Bandits!”

Great Peace City exploded.

Even Zhu Ke and the others suddenly changed expression.

Zuo Mo saw Tao Xing’s bloodless face. His lips were trembling and he was clearly extremely terrified. Zuo Mo asked, “Who are the Ming Bandits?”

Tao Xing’s throat was dry and his expression as grey as it could be. “We are definitely going to die now! Ming Bandits Ming Bandits, they are a group of lawless bandits”

“Lawless bandits?” Zuo Mo paused. At his side, some members of the Guard Camp had expressions of scorn. They had killed many bandits on their journey here.

“The strongest bandits!” The one who spoke was Tang Fei. At this moment, this handsome young woman with a ponytail had a trace of fear on her face. “They come like the wind, kill people and are extremely cruel. Their leader is called Ming Hui. This person is an astounding genius. Even though he is young, he is only a step away from marshal level. He has many experts under his command. They are all the elites of the other bandit groups that he has taken over. This person is extremely ambitious and is as sly as a wolf. He is someone no one wants to provoke!”

Zuo Mo understood some of this. After a moment of thought, he

said to Tang Fei, “Starting from now, I’m going to command your battalion!”

Tang Fei opened her mouth but did not speak. Tao Xing heard this and his expression relaxed slightly. He nodded repeatedly and said, “Good good good! Tang Fei, listen well to Daren’s orders!”

Tang Fei lowered her head and accepted the order. “Yes!”

At this time, Zuo Mo did not have the attention to spare for Tang Fei’s willingness or the lack thereof. The Ming Bandits were coming quick and a hard battle would not be able to be avoided.

Right now, anything he could get was something that he could use.

“Ming Bandits!” The middle-aged attendant’s expression changed slightly. She raised her head to look at the incoming black cloud in the sky and gritted through her teeth, “I will take you and break through.”

“You can escape. With your strength, you should be able to break out on your own. If you take me, you will not be able to escape.” Princess Xia glanced at her.

The middle-aged attendant said lightly, “We have been mistress and servant for so many years. I had my own intentions when I

started, but I watched you grow up into a young woman. No matter what, I will not abandon you.”

She looked deeply at Princess Xia and said, “You have done enough for the Anwei Family, you do not owe them anymore. If you want to take the opportunity to go into hiding, this may be a good chance.”

A thread of warmth flashed across Princess Xia’s eyes. With her hand she combed her slightly ruffled hair. “You are giving up?”

“This is probably fate,” the middle-aged attendant said lightly. However, her expression seemed to be relieved of a burden.

“You have given up, but I do not want to surrender like this to fate.” Princess Xia’s smile blossomed and a differently light flashed through her eyes.

The middle-aged attendant showed a hint of shock.

“It is crueler to forget the things that one does not want to forget. Compared to him, I am much luckier.” Princess Xia raised her face and her eyes seemed to be shrouded in mist. She murmured to herself, “In these years, I have muddled through and accepted the arrangements of the family. It was not for the Anwei Family, but for Father. Every time, I would think that the Anwei Family was the blood and tears of my father, and I was unable to refuse their requests. Now, I have thought it through. Since I do not want to forget, I will not forget. In the past, I was struggling in my memories and was moved by others like a puppet. When I think

about it now, that me was really lacking.”

Her beautiful face slowly lit up. She stared into the sky and seemed to say to herself, “I have to become brave. The Anwei Family is the work of my father, and the best way to pay respect to him is to inherit his last wishes and make the Anwei Family prosperous. I need to stand up, and not remain down, I will not be a puppet, I want to become the master of the Anwei Family!”

The middle-aged attendant’s gaze softened. She had seen how depressed Princess Xia had become after her father had passed away.

She was silent for a moment before she said, “I will lead you out of here!”

Her tone held determination rare to her.

Princess Xia took her gaze back and smiled mischievously. “I have a way.”

“You have a way?” The middle-aged attendant stilled.

“They are surrounding us.” Miao Jun’s expression was grave.

He was a gold battle general and had a broader view than other

people. He quickly noticed the Ming Bandit Battalion that appeared at their flanks and rear. The other was trying to corral them in.

This was the first time that he had seen the legendary Ming Bandits. His mood was as dark as his expression was. As expected of the Ming Bandits that were publicly recognized as the strongest bandits. From the initial charge to the maneuver to surround them, the transformation of the formation flowed like water. It was shockingly smooth. The troops looked unorganized but the murderousness that came with battle experience caused Miao Jun's heart to tremble.

After seeing this group of terrifying bandits with his own eyes, Miao Jun finally understood why no faction was willing to provoke the Ming Bandits.

Zuo Mo grimaced. He could also see what Miao Jun saw. But his strength was completely drained and he had not recovered. He swept a look across Shu Long and the others. Their expression was normal but everyone had been affected by that sword strike that swept through all of Great Peace City. Their offensive capabilities were also affected.

The Ming Bandit did not form a wall to surround them. Instead they were strategically dispersed maintaining appropriate distances between the groups of troops and did not expose any openings.

Seeing this, Zuo Mo knew that the enemy was an expert!

However, the Ming Bandits did not target Lin Qian's group.

They were those who only bullied the weak!

Zuo Mo cursed them as he threw lingdan into his mouth. He ordered Shu Long and the others to take the time to recover and receive the hard battle that was going to come.

Suddenly, Zuo Mo noticed Princess Xia's group coming over.

"I know you have a way out so I came to side with you." Princess Xia had a mischievous smile.

Zuo Mo grimaced. "What way do I have?"

"Then what do we do?" Princess Xia's brow furrowed as she looked pleadingly at Zuo Mo.

"Even if you look at me, I can't create a way." Zuo Mo's expression was one of helplessness, but the next words that came from his mouth was completely the opposite. "However, no matter if there is a way or not, we have to fight."

His tone was not resolute, nor arousing but a strong fighting spirit permeated from it.

For some reason, Princess Xia immediately felt reassured. She

smiled beautifully. “I will let you take command of my guards. If I really die, it isn’t much. We will live and die together!”

“Cough cough cough!” When Miao Jun heard this, he burst into coughing. Princess Xia was a beauty, and he felt he was unable to withstand her presence in that moment.

Zuo Mo was not affected by the “illusory spell.” His mind was filled with potential ways of breaking through the encirclement.

He did not refuse Princess Xia’s submission. In his mind, Princess Xia was his friend and he also owed her a favor. He thought and then asked, “How many guards do you have?”

“About three hundred.”

“Give their command to me.” Zuo Mo did not waste words.

“Alright!” Princess Xia agreed without another word.

A hint of admiration flashed through Zuo Mo’s eyes at Princess Xia’s decisiveness.

Princess Xia’s guards were quickly gathered and they were put under Zuo Mo’s command. Zuo Mo immediately gave these guards to Miao Jun to lead.

A gold battle general could not be wasted.

The events that occurred after far surpassed Zuo Mo's expectations. It may have been that Bie Han's battalion had the advantage of numbers but many other people came to throw their lot in with him.

Given their familiarity Zuo Mo could understand when the Lan Brothers came to him but he didn't understand why Princess Xin and Princess Wan also came.

But at this time, he needed more manpower and did not refuse any of them. His request to all of them was the same, hand command of their guards to him. The people also knew the urgency of the situation and cooperated.

Zuo Mo had Miao Jun take command of all these guards.

At this time, the Ming Bandits had finished their encirclement. It was strictly enforced and any mo that tried to break through were killed on the spot.

The pressure created by the army circling the city was suffocating.

Zuo Mo felt extremely urgency. If the Ming Bandits attacked the city at this moment, then they wouldn't have any power to resist. What he could trust the most right now was only Bie Han's Sin Battalion. There weren't enough of Guard Camp's members here. A Wen and the others were lightly wounded and their strength was affected.

Time! They needed time!

Just as Zuo Mo was praying that the Ming Bandits would not attack the city so quickly, woosh, the Ming Bandit battle battalion suddenly pushed forward.

The tangible murderousness filled the air and swept them like an enormous wave. Everyone's expression changed!

Were they about to attack the city?

At this time, something suddenly happened!

Chapter 628 - Water Curtain

“We are not far from Gu Liang Dao’s forces.”

Gongsun Cha was off in a daze as he stared at the jie map.

They had been very fast. The string of hard battles at the start had cause their reputation to spread. The major factions along the way had learned to fear them. Also, with A Zha Ge Battalion at the front and many mo members in Vermillion Bird Camp, no one suspected that they were xiuzhe. The resistance they encountered was much less than Gu Liang Dao.

Also, as the people in front of them moved to clear out the way, the factions further up ahead copied them. As Gongsun Cha’s battalion continued to advance, their goal gradually became clear.

The factions all noticed that if Gongsun Cha’s battalions continued to advance on this path, there was a high possibility that they would end up fighting Gu Liang Dao!

Was this unknown elite force targeting Gu Liang Dao?

Many people felt excited at this speculation! The power of Gu Liang Dao had caused fear in the mo in this area. Some factions that were daring and were closer to Gu Liang Dao’s forces had their entire families flee.

Gu Liang Dao’s advance was so persistent it robbed people of

hope.

If this elite battalion's target was really Gu Liang Dao

When the mo factions along the way let out the path, they kept a close watch on Gongsun Cha Battalion with anticipation.

It had to be said that Gu Liang Dao was extremely lucky. The entry point he had picked was very good and there were no powerful factions in the area.

Just as everyone felt hopeless, suddenly a powerful battalion appeared and had went on a long journey heading straight for Gu Liang Dao. How could these mo in the area not feel hope?

What really made Gongsun Cha wanted to laugh was that some factions even sent messengers to ask and say that they were willing to offer reinforcements and supplies!

Gongsun Cha also felt wonderment at having becoming the savior that the mo looked towards. He naturally refused them.

But these mo thought that Gongsun Cha had refused because this elite battalion was too proud. They deliberately left out supplies along the road without anyone guarded them and permitted Gongsun Cha and the others to take as they pleased. The factions further along the way copied them in unspoken agreement.

This incorrect speculation didn't just increase the speed of the

advance, it also greatly decreased the battalion's exhaustion.

Gongsun Cha's group was like a sharp dagger that flashed through one jie after another.

Until they were almost at the destination!

What they were about to face was Gu Liang Dao's battalion!

Gu Liang Dao might have encountered more resistance but he had more manpower than Lil' Miss. With the colossus that was Xi Xuan behind him, he slowly pushed forward. His method was slow but no one could stop his momentum.

Old Field Jie, this little unknown jie was Lil' Miss' goal this time.

According to the path that Gu Liang Dao's advance was taking, Old Field Jie was to be his next target.

Gongsun Cha raised his head and his gaze swept across his commanders. Even though they had undergone a long journey, did not rest at all along the way, and exhaustion could be seen, their morale was high and they were brimming with fighting spirit!

Xi Xuan's Tiger General Gu Liang Dao!

Gongsun Cha suddenly smiled. That pair of clear eyes like that of the neighbor's boy burned with fire.

The commanders became alert. They knew that the true battle was about to begin.

“We need to win this battle.” Lil’ Miss’ tone was gentle as though he was describing something ordinary but every word caused the people to tremble as though electricity was sparking across their skin. Everyone stopped breathing and stood up straight!

“Only victory!”

The damaged Great Peace City was filled with rubble. The flat ground was now pitted and looked like a ruin.

From the center of Great Peace Palace, a bright mo matrix lit up under Shi Yue Yi’s feet.

Shi Yue Yi’s wrinkled face carried deep sorrow. Starting slowly greyish-white spread from the roots of his hair and eyebrows turned a dull greyish-white.

He did not speak. The mo matrix that lit up under his feet was like a creeper vine that had woken from a hundred year deep sleep and started to spread into the surroundings.

Soon, all of the Great Peace Palace was as brightly lit by this mo

matrix, as though it was day.

The light of the mo matrix did not stop. It spread along the damaged walls, and continued to spread outwards.

The mo matrixes on the streets lit up, the mo matrixes at the corners of walls lit up, the mo matrixes of the buildings lit up.

In a blink, all of Great Peace City was covered in the bright mo matrixes.

People suddenly found to their amazement that every corner of Great Peace City was engraved with mo matrixes!

Zuo Mo also jumped in surprise. He looked at the mo matrixes that almost covered all of Great Peace City and gaped. He could not imagine how they had carved so many mo matrixes when they had constructed the city.

Such a vast undertaking!

The Ming Bandits in the air were also surprised and scared by this scene. They retreated.

“Teacher!”

Shi Yue Yi cried, the tears falling on the mo matrixes below him. The mo matrixes seemed to hear his sorrow. The light shook and

then spread.

He looked at the ruins of Great Peace City, looked at the Ming Bandits at its borders. In a flash, the glorious Great Peace City had reached its end.

His wrinkles became visibly deeper and he was rapidly ageing at a visible rate.

“Teacher, this student is useless!”

The teary eyes suddenly became determined. He raised his arms as though he was about to embrace the sky.

Boom!

The mo matrix light that covered Great Peace City suddenly brightened. The blinding light shot into the sky.

This Great Peace City that Shi Zi Ming had constructed himself opened its eyes like a monster that woke from its slumber.

The black sea surrounding Great Peace City started to rise at an astounding rate. It furiously rippled like there was something shaking deep down.

The black curtain of water quickly rose from the black sea to form an enormous black water shield in the air which covered all

of Great Peace City.

The Ming Bandits were shocked by this suddenly retreated. Everyone was experienced and sensitive to danger. This water curtain looked thin but they could smell the scent of danger.

The people inside Great Peace City sighed in relief. Many people even cheer. At least they were safe for now.

“City Master! City Master!”

The alarmed shout startled everyone. When they looked towards City Master, all of them were stunned.

Shi Yue Yi stood motionless. His entire body was a pale grey-white, he seemed to be made out of rock and was entirely lifeless.

He had turned into a statue!

Princess Xia and the others were frightened by this scene. They covered their mouths with tears in their eyes. Many of the Great Peace City mo started to sob. Shi Yue Yi had been intelligent and gentle, authoritative and was deeply loved by the people of Great Peace City.

Zuo Mo looked deeply at Shi Yue Yi and sighed inside. He had gotten a good feeling from Shi Yue Yi.

But he was not sad. The two had not had a deep relationship and this was not the time to grieve.

He flowed the mo matrix and looked around. He immediately had a grasp on the situation.

Of the people present, he was not the most powerful but he definitely understood the most about mo matrixes.

Shi Zi Ming was as powerful as expected!

Zuo Mo was full of admiration. When he returned, he called everyone over.

“The water curtain will stand for three days.” Zuo Mo lowered his voice and everyone’s hearts shook.

But the people seated here were not normal people. Even though they were afraid, they still maintained calmness on their faces. For them, this was good. Three days was a precious time to breathe and rest. It was enough for them to recover the strength to fight.

Even though in the eyes of some people, their combined fighting strength was still nothing in front of the Ming Bandits.

“Everyone, take the time to recover.” Zuo Mo turned to Miao Jun, “Miao Jun, spend some time to organize these guards and train them.”

Miao Jun wanted to speak.

“Tempering before the fight, even if it isn’t sharp, it looks good.” Zuo Mo glanced at Miao Jun and then said, “If someone disobeys, execute them!”

“I understand!” Miao Jun nodded and turned to leave.

Zuo Mo called over the Lan Brothers.

Lan Tian Long looked at Zuo Mo and said, “Brother Xiao, if there is something you need us brothers to do, tell us. Even if I have to put my life on the line, it is alright!”

Lan Rong also nodded. “Brother Xiao, speak!”

Zuo Mo said in a low voice, “Three days, we can’t just sit around and wait. There are so many people in Great Peace City and they can fight. Even though there is no time to train a battle formation, having more people is useful.”

The Lan Brothers were thoughtful.

“We need to recruit more people before everyone else can react. The more people, the better!” Zuo Mo said.

The Lan Brothers were smart people and immediately

understood when they heard this. When the other factions started to react, it would not be so easy to recruit people.

The two exchanged a look and nodded in unison, “Alright!”

Finishing, the two did not waste words and silently left.

The three princesses looked at Zuo Mo and felt admiration. When everyone else was dazed and clueless, Xiao Mo Ge had sent out a string of orders. His way of thinking was clear, his attitude decisive and without hesitation.

The people around were infected by Zuo Mo’s composure and they recovered from their panic. Without detecting it, they seemed to have gained some confidence.

Even Zhu Ke and the others looked at Zuo Mo under a new light. They had originally thought that Zuo Mo was only talented in cultivation and hadn’t expected that he was also outstanding as a battle general.

Zuo Mo did not know what these people were thinking. He was in a mess on the inside.

Three days!

Three days, what could he do?

Zuo Mo thought hard. The possibility of breaking through just with the manpower he had now was not high.

He had to think of a solution!

————

“Your Highness!” Fu Feng’s expression was worried.

“En?” Bie Han turned his head slightly.

“No matter what, you have to break through!” Fu Feng suddenly said.

Bie Han was silent until he suddenly asked, “Are the Ming Bandits very strong?”

Fu Feng stilled and reflexively answered, “Very strong, they are the strongest bandits!”

“Oh.” Bie Han nodded and became silent again.

“Your Highness!” Fu Feng was urgent. “You have to promise this subordinate! No matter what, you have”

Bie Han raised his hand as he turned around, he interrupted Fu Feng’s words.

“I will show them why they are only bandits.”

Chapter 629 - Fight!

Zuo Mo stared dazedly at the crowd in front of him.

Looking out, almost half of all the mo in Great Peace City were gathered in front of him. One hundred thousand? Two hundred thousand?

When the numbers reached a certain level, the atmosphere it produced was shocking. Zuo Mo was shocked by this ocean of people in front of him.

“How come there are so many people?” Zuo Mo pulled Lan Tian Long over and asked in a low voice.

Lan Tian Long’s expression was slightly smug. “Ha, we were stupid, not many paid attention to us when we first tried to recruit people. Then someone asked if we were in the same group as you, and then I realized why we are failing. So I used your reputation and it became like this!”

“My reputation?” Zuo Mo gaped and was speechless.

“Brother, everyone saw how you stopped Lin Qian’s sword strike. Now that the city master is gone, the one with the most reputation is you. Ha, well, everyone believes in you!” Lan Tian Long patted Zuo Mo’s shoulder and said seriously, “Brother, everyone’s lives are now in your hands. No matter what, try to save as many of them as possible!”

Having reported in, he jumped away.

Looking blankly at the sea of eyes filled with anticipation, Zuo Mo felt his throat getting dry and was at loss at what to do.

He had told Lan Tian Long to call some people over as a way to increase his presence. At an important time, they could also act as cannon fodder.

He had not thought of saving other people.

But now, when he saw the dense sea of people and the faces that were looking at him, for some reason, his heart felt suffocated!

Why was it like this

Zuo Mo lost his concentration.

He was not a saint and he did not uphold the precept of justice nor did he believe he was a hero. He even felt that he was a scoundrel.

He was selfish, greedy, cold hearted. He could do anything for victory, sacrifice people unconnected to him to save his people. He didn't feel any pressure or guilt when he did that.

When the world was like this, who could be responsible for

others?

But looking out at the the sea of quiet people, with hopeful eyes and faces covered in dust, he could not bring himself to say those words.

Completely silent.

The crowd was so large that they had to stand on the ruins and at the corners. Some people were alone, some were hugging each other. They were looking up. Tens of thousands of people were looking at Zuo Mo.

They were waiting, waiting for a miracle to occur.

In their minds, Xiao Mo Ge was another term for miracle. On him, the light of miracles repeatedly flashed. People hoped that a miracle would occur, just like in the past.

They were waiting, waiting for Xiao Mo Ge to say something.

Princess Xia and the others looked at the densely packed crowd, and then at the tiny figure in the sky above the crowd. Their expressions were filled with shock.

They were astounded by the scene in front of them.

They had also underestimated Zuo Mo's influence.

“The times create heroes!” Zhu Ke couldn't help but murmur.

No one could take their gaze away from that youth carrying the Anti Dragon Claw on his back.

A strange look flashed through Princess Xia's eyes. She seemed to murmur to herself, “You can always bring hope and bravery to others”

Xiao Mo Ge's figure in the sky suddenly moved.

Everyone unconsciously stopped breathing. They had a feeling that a scene that they would never forget was about to begin.

Zuo Mo moved, and the Anti Dragon Claw on his back also moved.

He faced the gazes of the people and slowly spoke. His voice was hoarse and deep as it passed through the air.

“You have surprised me, I am shocked and speechless. I do not know why you have chosen me. I do not understand.”

He shook his head as though he was narrating or speaking to himself.

“You leave me not knowing what to do. Truthfully, it is very rare for that to occur to me. You do not know me, we are not personally connected nor have we interacted before. I’m very shocked that you have chosen to put your trust in me. But I have to tell you I don’t have a good solution.”

Many people showed disappointment but they were still silent.

“Outside the curtain are the Ming Bandits. You know better than I do how cruel and vicious they are. If I had a battalion of the same scale on my hands, maybe I would have some confidence, but I do not. I am just like all of you; afraid, terrified, and hopeless. I know that the possibility of breaking through is not high. They have never taken hostages. I will die, just like all of you.”

Some people started to tremble, some had hopeless expression and some started to cry and sob. The pairs of eyes that had been bright with hope gradually dimmed.

“Yes, they are the Ming Bandits. In front of them, we are weak like newborn lambs. In their eyes, we are newborn lambs. They are waiting for the curtain of water to disappear and then have a full meal. We will definitely die.”

Zuo Mo’s last sentence was like the call of death. Many people were unable to bear it any longer. They fell to the ground and

sobbed.

“We are definitely going to die.”

Zuo Mo seemed to repeat this like he was speaking to himself but his words caused many people to raise up their heads and look at the youth in the air.

“But I do not plan to stop resisting. I do not plan on delivering myself under the butcher’s knife like a weak lamb, and let them swallow me down. Yes, they are strong! Yes, they are savage! Yes, we don’t have any chance at all! Yes, we will die! But so what?”

With the last words, Zuo Mo’s tone suddenly became excited. He glared, his expression twisted, the tendons in his neck bulging. He was like a wolf forced to the corner.

“But so what!”

He suddenly increased his volume. His angry shout echoed in Great Peace City like thunder.

Everyone was shocked by his words. They stopped crying, they raised their heads again and they held their breaths.

Zuo Mo’s gaze swept across the crowd. His face was twisted and his voice seemed to come from his chest, deep and with all the power he could muster, trembling.

“Yes! But so what! Yes! We don’t have a solution but so what! We are too weak, but so what! I don’t want to sit here and wait! I don’t want to wait to be captured! Other than fighting, do we have any other choice!?”

Zuo Mo looked at them and then shouted harshly, “Do we have any other choice?”

The mo below stopped crying. They wiped away the tears, those on the ground stood up and gripped their mo weapons. They raised their faces. The terror and hopelessness on their faces slowly faded. The light of determination crept onto their faces.

Yes, did they have any other choice?

When people find that they don’t have any other choices but to stand and fight, their terror would fade.

“We don’t have any other choice! Nothing! I don’t know why you have chosen me, I don’t know why you believe in me, I don’t have a good solution, I don’t have a miracle, I can only lead you to do one thing!”

The light in people’s eyes grew brighter like there was a flame flashing deep inside.

Zuo Mo’s eyes were burning, his features twisted as he forced the words out between his teeth slowly, “To fight!”

“Fight! Continue to fight! A fight that will end in death! A fight that will not end until death! We will fight to declare to those bastards ‘so what if they are the Ming Bandits!’ So what if they are stronger than us!”

He looked crazy, his tone was crazy, he was like a burning ball of flame that illuminated the surroundings.

Fire burned in the eyes of everyone in the crowd. The fire burned fanatically. They felt that their blood was boiling. Among the hopelessness, an excitement they never had before exploded from deep within their hearts!

“We can still fight! We can still fight! We can still mother***ing fight!”

Zuo Mo suddenly grabbed the Anti Dragon Claw and raised it high up. He shouted angrily, “Fight!”

“Fight!”

What answered him was an exploding volcano, a tsunami of angry shouts, fists raised in the air like a forest of fists!

“Kill’em!” Zuo Mo shouted angrily!

“Kill’em!” Countless voices shouted at the top of their lungs!

The ground was trembling, angry waves formed on the ocean, the most minute power was burning!

“Quick quick quick, faster!”

“One thousand people to a unit, faster!”

“Remember who your unit commander is, what you need to do is follow him. You will attack in whatever direction that he attacks!”

“During the fight, no matter the reason, do not retreat! Even if you are wounded, even if you are about to die! If you retreat, your unit commander will execute you immediately!”

All of Great Peace City became busier than ever before. Everyone was furiously learning, trying their best to learn how to listen to the orders of their commander and go through the most basic training.

The power that the hundred members of Guard Camp could produce in this fight was too small. Zuo Mo decided to use them as the skeleton of their group and made them troop commanders.

One thousand people per troop, this was the largest unit ever.

But even so, there were not enough unit commanders. Zuo Mo had to pick some experienced mo to act as commanders.

Regardless of how chaotic or busy it was, his expression was calm from beginning to end. If he had the time to spare, he would patrol with the Anti Dragon Claw on his back to raise morale.

Even though everything was still a mess, the morale was high.

After realizing their hopes of survival were non-existent, people were not left in terror any more. The residents of Great Peace City had mostly come here for the Mo Skill Steles. They each had some power and backbone. When they realized that they would undoubtedly die, their spirits were aroused.

Since they were going to die, they would pull some down along with them!

Fire burned in their chests.

All of Great Peace City was like a burning furnace that accumulated power under the black curtain of water.

The Ming Bandits were waiting. But they were also waiting!

Chapter 630 - The Eve

The third night came.

Great Peace City was silent. People were resting and waiting for tomorrow's battle. Today was the last day the water curtain would remain. During these three days, the Ming Bandits had tried to attack twice but did not break through the curtain of water.

In the darkness, the light of the mo matrixes rippled.

Zuo Mo was not as cheerful as he usually was. His expression was stern and his gaze that flashed occasionally was so sharp, it seemed to penetrate people's hearts.

"What are you thinking about?" Princess Xia's voice came from behind him. She walked next to Zuo Mo and sat down.

"Don't know." Zuo Mo shook his head.

"You have times that you don't know?" Princess Xia was slightly surprised. She smiled and said, "I had thought that you always have a solution, always have confidence!"

Looking at the silent Zuo Mo and a face that seemed thinner due to the labors of these past days, Princess Xia asked probingly, "Do you have any confidence in the battle tomorrow?"

“No,” Zuo Mo shook his head, “I asked many people in order to learn how powerful the Ming Bandits really were. Their battalion can rank in the top thirty of Hundred Savage Realm. All of them are lawless killers. Their combat style is vicious and powerful, and they are bloodthirsty. Most importantly, they have many people!”

“Many people?” Princess Xia went along and asked.

“En.” Zuo Mo’s gaze flashed as he said lightly, “They have twenty thousand people, and of that, about fifteen percent are brigadier level and above. More importantly, they have twenty generals.”

In these two days, he had spent great effort to get specific intelligence on the Ming Bandits.

Princess Xia inhaled sharply and her face was slightly pale. She was not a flower vase that was clueless about the world, this number shocked her. More than fifteen percent were brigadier level or above, that meant there were three thousand brigadier levels. Adding on the twenty general levels, this battalion was terrifying!

The Great Peace City had many experts and if it was a one on one battle, twenty general levels was nothing. But if it was in a battalion with twenty general levels leading three thousand brigadier levels, then the Great Peace City experts who were like a disorderly rabble didn’t have any chance at victory.

“After every raid, if a hostage can defeat a member of them, they can join and survive. The members that are defeated would be

eliminated, and the only path left to them is to die.” Zuo Mo’s gaze turned into the darkness as he said calmly, “They used this method to become stronger. Ming Hui is talented, and what he is most talented at is a kind of jinzhi. With this jinzhi, he created and controls this beastly herd of bandits.”

The more she heard, the paler Princess Xia got. She had heard of the reputation of the Ming Bandits before, but never thought they would be so powerful!

She forced herself to calm down. “Is there no way at all?”

Zuo Mo’s expression was normal as he said, “It is not that we do not have any advantages. We have more experts than they do. They have more general levels but in terms of combat power, they cannot compare to us. If the experts on our side can work together, there may be a chance for a breakthrough.”

Princess Xia did not speak. She understood that the situation was worse than she had imagined.

“But while everyone is strong individually, they all have complex histories and relationships, it is hard for them to trust each other. They are wary and if they encounter danger, who will trust their backs to these other people? They will definitely split apart. Unless it is a marshal, individual power is not useful on a battlefield like this.”

Zuo Mo’s voice was slightly low. “There are so many people, really beyond my expectations.”

“That shows that people trust you deeply,” Princess Xia comforted.

Zuo Mo grimaced. “Even though I was nervous before, I thought I had some chance of breaking through. But now, there is no way, I can only fight head on.”

“We have more people,” Princess Xia said with a forced smile.

“This really is a bunch of rabble. If there was more time, I wouldn’t fear these Ming Bandits, it is a pity there is only three days!” Zuo Mo grimaced. “We can only prepare as best as possible and wait for our fates!”

Princess Xia sighed lightly. “I saw that you were composed these last few days and thought you were confident. So you don’t have any confidence either!”

“You think that what I said that day was to motivate them?” Zuo Mo shook his head. “I only said what I thought. It’s not that I haven’t encountered dangerous and near hopeless situations but it is the first time I have encountered such a dangerous situation. There is almost no hope of victory to be seen!”

Princess Xia was silent and the shock on her face disappeared. She suddenly smiled. “Your words are frightening but why do I not feel afraid? Thinking about it, it is because you are not someone that will sit and wait to be captured.”

“Of course!” Zuo Mo snickered and murderousness appeared on his face. “I have never had the habit of quietly taking abuse!”

Princess Xia covered her smile as she heard this and then sank into silence.

Zuo Mo was also silent as though he was thinking of something.

“This time, we have aimed too high.” Ming Yu Wei’s brow was creased. A hint of worry flashed through her eyes. The Ming Bandits had progressed smoothly these past years, but without a doubt, after this fight, they would be known everywhere.

Ming Hui looked at the black water curtain and his usual bright smile disappeared. His presence was calm and grave and he seemed a completely different person than when he had been speaking to Bu Heng. He smiled slightly and said confidently, “This opportunity is perfect in timing and situation, we have no reason to fail. Even if it is for just the Anti Dragon Claw, we have to do this! If our strength is damaged, there are chances to replenish it, but if we miss this chance, it will be hard to come by one again.”

He floated in the air against the wind. His expression was confident as he said proudly, “With the Anti Dragon Claw, my chances of breaking into marshal level would increase greatly. We have lots of manpower and experts. If I can break into marshal level, we have a chance at the world.”

Ming Yu Wei felt that her brother's ambitions were too grand. At this time, she did not want to pour cold water on his hopes but she still gritted out, "But after this battle, we will have offended too many factions!"

Ming Hui laughed. "It looks so from the surface but for them, these losses are not fatal. Adding on how sensitive the world's situation is, they do not have the attention to spare on us. Who would dare to offend us? Also, with the Anti Dragon Claw, even those factions that have marshals will not dare to underestimate us."

"The Anti Dragon Claw is just a mo weapon" Ming Yu Wei's brow furrowed.

"It isn't just a mo weapon." Ming Hui shook his head and his expression was full of yearning. "If I had the Anti Dragon Claw, even facing a marshal, I would have a chance."

"But a weapon as vicious as the Anti Dragon Claw can only be subdued by a marshal," Ming Yu Wei asked.

"Yes, a general touching the Anti Dragon Claw would be to seek death. However, I have a solution." Ming Hui smiled mysteriously. "If I did not have confidence, would I have made such bold moves? This opportunity fell to us because other people are still wary of the reputation of Great Peace City. No one dared to act so it has benefited us."

He then said, “Bu Heng is special. He pushed from the shadows and he expected that I will be unable to refuse the Anti Dragon Claw and the Mo Skill Stele. It is a pity that he has no hopes of breaking into marshal level. Otherwise, the Green Yaksha Clan would probably be completely different.”

Ming Yu Wei thought of Bu Heng’s conduct and speech. A hint of admiration flashed through her eyes. “Yes, Bu Heng is probably one of the most outstanding individuals that I have met in these recent years. However, from his tone, it seems that he is very wary of Xiao Mo Ge. We should be careful.”

“In front of a battalion, a group of so-called experts can’t do anything,” Ming Hui said unconcernedly.

Ming Yu Wei was just mentioning it and did not keep Xiao Mo Ge on her mind. She had followed her brother for so many years and saw countless geniuses fall under the mo weapons of their battalion.

This was a era of battalions!

Maybe she was worrying too much.

Looking at her confident brother, she felt that she really was too anxious.

This bandit troupe that Brother had worked so hard to develop had never been defeated before.

Great Peace City had many experts but no battalion. The Ming Bandits were well experienced in facing the so-called experts. This time, there were a lot more of the experts but other than the scale, there was nothing different. What she was worried about was that there would be many more fatalities than previously.

Not everyone in Great Peace City had ran over to Zuo Mo's side. There was another group gathered in a corner. They were the Young Master Flower Protecting Alliance. They had gathered with their guards.

"The curtain of water is going to disappear tomorrow." The one who spoke was a young man. His face was ashen.

The other people paled.

"Impossible!"

"Really? Where did you hear it from?"

The people spoke over each other.

"From the other side." Wang Shen continued. His expression was grave. "It will be difficult tomorrow." He suddenly asked, "Where have all your reinforcements travelled to?"

“They should be here soon!”

“Still too early!”

“They will arrive in a week or so!”

At this time, one young master suddenly raised his arm and said, “My uncle sent a message to me three days ago. He said that he might arrive the day after tomorrow.”

Wang Shen became alert. “How many people does he have?”

“He has a battalion but I don’t know the numbers.” This young master said docilely. His surname was Wu and his family background was deep.

Wang Shen couldn’t help but show joy. “Great! The Wu Family Battalion is elite and strong. We will be saved!”

Then some of the other young masters reported that the reinforcements their families sent were not far from Great Peace City and that they had mostly sent battalions.

The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was a fatal temptation for these families. Their determination could be seen from the fact they had sent battalions.

“But what to do tomorrow?” one person suddenly asked. Everyone became silent and turned to look at Wang Shen.

Wang Shen smiled and said, “Did you forget the other side? They have more people and are a bigger target. The Ming Bandits will first pay attention to them. The harder they fight, the more time they buy us.” He then said sternly, “Everyone, hide well and do not venture out. If you offend the Ming Bandits, we all die!”

Everyone agreed.

Wang Shen did not forget to increase morale. “After a few days, our battalions will arrive and that will be when both sides will be wounded. That is the best situation for us!”

The morale of the group rose and they all became excited. They discussed how to kill the Ming Bandits and Xiao Mo Ge to win the favor of the three princesses.

No one noticed that two people were discussing in a dark corner.

“What do we do now?” Nanmen Xue asked in a deep voice, “The Mo Skill Stele was destroyed by Lin Qian but that Anti Dragon Claw is not ordinary. I don’t believe that Marshal Yu will not be moved.”

The other smiled slightly. “You will know when the time comes.”

Chapter 631 - Charge

When the light of the sun started to peek above the horizon, the silent Great Peace City seemed to awaken from its slumber.

The silence was quickly broken by shouting. The unit commanders were shouting at the top of their lungs, and the drum of footsteps filled the Great Peace City. The expressions on people's faces were quickly changing; from solemn silence to excitement and terror. Some people were trembling but every person gritted their teeth and entered the battle formations based on the short practice they had previously.

The unit commanders made their way back and forth as they tried to rouse the spirits of their soldiers.

Even though they had never practiced a battle formation before, this formation that was made of tens of thousand of people caused every person that was participating to feel excitement!

Even Zuo Mo had never directed so many people before. Tens of thousands of people were divided into formations that were arranged in one corner of Great Peace City.

Both Zuo Mo and Miao Jun knew that while they had lot of people, they could not withstand a charge from the enemy. All of their preparations were for these greenhorns that had never experienced such circumstances to require them to survive the first charge of the enemy.

If they managed to survive the first charge and not scatter, these greenhorns might get accustomed to the atmosphere of the battlefield, and their advantage in numbers would slowly be realized.

However, Zuo Mo grimaced when he looked at these people with terror on their faces. His heart filled with worry.

Taking these greenhorns into a battle to the death against the wolfish Ming Bandits was something that Zuo Mo considered the most unprofitable business he had conducted in his life.

But, Zuo Mo did not regret it.

Since he was going to fight anyway, he would make it a grand one!

Looking over, the little formations were so packed that Zuo Mo felt his scalp prickle. There seemed to be a bone-rattling hot flow in his body.

It wasn't often that anyone would get to command a battle of such scale.

The water curtain was thinning at a visible rate. The noise started to died down. The moment the water curtain finally disappeared, all of Great Peace City became completely silent.

The water curtain shattered with a snap and a mist formed.

The murderous Ming Bandits appeared in people's view. The crowd shifted, and their terrified expressions increased.

When the scenery of Great Peace City appeared in front of the Ming Bandits, the Ming Bandits stilled.

Along the edge of Great Peace City's ruins, small and big battle of interlocking battle formations spread out like a dense patchwork that covered over half of Great Peace City.

"Oh, they are planning to fight back!" A vicious smile appeared on Ming Hui's face. "But they want to fight back with such a group of rabble, it really is"

He shook his head as he spoke to himself, as though he did not know what to say. It caused his commanders to laugh around him.

"It's good, it will provide amusement for us. Otherwise, it will be very dull," one of the commanders said loudly, "I heard that there are many personages in there!"

He emphasized "personages" and desirous expression appeared on many people's faces.

Those personages were usually high status and now they were about to cry and groan under the hooves of their steeds. An excitement they never had experienced before began to rise from within. Their expressions became uncontrollably savage.

“I heard that all three princesses are great beauties!” Another commander licked his slightly dry lips and said with a snicker, “How about it Boss? Give them to us!”

Ming Hui’s laughter suddenly stopped. He said in a deep voice, “Yes! Three princesses, will be given to the three with the most merit. It will be up to you to win yourself a beauty!”

Ming Yu Wei frowned slightly but didn’t speak.

The other commanders had savage gazes, heated desire and greed exposed without disguise.

“Boss! I will go first!” A man with a hard face jumped out.

He was Bao Xiong, one of the mid-ranked commanders among the Ming Bandits and a very strong individually. If it wasn’t that he lacked skill in command, he would definitely have become a gold battle general. However, while he had not become a gold battle general, based on his outstanding individual power, bravery, and bloodthirst, he liked to charge in the first wave. His subordinates were all battle-crazy, brave and vicious. They were one of the most powerful vanguards in the Ming Bandits.

Ming Hui nodded. “Alright! Charge and test them out! Also, Tie Lang, Da Hu, cover their flanks and shield Bao Xiong.”

Bao Xiong acknowledged the order with a vicious light flashing in

his eyes. He was extremely excited. The other two battle generals also stood up with equal excitement on their faces.

In a few moments, the three battalions had finished their preparations.

There were one thousand people in each troop. Looking down at the densely packed mo below them, they were filled with fighting spirit.

Bao Xiong raised the large axe in his hand and shouted, "Kill!"

Without another word, he led the troop and dove down!

The other two troops were not willing to fall behind. They drew out two crescents as they headed to the two sides of the enormous wall of formations below them.

————

The Ming Bandits came thunderously, their ear-piercing howls like the wails of ghosts coming to take people's spirits.

The air suddenly seemed to boil.

Bao Xiong Battalion continued to accelerate like a black storm cloud forming and suddenly arriving.

Zoom zoom zoom!

The high howl gradually became deeper. A shock that was hard to describe flashed across people's minds!

Terror uncontrollably spread. The formations on the ground shifted. Most of them had never seen such a terrifying charge before.

“Do not panic! Do not panic!”

“Whoever flees will be killed!”

The unit commands yelled and tried to control the situation. But there were still people that lost control of their emotions, turned and tried to flee.

Pew pew pew!

A drop of water pierced through their chests. Qi Diao Yu who was nearby had a frosty expression and he did not even turn to look.

Anyone that turned to flee did not survive.

The other people immediately ended their own thoughts of escape.

At this moment, the shouts of the unit commanders rose in waves, “Prepare!” “Prepare!”

They seemed to wake up. Looking around as dots of light slowly lit up in the surroundings, they unconsciously followed, The light of the battalion continued to spread.

————

Bao Xiong enjoyed the feeling of a charge. He was immersed in an extreme excitement, his eyes were completely red as his mo skill continued to gather.

He could see the restlessness below, especially the idiots that turned to run. He couldn't help but show disdain. They were really rabble!

When he neared, he saw the terror on the people's faces, their trembling legs. This caused him to feel great pleasure which flowed through his entire body like lightning.

Truly a herd of white and tender lambs!

He suddenly raised the large axe in his hand. The black axe flickered with a cold light. The roiling black mist shrouded his body, and killing intent was like the light that rose in the dark night!

Almost at the same time, the combat mo behind him raised the

mo weapons in their hands.

Balls of white light rose from the battle formations. They were like fish that smelt blood that gathered towards the black axe shrouded in black mist.

The large black axe seemed to have a long five-colored tail as it drew out a dazzling streak in the air!

The distance between the two sides was decreasing quickly!

Seeing the time had arrived, the axe in Bao Xiong's hand suddenly chopped down as he shouted, "Kill!"

"Kill!"

The people behind him howled angrily and struck down with the mo weapons in their hands.

The light suddenly increased!

Countless rays of light formed an enormous five-colored axe energy that was hundreds of zhang long. It came from the sky at the battalion below.

The moment the axe energy formed, hair-raising killing intent suddenly swept towards the ground like a twister!

Seeing the blood drain out of the faces of the people below, Bao Xiong felt unspeakably good.

Just as he was imagining all the people below being destroyed in this blow, the rising shouts interrupted his fantasies.

“Kill!”

“Release!”

Bao Xiong’s snarl froze upon his face. His field of view was immediately taken over by a tide of energy!

There wasn’t any room to dodge!

A strong feeling of danger made him feel he had dropped into an icy crevasse. His burning blood instantly became icy cold!

Everything in front of him was white, and he could not see anything else. His mind was astounded, how was this possible

“Dodg-”

Before he could shout anymore, he was swallowed by this furious wave of light!

He did not have the time to wail before he lost consciousness.

When a battalion of thirty two thousand people attacked together, when over thirty thousand attacks merged together, the light that was created was as bright as the sun and had caused the entire sky to turn white!

Bao Xiong Battalion were like the dry branches struggling in the flood and was immediately swallowed.

The enormous axe that Bao Xiong Battalion had formed with all their power cut through the angry wave and crashed into the battalions on the ground!

Boom!

An enormous explosion, rock flew everywhere, and an astounding shockwave of air rushed into the surroundings.

A pit that formed was astounding to see among the battle formation, it was like one piece had been erased!

Bao Xiong's blow had struck five battle formations and a battle formation of two thousand people had been completely erased!

They had lost over three thousand people!

And almost at the same moment, the two battalions on the sides acted and the same attacks appeared.

Two enormous explosions!

Two enormous holes appeared on the ground but the two other Ming Bandit battalions were not as strong as Bao Xiong. The damage they caused was much smaller but even so, the wounds and deaths at both locations had reached more than four thousand!

Wails and cries rang out.

Those who had never seen such a scene before, many panicked, especially the battle formations that were closest to the attacks!

Screams seemed to spread among the crowd like a plague. No matter how the unit commanders shouted, it was useless and the troops looked like they were about to break apart.

Zuo Mo was expressionless. A hit of sharpness flashed through his eyes as he waved his hand at the side.

He had predicted this situation before.

“Those that lower army morale, kill!”

“Those that lower army morale, kill!”

The loud shouts rang out over Great Peace City in unison.

In this moment, countless pillars of blood shot up in the battle formations. Hundreds of mo that had lost courage and fled were killed where they stood!

Such powerful and bloody tactics immediately stunned every person!

All of Great Peace City was silent, so silent the drop of a pin could be heard.

Many people had ashen faces but no one dared to move. They were quiet and silent.

Princess Xia and the others had their faces turn white, and their extremities felt cold. None of them had expected Xiao Mo Ge who was usually cheerful and smiling to have such a vicious decisiveness!

Chapter 632 - Weakness

Zuo Mo slowly floated off the ground. His expression was cold, his eyes as sharp as a sword, and he gave off a pressuring aura.

The ashen-faced people unconsciously raised their heads. The blank and terrified gazes gathered on Zuo Mo's body.

“Those that retreat, kill! Those that do not follow orders, kill! Those that lower morale, kill!”

The three “kill” were a gust of cold wind that blew across Great Peace City. The slightly thin figure in the air was reflected in the terrified eyes of the people.

“Hold on to your mo weapons. The following clash will be even more cruel, even more intense, and even more people will die.”

Zuo Mo's tone was cool. He did not comfort the crowd, and treated them like his subordinates, having to remind them that the battle was about to begin as though this was a usual affair. The battle was just beginning and what would occur later was even more intense. But for some reason, his words carried an unusual power and caused the terror on the faces of the people to decrease.

In their eyes, Xiao Mo Ge appeared calm and composed, unpanicked. The people here who had lost courage immediately found something to hold onto and gradually calmed.

“Just now, we killed three thousand Ming bandits!”

The crowd shifted. The great majority of people were still anxious but some of the more daring people became excited. Three thousand! The Ming Bandits only had twenty thousand people in total! For them, three thousand could be considered to be a heavy blow.

“They will be afraid, terrified, and angry. The following attacks will be even stronger.” Zuo Mo’s voice was flat and cool.

More and more people started to understand. Their gazes slowly became bright and the terror was replaced by excitement. They suddenly found that the Ming Bandits were still made from flesh, they were mortal – they could die!

They suddenly felt that victory was not so impossible.

If a few more clashes like this occurred, wouldn’t the Ming Bandits be defeated?

The people who had found hope again had slightly excited expressions.

“Hold on, and we will win!”

Zuo Mo’s voice was not arousing, nor sorrowful. His calm yet confident voice echoed above Great Peace City.

The crowd quieted again as they unconsciously gripped the mo weapons in their hands. Everyone's eyes had brightened and they were filled with hope.

Ming Hui's gaze was dark.

He had heard all of Zuo Mo's speech and did not attack again. The other Ming Bandits also showed slight fear. In one exchange, all three thousand bandits had died and not one had manage to escape. They had never encountered something like this before.

Just now, that tsunami-like attack had caused even the sun to appear dim in comparison. The lambs had suddenly showed their fangs and surprised them.

"This person must be Xiao Mo Ge. As expected, he is brave and cunning." Ming Hui looked at the Anti Dragon Claw on Zuo Mo's back, and his pupils contracted.

Ming Yu Wei's face was also astounded but her attention was not on the Anti Dragon Claw but Zuo Mo's words. She had heard Zuo Mo's cool, murderous and calming words, she had seen the terrified people gradually settle down, and their determination to resist grow even stronger.

The collapse of morale they had predicted did not occur.

Such a charismatic person!

“Their battle formation setup is very unique.” Suddenly, Ming Yu Wei spoke up with a serious expression. She was the most outstanding battle general of the Ming Bandits. Her judgement always received attention from Ming Hui.

Everyone finally noticed the patchwork of battle formations.

They were all experienced. Before, they had not paid attention. Now that Ming Yu Wei pointed it out and they looked closely, they immediately noticed what was there.

“Xiao Mo Ge is cunning!”

Among the exclamations came sharp inhales.

The Ming Bandits were in the sky and could see the setup below clearly. They finally noticed that Xiao Mo Ge had spent great effort on the arrangement of the battle formations.

The dense patchwork of battle formations was like a hedgehog. No matter which direction they approached from, they would face attacks from at least twenty battle formations.

Even if the other did not have a battalion, did not have a battle general to direct all the power, but a simultaneous attack from

over twenty thousand people was enough to cause a headache for any battle general.

A battle through numbers!

This phrase flashed across everyone's minds. The commanders looked at each other and did not know what to do. This wasn't the first time they had encountered a situation like this, but their past experiences told them that any group of civilians, no matter how large, were a herd of lambs when they faced a battalion. If they took a few losses and charged at the enemy, the rabble would scatter and then the enemy would be easy prey.

But what was in front of them was not the same as any of their experiences.

They had lost three thousand people but the enemy had lost seven to eight thousand. Rationally, the enemy ranks should have started to flee and collapse now!

But they did not flee. Xiao Mo Ge's vicious and decisive act hadn't just stunned all of Great Peace City, but also astounded the Ming Bandits. What surprised them even more was that Xiao Mo Ge had soothed the anxiety and fear of Great Peace City with just a few words.

When had these normal people gained such strong and resilient minds?

Even the Ming Bandits that had killed their way from mountains of corpses could not understand what was occurring in front of them!

Then Ming Yu Wei pointed out what was special about the other's setup. This caused them to all become more wary of Xiao Mo Ge.

"Is there a solution?" Ming Hui spoke. He knew that his younger sister was very smart and always relied on her for battle tactics.

Ming Yu Wei's gaze stared at the enormous battle formation battle under them without a word.

They all knew that she was pondering how to break the formation. They didn't dare to breathe in fear of disturbing her.

A moment later, her eyes suddenly lit up and she said, "This battle formation belt is unique, but it is not invincible!"

Everyone became alert and perked up to listen.

"They have many people, but they are not a true battalion. They do have some cooperation, but when pressured they cannot fight for long. We only need to use the smaller battalions to harass their formation at range and force them to expend their strength. Over time, they wouldn't be able to maintain this. At that moment, we will charge straight at the center. If we can take down Xiao Mo Ge, their ranks will definitely collapse and flee!"

“That is right!”

“Yes, yes! We will dart in and out of range, they won’t know whether to fight or not, they will be frustrated!”

“Good method!”

The commanders gave their praise. Ming Hui also showed joy. Ming Yu Wei’s plan was directed straight at the other’s weakness. While fighting with numbers was effective, but the weakness of the enemy being untrained civilians was something that could not changed.

“Alright! Let’s do this!” Ming Hui ordered.

The commanders were aching to start.

Looking on as the enemy harassed their formation from the edge of their range, and how their attacks kept missing the enemy, many people had ugly expressions.

“The Ming Bandits definitely are not ordinary people!” Princess Xin’s expression was terrible.

Princess Xia also showed a thread of worry. “They are forcing us

to waste our power.”

Almost everyone could see what the Ming Bandits intended. But there was no use in that. No one had a good solution. The Ming Bandits saw their weakness and did not disguise their intentions.

Everyone unconsciously looked at Xiao Mo Ge nearby.

When they saw Xiao Mo Ge had a calm face, their mood immediately calmed down as well.

He would definitely have a way!

Almost at the same time, many people had the same thought.

“We cannot continue like this!” Standing next to Zuo Mo, Zhu Ke couldn’t help but speak. Worry floated onto their faces. If this continued, the outer battle formations would not be able to continue and collapse.

Once the collapse began, all of the army would collapse.

If this was a well-trained battalion, the troops could be rotated out, but right now, they only had these greenhorns that had been trained for two days. If they tried to rotate out at troops this time, it would lead to chaos.

But if they did not switch at this time, collapse was just a matter of time.

Zuo Mo nodded. He didn't speak and indicated to Miao Jun.

Soon, the outermost battle formations slowly moved back, and the battle formations on the inside slowly advanced.

Changing formations for the well-trained battalions was not an easy matter, but for people with two days of training, it was impossible.

Chaos spread.

The Ming Bandits perceptively noticed their chance. They dove down howling. The killing intent flooded the air as they charged!

The battle formations on the outside became even more panicked.

The panic spread. The already unstable battle formations became even more chaotic.

At this time, a Ming Bandit commander's eyes suddenly lit up. His heart beat rapidly! He noticed that at some time, a faintly discernable path of attack appeared in front of him.

The path led straight to Xiao Mo Ge! He then looked at the crowd around Xiao Mo Ge. The princesses and other high status people were among them!

He was so excited he almost stopped breathing. The Heavens had blessed them with a good opportunity!

If he could capture this group, the battle would be finished!

What was in front of him was the fattest piece of meat. If he could swallow it, it would be the biggest accomplishment in this battle.

His gaze burned!

Without another word, he ordered, "Charge there!"

His battalion was well trained and did not hesitate to charge towards where their battle general had pointed!

As the Ming Bandits charged into their battle formations, it caused the people of Great Peace City to be wary the coming attack. But the people closest to the battalion were not a match for these wolfish Ming Bandits

Blood and flesh flew and wails rang out endlessly!

This Ming Bandit Battalion was like a sharp and red hot knife

cutting through butter. It immediately penetrated the ranks and went straight at Xiao Mo Ge!

In the air, Ming Hui's eyes suddenly lit up. His cheeks flushed and he pointed at the crack that was growing. He shouted, "Everyone, attack!"

The Ming Bandits who were barely able to hold themselves back immediately complied!

Killing intent filled the sky!

Chapter 633 - Center Formation

“Protect Daren!” Shu Long’s angry shout exploded like lightning among the panicked screaming. The other people around Zuo Mo seemed to wake up. They found to their shock that danger had snuck so close to them, and without realizing it, the Ming Bandits had charged and had arrived in front of them!

The Ming Bandits had gotten so close vicious and savage expressions of the Ming Bandits could be clearly seen. They could even see the pulsing muscles on these faces and the trembling whiskers

And that animalistic and bloodthirsty murderousness!

Zhu Ke’s head rang and his expression changed. He suddenly reacted and shouted at the top of his lungs, “Protect the Princess!”

The personal guards of each faction sprinted from where they had been. Leaving the formation belt a mess, in disarray with people falling back on every side. People turned and ran like crazy.

These people had been held together by Zuo Mo. Now that the enemy was heading straight for Zuo Mo, their weak cooperation was immediately exposed.

Terror and hopelessness furiously spread throughout their ranks!

The enormous battle formation belt immediately collapsed.

The guards of the princesses uncaringly abandoned all the other people. Their eyes were red as they sprinted to where the princess were! Guard Camp, and Celestial Plant Guard were also sprinting against the fleeing flood of people to fly to where Zuo Mo was!

Princess Xia's face was covered in terror. Her complexion was white. The panicked crowds were running everywhere, the snarls of the Ming Bandits entered her eyes. All she could hear was the sound of killing, shouts and screams!

She was bewildered. How had it come to this?

Her gaze moved around blankly. Her gaze stopped on a thin figure.

Slowly, her eyes became focused and a thread of hope rose in her heart.

As usual his face was still indifferent and wore a cold expression but this time, inside the indifference, she noticed something that made her mind tremble.

He was not panicking.

Zuo Mo stood upright with an indifferent expression as though

he did not see what was happening around him.

The Ming Bandits rushed forward extremely quickly. The first battalion that fell had shown the skill of the Ming Bandits. In only a blink, they breached the outer formations and reached the center formation!

Almost all the general levels and important personages were gathered in the center formation.

This Ming Bandit troop seemed to poke the hornet's nest.

The battle immediately reached a high!

Mo that could cultivate to colonel and general level were experienced in battle. When they realized that it was their lives were on the line, the power they could produce was astounding.

They were not as well-trained as the Ming Bandits, nor could they work together like them. But the chaotic situation and the extremely short distance between them made it perfect for them to fight.

Zhu Ke, Xia, and the middle-aged attendant who were all near marshal level were unstoppable in this moment!

Zhu Ke moved like a ghost. Once he entered the Ming Bandit ranks, everywhere he passed, bloody mist sprouted up behind him. Xia was persistent and his steps were as heavy as mountains. No

one could stop his advance. The long spear in his hand seemed to weigh three thousand catties. Blood and flesh flew when it came into contact with his spear. The middle-aged attendant formed a claw with her hands and grabbed at the air. Those Ming Bandits that were targeted were ripped into pieces like puppets and died before they could make a sound.

The other experts were also in a killing furry. Like countless roaming fish, they passed through the formation and engaged in close combat!

Almost eighty percent of the experts on the Great Peace Mo Rankings were here. Yu Shuang had not recovered from his wounds, but Chang Yuan Hao was still healthy. Adding on Qi Diao Yu and the others, this place held the elite of Great Peace City!

In almost a flash, this Ming Bandit troop died. Even its battle general was killed in five moves when Zhu Ke and Xia working together.

This result caused people to cheer and dance.

Ming Hui's expression was normal. In his eyes, these people at the center formation were just fighting within a cage. Those experts were troublesome, but if he was willing to spend the time and effort, he had many ways to deal with them.

Even the strongest expert could not beat overwhelming numbers!

Battle generals focused the attacks of the entire battalion. Even though their attacks were not as varied as individual attacks, they were powerful and not something that an individual person could stop!

Even experts were unable to withstand the charge of a battalion, especially experts that could not work together.

A cold light flashed through Ming Hui's eyes. "Old Tu, Da Hong, go scatter them!"

The two battle generals acknowledged the order. At this time, Great Peace City's battle formation belt had scattered as people fled. The barriers defending the center formation had decreased greatly.

The two had burning gazes. The center formation that had lost its shielding was like a beauty who was undressed and perfectly displayed in front of them.

Looking at the determination and spirit on the faces of their subordinates, the two didn't feel afraid at all.

They did not feel sorrow about the deaths of their compatriots. It was the opposite. When the battalion had scattered the crowds previously, and expended the power of the experts, it made the situation advantageous to them.

A group that could not work together was delusional to think it

could withstand a battalion's charge!

The two exchanged a look and found the fighting spirit in each other's eyes.

“You go left, I'll go right!”

“Alright!”

Without any delay, the two left on their own.

Guard Camp had assembled the quickest even though they were not skilled in speed. Before the charging Ming Bandit battalion had been exterminated, they had finished gathering and stood silently around Zuo Mo.

They were fully alert. The battle just now had not expended their power.

Guard Camp with calm expressions surrounded Zuo Mo, who wore an indifferent expression. People couldn't resist looking again. In the middle of the chaotic battlefield, they were so eye-catching.

“Haha! The Ming Bandits are only worth this much!” In the middle formation, a brawny man couldn't help but say.

“Yes, someone really exaggerated their abilities. What was the use in making such a fuss, I thought that they really had some skill!” Another man who had a hard face said disdainfully with narrowed eyes.

Shu Long and the others glared angrily.

Crack!

The neck of the man who had just spoken suddenly bent at a strange angle. His eyes were wide, his face like a balloon!

Ceng Lian'er serenely spoke, “I do not like hearing this kind of posturing.”

Everyone inhaled and looked in shock at Ceng Lian'er. This female had fought Lin Qian head on and her power was deep and hard to predict!

Having finished gathering, the Celestial Planet Guards had slightly ashen faces. Miss' power, skill, and thoughts were all hard to predict.

Zhu Ke was slightly displeased by Ceng Lian'er action. He was about to speak when his sleeve was pulled. Princess Wan was pulling him as she shook her head.

Zhu Ke stilled and became silent.

The center formation became silent.

“They are about to attack.”

Suddenly, Xiao Mo Ge’s cool voice interrupted this silence.

He seemed to not have noticed the movements behind him. He nodded at Shu Long who immediately understood. Guard Camp started to move.

Zuo Mo then turned and said to Miao Jun, “Go.”

Miao Jun did not speak and looked deeply at Zuo Mo before turning. A short while later, the Celestial Planet Guards and Tang Fei Battalion finished gathering.

“Do you need help?” Princess Xia asked worriedly.

Zuo Mo shook his head. “No, be careful, the other is about to attack.”

His voice was not loud but everyone heard it clearly. The crowd immediately shifted. They had all seen the power of the Ming Bandit’s charge. They might have just killed one thousand of the Ming Bandits, but everyone understood if all of the Ming Bandits all charged, they would be in danger!

Zhu Ke and the others were the strongest among this group, but even an expert of his level could not directly face the charge of a thousand-member battalion.

Two battalions separated from the the ranks of the Ming Bandits. They even reorganized themselves to guarantee that their charge would be powerful.

At this time, the crowds had not completely dissipated. However, there was no one in one li of the center formation.

This distance was enough for them to prepare a charge!

“Kill!”

The two battle generals shouted angrily. The two battalions were like two floods bursting through the dam!

“Kill!”

The unified shouts of two thousand people shook the surroundings. The sky full of killing intent rushed down at Zuo Mo and the others!

The two battalions worked well together, one on the right and one on the left. The enemy would not know whether to protect the head or the tail.

A howl that was soul-shaking once again filled the air.

At this moment, in the center formation where Zuo Mo was, a ball of grey mist suddenly rose. Almost at the same time, Shu Long and Miao Jun who were in the grey mist shouted at the same time, “Kill!”

“[Mist Hand Seat]!”

The people who were surrounded by the grey mist exclaimed. Even Zhu Ke, Yu Shuang and the others showed astonishment. They were knowledgeable and knew that such a practiced [Mist Hand Seat] would only come from a person with a mo physique!

However, their attention quickly shifted to the incoming collision between the two forces.

Zhu Ke and the others wondered. Xiao Mo Ge seemed to have prepared for this situation beforehand. Had he planned this? But no matter what, they did not have a chance at a breakthrough.

Did he have something else up his sleeve?

————

The two Ming Bandit troops clearly had absorbed the lesson of the battalion which had fallen before them. They made a loud

ruckus but they held some strength back.

When the grey mist appeared without warning and covered the entire center formation, the two felt slightly wary.

From where Miao Jun was, an enormous blue blade energy broke through the mist and headed for the battalion opposite it!

“Good move!” Da Hong’s eyes flashed viciously. He was overjoyed as he attacked.

A faintly red wheel of light flew straight at the blade energy!

Boom!

A great explosion occurred between the two battalions!

The battle generals on both sides had no intentions of holding back. In this moment, they also attacked!

No matter how strong the shock wave from the explosion was, the strange grey mist was not affected at all. Almost at the same time the explosion happened, from the grey mist, countless arm-length blue blade energies shot out like rain.

They zipped through the air and covered the sky.

Going against the air wave of the explosion, the blade energies were affected. Their paths became chaotic and hard to predict!

Da Hong's expression suddenly changed. A phrase suddenly jumped out of his mind. Gold battle general! The other was definitely a gold battle general!

Such a practiced charge was something only a gold battle general could perform!

Chapter 634 - Cut Off

Gold battle general!

There were many that saw this attack. Those that were gathered here were the best experts of Great Peace City, who wasn't knowledgeable? But no one had thought it would be Miao Jun. In a flash, people finally recalled Xiao Mo Ge and Miao Jun's battle. In the past, people had only known that Miao Jun had lost to Xiao Mo Ge. Many people had seen the battle in person but no one had thought that Miao Jun was also a gold battle general.

Many people showed expressions of vexation. It had to be said that in this present chaotic state of affairs, a gold battle general was much more valuable than an expert.

There were also many people that had thoughtful expressions. They found to their shock that Xiao Mo Ge had experts among his subordinates, and strong generals! Some other people were pondering had Xiao Mo Ge realized that Miao Jun was a gold battle general back then?

The intense battle quickly caused everyone to suppress their puzzlement and turn back to observe the battlefield.

The ongoing battle was important to them.

Ye Ling's [Mist Hand Seat] covered all of the center formation. With the help of the mo embryo, Ye Ling had managed to cultivate his mo physique. If his Grey Camp was present, his offensive

capabilities would be multiple of what it was before. Right now, he could only squander his talents doing what he had.

But the grey mist gave the best concealment to the middle formation.

Including the position where Shu Long was.

Shu Long's Guard Camp was just one hundred people, yet these one hundred people were much stronger than they had been previously. Shu Long had also processed a mo embryo. A Wen, Nan Yue, and the other core members had also exploded in power.

But after Shu Long's shout of "Kill," they became a silent beast hidden in the mist.

Several of the enemy attacks entered the grey mist and didn't even cause a stir.

Under the grey mist, Guard Camp was like a black hole that could swallow everything.

The Ming Bandit commander's expressions became grave. At this time, they had the advantage of offensive capability. They did not fear Xiao Mo Ge and the other fighting back but they feared that there would be ambushes and traps inside the mist.

The waves of attacks were swallowed and didn't cause any response. The damned grey mist made it impossible to see what

was happening inside.

Old Tu hesitated slightly before he quickly made a decision. Charge!

He understood Ming Hui very well. Ming Hui appeared as though he was a very relaxed commander, but at such a crucial time, if they did not do their best, Ming Hui would execute them without even a frown.

But Old Tu was careful and not as rash as Bao Xiong. He only had one hundred mo soldiers leave the ranks and leap into the grey mist.

Old Tu's eyes were cold. Even if these one hundred mo soldiers were the elite of his subordinates, his expression didn't change at all.

He stared closely at the grey mist and waited for the moment his subordinates charged into the grey mist.

The other nine hundred people silently waited.

One hundred mo soldiers howled angrily as they charged crazily at the grey mist. Their faces were twisted, madness, hopelessness, and bloodthirst mixed together in their reddened eyes.

It was just one hundred people charging but there was suddenly a suffocating presence.

The grey mist remained strangely quiet.

The strange blue blade energies shrieked as they viciously pierced Da Hong's battalion.

Pew pew pew!

Countless bloody flowers blossomed in the air. The sharp blade energies easily penetrated the bodies of the Ming Bandits.

Wails sounded, and seventy to eighty figures lost control and fell down.

Da Hong's battalion was left missing a piece as though it had been bitten off.

A blue energy suddenly flashed pass Da Hong's face, and caused a small bloody mark. His expression was dark. The other was stronger than he had imagined!

Gold battle general. As expected of a gold battle general!

The other's moves were much more skilled than his. Both sides had attacked at the same time and the other's second attack wave had come so fast that they were unable to react. His subordinates

didn't have the time to dodge or fight back before they were hit!

Other than some that had high level mo skills and managed to stop the attack, almost all the other mo soldiers died where they were.

The other's ability as a battle general far surpassed him!

Watching from afar, Ming Hui's eyes moved. These people fighting back were much hardier and stronger than he had predicted. When Miao Jun acted, all the commanders in the Ming Bandits changed expression. Ming Yu Wei's expression also became serious. They only had one thought, it was lucky this person did not have many people in his battalion!

If this gold battle general had two to three thousand people in his battalion, then the Ming Bandits would suffer great losses this time.

Fortunately, everyone had clearly saw that Miao Jun only had seven hundred or so people.

Even the cleverest wife could not make a meal without any rice. No matter how strong a gold battle general was, if he did not have a matching battalion, his threat level was much lower.

"Gui San, go help Da Hong." Ming Yu Wei did not hesitate and ordered.

“Yes!” A man with stark features came out and acknowledged.

Everyone finally sighed in relief. Ming Hui’s expression cleared up slightly. With a nod, he said, “Da Hong is good on the front lines, and there is nothing more to be said of his individual bravery. However, he is slightly lacking as a battle general. It is normal for him to lose slightly against an expert like this.”

The expressions of other people eased when they heard this.

They had also been slightly scared by Xiao Mo Ge’s endless bag of tricks, their confidence unconsciously being damaged. Only when Ming Hui said this did they manage to realize it.

Yes, no matter how many tricks the other had, he didn’t have an outstanding battalion. With only commanders and no soldiers, he was just struggling for nothing.

“Yes! No matter how many tricks they have, when our army charges, everyone will turn to ashes!” a subordinate shouted.

Everyone’s expressions eased and they nodded in agreement.

Just at this time, wails suddenly came from the grey mist. Everyone tensed.

Supported with just his own power, Ye Ling’s Mist Hand Seat finally could not tolerate the charge of Old Tu’s battalion and crumbled. The scene inside the mist was displayed in front of all

the people.

Yet everyone was stunned by this scene!

Countless dismembered limbs were scattered near the center formation. Shu Long's troop had set up a very strange battle formation. At some unknown time, many strange pillars -carved in script had appeared around them.

Old Tu seemed crazy as he charged at the battle formation. However, this battle formation that was just made up of one hundred people was like a meat grinder. No matter the number of people, they would be ground to paste as they charged in.

Bloody mist exploded and then rained to the ground successively.

Under the feet of Shu Long's battle formation, blood flowed like a river and the soil was dyed red. The fishy tang of blood spread. The ground covered in broken and cut limbs made this place seem like hell!

Old Tu had gone crazy due to the scene. He continuously charged the other's battle formation as though he didn't want to live!

Yet the other's battle formation was as steady as rock, unmovable.

Ming Yu Wei's expression really changed this time as she exclaimed, "Mo Grinding Disk!"

She paused and it appeared as though she didn't dare to believe her eyes for three whole breaths! But she was had extraordinary composure and quickly recovered. She shouted harshly, "He Lang, reinforce Old Tu from the side!"

"Yes!" A man with a cold expression affirmed.

Ming Yu Wei suddenly gritted her teeth and raised her head. She said with determination, "Big Brother, we should charge!"

She had a bad feeling.

Ming Hui stilled. The situation was not clear yet. Even he felt slightly scared at the other's endless tricks. His original intention had been for his subordinates to test the waters and after the enemy strategy was clear, then he would crush them in one go.

But he was a ruthless and formidable person. He knew that if his younger sister recommended this, then it really was a pivotal moment. He knew that he was not his younger sister's equal at directing battle and he usually followed what his sister said.

Hearing this, his gaze became stern and murderousness flashed. He nodded without hesitation and shouted, "Prepare to charge!"

Everyone's hearts shook, and they roared their acknowledgement!

At this moment, Shu Long and Miao Jun's battalions surged with power; unleashing powerful attacks. In that moment, they actually suppressed the Ming Bandits that were now twice their number!

All the Ming Bandit generals paused with disbelief. No matter how many tricks they had, they could not do something like this!

Ming Yu Wei reacted the fastest. "Careful, they are about to flee!"

As expected, the two troops at the center formation dropped everything and charged towards a group of fleeing Great Peace City citizens.

They wanted to use the chaos to escape!

A cold smile floated on Ming Hui's lips. He suddenly shouted, "Kill!"

The Ming Bandits responded and all of them accelerated. Like a thundering flooded, they headed to Xiao Mo Ge's group.

The two sides were extremely fast. Ming Hui's fighting spirit boiled and only Xiao Mo Ge was inside his view!

His gaze was tightly focused on the dragon claw shaped object on Xiao Mo Ge's back. The Anti Dragon Claw! Starting from today, the Anti Dragon Claw was his!

With this thought, his body felt heated, and his gaze also burned.

Xiao Mo Ge and the others were also fleeing very quickly and had almost reached the crowd.

They wanted to flee?

A dark and cold smile floated on Ming Hui's mouth. He seemed to not see the panicked crowds along the way and his gaze was closely locked onto Xiao Mo Ge! The Ming Bandits also ignored the crowds that they flew by.

Xiao Mo Ge and the others were clearly slowed down by the speed of the princesses. The distance between them quickly decreased.

The Ming Bandits charged at Xiao Mo Ge and the others with a destructive presence.

Every battle general gave their all at this time. Their gazes were excited as fighting spirit burned. The attacks on their hands were waiting to be let out. When the distance grew closer, their attacks would drown Xiao Mo Ge and the others.

Under such an attack, no one would manage to survive!

Xiao Mo Ge and the others had entered their range of attack but Ming Hui did not give the order to attack. He licked his lips like a cunning wolf waiting for a chance to give a fatal strike.

A bit closer, just a bit more, and their attacks would manage to completely cover all of them!

At this time a vast cold killing essence suddenly covered the Ming Bandits, like the icy wind that rushed upwards from the ground!

This wave came very suddenly without any warning. The killing essence was so cold that in one instant, the Ming Bandits found that a layer of frost had appeared on their bodies.

An enemy attack!

Ming Hui's mind rang out.

“Kill!” The cold voice seemed to be filled with a strange power. Everyone's hearts jumped.

Before the sound dissipated, the unrestrained killing essence was like an exploding volcano that shot at them.

The next scene caused their souls to almost leave their bodies!

Chapter 635 - The Blade Unsheathed

Numerous figure suddenly leapt out from the panicked crowded under the Ming Bandits. In a flash, the dark figures covered the sky.

The black shadows were extremely quick. The sound they produced was like a blade slicing through air, humming deeply in waves with a mind-stunning power.

Those that heard it all changed expression and their scalp prickled.

Yet before they could react at all, an enormous wave of power condensed and smashed heavily into the middle of the Ming Bandits' ranks.

Boom!

The shockwaves twisted everything in view.

The middle-section of the Ming Bandits' ranks did not have the time to make a sound when the ripples passed through and their bodies were disintegrated from the attack. The powerful physiques of the Ming Bandits turned to ash like a snowman in the sun.

Ming Yu Wei's expression was ashen. A battalion! They had been ambushed by a battalion! The enemy had actually had a battalion!

However, the Ming Bandits were highly experienced, and vicious on top of that. Even though they were surprised at the suddenly appearance of a battalion, they quickly calmed down after the initial panic. The Ming Bandits that were closest to the middle sect unhesitatingly charged forward in hopes they could slow down this battalion. If this attacking battalion was dragged to a stop, then it would definitely die!

From every angle, there was nothing to criticize about the Ming Bandits' response. Only true elite mo with rich combat experience could react so quickly right after being attacked.

But all of the Ming Bandits underestimated the strength of this unknown battalion!

They also underestimated the strength of Bie Han, who led Sin Battalion!

Bie Han's face was icy but his gaze was full of spirit. There was a small flush on his face. He had been waiting too long for this battle!

He had waited from the moment he learned to be a battle general, from the moment he commanded the Sin Battalion, from the moment he was imprisoned on mountain, from the moment he had returned to the mo territories. From having no place to go, to finding a place. Jiang Zhe, who he had been said to rival, was dominating and was attracting the attention of the world. Jiang Zhe seemed to be the premier battle general of the Four Realms.

Yet his own journey was full of setbacks and detours. He met a obstacles everywhere he went, and after so much hardship, he had never even had his first battle!

He had waited for far too long!

The large axe in his hand was hungry, and the sword was wailing sorrowfully and discontentedly from the sheathe.

This battle was fated to be renowned throughout the world! The light of an ultimate battle general would shine over the world!

A kind of light called confidence flashed in Bie Han's cold eyes.

The xiuzhe were most skilled in "divination." This was a very broad concept. It included judging and predicting the actions of the enemy, searching for and exploiting weaknesses in the enemy's formation and how to express the full power of their battalion. It was a field that every xiuzhe battle general had to learn. Bie Han who had learned the battle methods of the xiuzhe from his childhood was skilled in this.

But Bie Han's command style was completely different than Jiang Zhe who was of the same sect. Jiang Zhe was balanced in all aspects, meticulous and rarely showed weaknesses. When Bie Han had been at the mountain, everyone who saw him compete would say the same phrase.

"This blade is inauspicious!"

His command style was vicious and harsh. Compounded by his cold personality, he would do anything for victory, including sacrificing his own troops. He was someone that people were wary of.

A mistake, such as underestimating your opponent, was an opportunity that could change the entire battle for a battle general of Bie Han's calibre!

Even now, the Ming Bandits did not understand the skill level of the battle general they were facing and the skill of the battalion.

Just as the Ming Bandits near the middle section started to ready themselves to charge, the next attacks from Sin Battalion arrived.

In Bie Han's hands, Sin Battalion which had undergone an increase in power had demon-like powers. They were like ghosts but their strikes were as impactful as heavy broadswords. The several hundred members of Sin Battalion moved past each other in criss-cross patterns. An extremely strange scene occurred! The Ming Bandits who were about to charge suddenly stared with wide eyes. Several lines of blood criss-crossed on their bodies as though they had been sliced with sharp thin threads.

Pew!

Blood sprayed from the blood lines and turned to a blood mist in the air. The bodies of these Ming Bandits fell apart into seven to eight pieces. Every cut and wound was as smooth as glass!

Even those as cruel as the Ming Bandits were astounded when they saw such a scene and lost their concentration for a moment.

Bie Han was unaffected, and only his eyes were as sharp as a blade. In front of him, all other obstacles were swept away, and the exposed backs of the Ming Bandits appeared in front of him.

All of this happened in just one moment.

Before the dismembered limbs and the bloody mist could land, before anyone could react and move, Bie Han released his long-prepared charge!

The Ming Bandits at the front turned and their faces immediately filled with terror and hopelessness.

Boom!

Like a blade entering flesh, wherever it passed, flesh and bone separated.

The Sin Battalion still cultivated mo skills and the modified jinzhi on their bodies caused their mo skills to increase greatly. After undergoing Zuo Mo's engraving of new mo matrices, these battle monsters with incomplete souls had become even stronger!

Their speed was extremely fast making their movements hard to

predict. When they attacked, their strength was domineering, and also hard to predict.

What was scariest was that they did not hold one shred of fear. They would meticulously and faithfully carry out Bie Han's orders. They did not seem to feel it even when the attacks of the enemy landed on their bodies. Sometimes, they didn't even dodge. They were like a group of monsters.

The experienced Ming Bandits had never seen such a determined charge before!

The Ming Bandits at the front panicked. They tried to fly forward to avoid the charge behind them. Some of the smarter Ming Bandits sprinted in other directions. The formation of the Ming Bandits immediately dissolved.

The Sin Battalion was unstoppable where it passed. Blood and flesh. The power of an individual was as minuscule as an ant in front of the vast power created by a charge like this. Just being brushed lightly was a heavy blow that would cause one to be thrown into the air, their bones completely shattered, and they would be dead where they landed.

This all happened in a flash!

The Ming Bandits in the rear were still charging forward, the middle section of their formation had fled, and in a blink, the Ming Bandits at the front had crumbled as the blood of their companions flowed in rivers.

This change had come too quickly that many people didn't even understand what was happening.

Even the Ming Bandits were stuck dumb by this crazy ambush.

They watched as the Sin Battalion hunted and killed the fleeing Ming Bandits. Sin Battalion never attacked lone Ming Bandits. They would moved around each other as though they were creating a great net. No matter how Ming Bandits struggled in the net, they would but cut into pieces by this sharp net.

Sin Battalion coldly harvested lives. Dismembered limbs flew in the air as sprays of blood sprouted.

The scene was so bloody it was intimidating. It was so cruel that even the Ming Bandits could not suppress their disgust. Many people started to vomit.

Ming Hui' expression was ashen. He looked in disbelief at this scene in front of him. Just a moment ago, everything had been within his grasp, and the Anti Dragon Claw was right by his hand. In a blink, half of his Ming Bandits were gone.

His gaze was blank and unfocused. The remainder of the battalion were intimidated by the cold presence and unconsciously retreated hundreds of zhang!

How could it be like this?

Ming Yu Wei's expression was ashen as well. Her eyes were terrified as she said in a trembling voice, "Brother, we cannot win against this person!"

Cannot win?

Ming Hui's expression suddenly changed from blank to crazed. He shouted harshly, "Cannot win! What do you mean cannot win! We are the Ming Bandits! We are the invincible Ming Bandits! Sister! I believe in you"

"Brother, it will not work." Ming Yu Wei's voice still trembled slightly but her expression had recovered greatly. She shook her head and said, "I am not a match for him. Since the ambush in the beginning, he had planned this entire string of events. He was still at such ease in such a chaotic situation. He is too scary, I am not a match. Also, this battalion is stronger than ours. This person can rival those famed generals."

"Sister is better than those famous generals"

"Brother, he might be able to step into Glory Hall!"

Hss, the commanders in the surroundings inhaled sharply and each of them had an expression of great shock.

Glory Hall!

The mo territories were not as large as the xiuzhe territories but it was still vast. The Hundred Savage and Nether Realms[1] had as many battle generals as the stars, innumerable. But there was a place that was the holy ground of all battle generals, Glory Hall.

Glory Hall was open to all visitors, and there was an endless stream of people that came to visit. Glory Hall was not vast, it was just a little stone hall that was a few dozen mu in size.

Glory Hall recorded every battle general in the past that could be identified. It was founded by historians. At the start, it was not famed. They carved the name of the strongest battle generals of each generation on the halls of Glory Hall. What really made it famous was that the results of multiple wars were the exactly same as their predictions. As time went on, the successive masters of Glory Hall continued fairly. The names that were carved into Glory Hall underwent even stricter requirements, and all of them were battle generals that were publicly known as the strongest in their generation.

Over time, Glory Hall became the holiest place for battle generals. Many battle generals when they first started to learn how to be a general would dream that, one day, their names would be carved into Glory Hall.

That represented unparalleled achievement and glory!

So the shock that Ming Yu Wei's words caused could be imagined. The last time that Glory Hall had engraved a name had been twenty years ago. Ming Yue Wei thought that this person had a chance to step into Glory Hall. How could they not be shocked?

But they knew Ming Yu Wei very well. She was intelligent and strategic. She was the strongest battle general of the Ming Bandits. Her words were fantastical but half of the group believed.

Ming Hui looked dazedly at his younger sister who had a serious expression. The fury on his face unconsciously disappeared.

He suddenly raised his hand and slapped himself multiple times.

“Brother!” Ming Yu Wei was frightened by Ming Hui’s action. The other commanders all paled greatly.

Ming Hui had hit himself hard, and his face was covered with bright red hand prints. His gaze became calm once again. He looked at the slaughter occurring in the distance and said gravely, “I, Ming Hui, will remember the humiliation of today! Sister, do not be demotivated, so what if he can step into Glory Hall? From childhood, I believed that Sister will definitely enter Glory Hall! I have confidence in you!”

Ming Yu Wei bit her lips. Tears rose in her eyes, and her hands unconsciously balled.

Chapter 636 - A Sudden Appearance

“Today’s battle has awakened me! Today, I finally understood that, with these lowly tactics, I cannot create a true army.” Ming Hui’s gaze was determined as he said, “I will release the jinzhi on your bodies now. If you want to leave, leave at your will! I have decided to remake the battalion, not as bandits, but as the Ming Battalion! If you are willing to stay with this Ming Hui, I will not fail you!”

As he spoke, the commanders shook and their expressions were disbelieving. Ming Hui had released the jinzhi in their bodies just as he said.

Some people raised their hands in a bow towards Ming Hui before turning and leave. Ming Hui did not stop them. In a blink, there were only about three thousand people left.

The Ming Bandits who found that their jinzhi had been taken off immediately lost the courage to fight and fled.

Ming Yu Wei said in a very low voice, “Brother, it is not good to release the jinzhi at this time”

If the jinzhi were not released, they could buy more time for their escape.

Ming Hui smiled darkly and said in an even lower voice. “Do not worry, I have my own plans. I have been exceptionally kind in not killing the people who left, it will be their fate if they die in the

hands of others”

Ming Yu Wei felt a chill rise from her back. Brother seemed to have left them a road to life, but was actually pushing them towards death.

Even if the disorganized Ming Bandits could flee the mysterious battalion, they would not be able to escape the experts of Great Peace City.

“Brother, you are waiting for Bu Heng?” Ming Yu Wei suddenly asked.

Ming Hui smiled coldly. “Not just Bu Heng! This battalion is strong but there are countless others who desire something as great as the Anti Dragon Claw! Bu Hen is a smart person. He obtained the information and then spread it. From the beginning, he knew that the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion was not something that he could touch.”

The coldness in Ming Hui’s eyes grew. He snorted coldly, “The chaos will not end as easily as this!”

Finishing, he ordered the battalion to retreat. Ming Yu Wei was silent. She was skilled at being a battle general, but her grasp of grander schemes was not as good as her elder brother.

She didn’t know if this defeat was good or bad for Elder Brother
... ..

Ming Yu Wei felt slightly worried.

The abrupt collapse of the Ming Bandits was unexpected to everyone.

In a blink, Miao Jun and Shu Long felt the pressure on them lessen. They did not understand what had happened but in order to help Sin Battalion, they had faced enemies numbering multiple times their own. They were exhausted.

Even though the enemy crumbled now, they didn't even have the energy to chase them.

Shu Long and the others sat down and started to recover. Miao Jun also ordered those in his command to rest immediately but his gaze unconsciously looked towards Bie Han in the sky.

Bie Han had stayed for a long length of time in Great Peace City. All the major powers knew of this person, and also that he had a battalion called Sin Battalion under his command. But no one had thought this cold and proud person was so powerful, that this unknown battalion was so terrifying!

Miao Jun had paled when he saw the series of attacks just now.

As a gold battle general, he knew more than others and even he had never seen such a vicious style of fighting before!

Bie Han was definitely at the level of the top battle generals!

When he thought of this, his gaze reflexively landed on Zuo Mo thoughtfully. Shu Long and the others had not concealed anything from Miao Jun and Miao Jun had heard long ago that Xiao Mo Ge Daren also had an invincible battle general called Gongsun Cha and an invincible battalion called Vermillion Bird Camp.

After Miao Jun became familiar with Shu Long's personality, he didn't doubt the ability of Gongsun Lil' Miss.

Adding on Bie Han, Xiao Mo Ge Daren possessed two top tier battle generals!

In the enormous mo territories, the number of factions who were at this level could be counted on the fingers.

Adding on A Gui and Ceng Lian'er with their unfathomable strength, as well as Xiao Mo Ge's own great power, Miao Jun suddenly realized that a faction like this probably qualified to start spreading their own influence in the chaotic and war-torn state of the world.

His gaze flickered as he thought.

Princess Xia and the others gaped with wide eyes. The situation had reversed so suddenly that they could not keep up. Many people still didn't understand what had happened.

Xiao Mo Ge had told them to retreat in this direction and received everyone's consent.

But when the majority of the Ming Bandits locked onto them, they had all paled. They thought that they would not have any way left to escape. But in a blink, Sin Battalion had erupted and cut the Ming Bandits into pieces.

Those with clear minds couldn't help but look at Zuo Mo with a thread of terror.

He had such a powerful battalion in his command but he had managed to keep it a secret. He had gathered the people to set up an enormous battle formation belt, all for the purpose of misleading the Ming Bandits. In order to create a chance for Sin Battalion to strike a fatal blow, he even threw everyone, including himself, out as bait.

"Such deep cunning!" the middle-aged attendant sighed with suppressed astonishment.

Princess Xia's gaze had not left Zuo Mo's face. When she noticed the hint of shock in Zuo Mo's eyes, she couldn't help but laugh. "Maybe this is an accident."

“An accident?” The middle-aged attendant looked with slight surprise at Princess Xia. Princess Xia who was usually peerless in intelligence seemed to have become dumber. She shook her head and said, “It cannot be a coincident. The actions were all related and the setup perfect in timing and action! We were unknowingly used by him to be bait. This boy might actually reach high heights!”

Princess Xia smiled brightly.

————

What no one knew was that Zuo Mo’s shock wasn’t any less than theirs.

Bie Han was so ferocious!

He was dumbstruck!

He had carved the mo matrices for Sin Battalion and knew Sin Battalion’s strength. But the power that Sin Battalion had in Bie Han’s hand surpassed his predictions.

If he knew that Sin Battalion was so powerful before, did he need to set up so many things?

His initial plan was to continuously weaken the Ming Bandits to

give Sin Battalion a chance to carry out an ambush. That would create a short period of chaos. However, the fatal attack would be him leading all the general levels to charge straight into the core of the Ming Bandits and taking down their leader!

He even prepared to take the princesses and the leaders as hostages if Zhu Ke and the others did not agree.

Yet the changes of the battle completely was out of his expectations. The Sin Battalion led by Bie Han was unstoppable and beat the Ming Bandits into submission!

Zuo Mo grimaced inside. If he knew this before, wouldn't everything have been resolved if he let Bie Han out?

Watching as the danger was resolved, Zuo Mo's tense nerves unconsciously relaxed and he exhaled deeply.

But when he looked at the chaotic crowds, he sighed again.

Truthfully, he had purposefully left an opening in the battle formation belt he had set up because he knew, no matter how many people there were, these normal people who had never been trained could not stop the Ming Bandits.

Of his preparations, some were cruel, some were useless. Many people had died, but they had won in the end.

The majority were able to survive.

“Haha! Brother! I just knew that you could do it!” Lan Tian Long’s loud laugh came from behind him. The people behind him also couldn’t suppress the expression of happiness.

Zuo Mo turned around. He wanted to smile but wasn’t able to.

He didn’t feel any great sadness, but there wasn’t much joy neither.

Lan Tian Long darted forward to give Zuo Mo a big hug. The other people took turns to come forward and hug him.

Just as one of the people was preparing to hug him, the Anti Dragon Claw on Zuo Mo’s back suddenly shook and Zuo Mo was startled.

Almost at the same time, he felt a stirring of danger!

Without thinking, the [Reversed Stellar Revolution] on his hand was thrown forward as he darted back.

An extremely dark and cold black energy brushed past Zuo Mo’s chest from bottom to top. The dark and strange aura caused Zuo Mo’s hairs to stand on end.

The ambusher hadn’t expected that Zuo Mo could react so quickly after he had relaxed!

The two were very close and he had thought there would be no reason for him to miss at such a close distance. But the other had detected his intentions.

When his attack missed, and before he could escape, the [Reversed Stellar Revolution] appeared in from of him like a spray of sparks.

His expression changed. Could he not recognize the killing move that Xiao Mo Ge had used to defeat the [Peacock King Plume]?

But the two were too close, so close that he didn't have any time to react!

Under his terrified gaze, the Reversed Stellar Revolution turned to sparks and landed on the assassin's body. He didn't even have the time to scream before he was burned into dust!

The sparks returned to Zuo Mo's hand and became a slowly spinning star bracelet again.

Lan Tian Long and the others paled. This had occurred so suddenly. In a flash, the ambusher had been burned to dust!

“He is An Qi Gong, why would he try to assassinate you?” Lan Tian Long reacted and a hint of anger flashed through his eyes. An Qi Gong had clearly intermingled among them in order to take advantage of his relationship with Xiao Mo Ge. Someone had

schemed against Old Long! Lan Tian Long suddenly lowered his voice and said, “Do you want me to go investigate?”

In that moment, Zuo Mo had been frightened but at this time, he quickly calmed down. He shook his head. “There’s no need.”

After a moment of thought, he said to Lan Tian Long, “Go find a few people and help maintain the order. Prevent people from taking advantage of the chaos.”

Lan Tian Long said heavily, “Alright! If Old Long finds the person responsible, I’ll make him wish for death!”

Finishing, he turned with a dark expression.

————

Bie Han narrowed his eyes and looked at the remaining three thousand Ming Bandits in front of him. Behind him, Sin Battalion was still harvesting the lives of the Ming Bandits at an astounding rate. A light flashed through his narrowed eyes. He was like a tiger that had been caged for a long time. The brief battle that had just finished could not satisfy him.

However, the Ming Bandits who had fled suddenly ran back in panic.

“Boss! Not good! Not good! Marshal Yu! Marshal Yu has come!”

Marshal Yu!

Marshal Yu!

This name which caused the Ming Bandits to panic caused cheers to rise among the crowd. Many people even cried from joy. The reputation of Marshal Yu was completely the opposite of the Ming Bandits. No matter what, Marshal Yu would not act against them.

Zhu Ke and the others also relaxed. Their families were on good terms with Marshal Yu and there would not be any problems to their own safety.

Only Princess Xia' expression changed slightly and she looked worriedly at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo's face suddenly darkened. The incoming forces were not allies!

Murderousness flashed through Ceng Lian'er eyes. When it had been her crucial time of breakthrough, the people that Marshal Yu had sent tried to use her to threaten her father. There was a chance to settle accounts today!

Bie Han did not feel any fear. He was still hungry after the fight with the Ming Bandits. He gaze with narrowed eyes at the horizon, fighting spirit rampaging through his body!

Don't be too weak!

Chapter 637 - Arrival Of Marshal Yu

Ma Fan wiped his face and took a look at the packed group of xiuzhe outside. He shook his head. “It seems that they don’t plan on leaving in the short term.”

The xiuzhe outside was the Tian Huan Battalion that Gongye Xiao Rong was leading. As predicted by Gongsun Cha, they had appeared in Orchid Home Jie and started to attack the chaos rift defended by Black Turtle Camp.

Luckily, Ma Fan had been careful and didn’t dare to relax. He had constantly sent out patrols. His caution was useful. The patrols had discovered the enemy and sounded an early alarm.

Ma Fan who received the warning immediately went on full defense.

Due to the worry that they would not be able to hold the chaos rift, the construction of defensive formations had never stopped. Compared to when Lil’ Miss had been here, the formation belt was two times larger. Even right before the fighting started, the formation belt was still being expanded.

This caused Ma Fan’s confidence to increase.

Truthfully, the fighting had never stopped in Orchid Home Jie. Ma Fan’s scouts and the yao scouts would frequently have skirmishes. Overall, though, the two sides were restrained and maintained an unspoken agreement.

When Gongye Xiao Rong saw the ambush did not succeed, he changed to a frontal assault.

But facing such an enormous formation belt, Gongye Xiao Rong didn't have any good solutions. However, Gongye Xiao Rong knew that this chaos rift was their closest path to returning to the xiuzhe realms.

Gongye Xiao Rong's attacks were extremely ferocious and uncaring of fatalities. The fighting was unusually intense, and almost half of the fort's formation belt had been destroyed. Corpses littered the surroundings.

The grand talismans that Tian Huan Battalion had were enormously effective. This allowed them to withstand two rounds of attack.

Ma Fan's Black Turtle Camp had had a difficult time. The fort was almost lost until Guard Camp arrived and steadied the defense line.

Yet these Tian Huan xiuzhe did not know weariness nor cared about the fatalities. They furiously attacked like waves crashing onto the shore.

Ma Fan could not count how many rounds of attack they had fought off.

Almost half of Black Turtle Camp was lost. Ma Fan had to replenish his forces with members of Green Dragon Camp which had been acting as reinforcement to Black Turtle Camp.

The rate of deaths for the greenhorns was extremely high in intense battles like this. Azure Dragon Camp only existed in name now. Those able to survive were all xiuzhe that were able to quickly adapt to battle.

The defense line became even stronger, and everyone started to adjust to fighting of such high intensity.

“There’s nothing to be afraid of!” Lei Peng’s voice was hoarse and rough but his eyes were even brighter than before. He said nonchalantly, “We can be said to be experienced now. Ha, Tian Huan is just so, we can kill as many as they send!”

“They have no reinforcements, and cannot afford continuous fatalities. We will definitely win this fight. I just wonder what good reward I can get from Lil’ Miss Daren.” Nian Lu drawled. His handsome face was covered in dust. However, just like Lei Peng, his eyes were unusually bright and he was surrounded by sword essence.

This battle had been hard, but after going through it, all of them had improved greatly.

Nothing could cause someone improve faster than fighting.

Gongye Xiao Rong looked with concentration at the damaged fort expressionlessly.

The other's primary commander had left with their main forces. Technically, this should be a great opportunity. This was the main reason that he decided to attack the fort.

No battle general had a good method of attacking forts like this. Gongye Xiao Rong had been mentally prepared that many people would die but, fighting until now, he was unable to calm down.

The other's hardiness was almost unimaginable!

He had learned Gongsun Cha's strength already. He knew that he was a battle general that rivaled him! But even now, he could not figure now which faction Gongsun Cha belonged to.

When Gongsun Cha left with the main forces, the biggest obstacle for Gongye Xiao Rong had been removed. Even though he knew fatalities would be high in a full-frontal assault like this, he had still been filled with confidence – if he was willing to pay the price, he could take the fort!

Yet this mysterious faction gave him a heavy blow again!

The unknown battle general inside the fort was the hardest battle general that he probably ever met!

This battle general's battalion was not outstanding, and far from being comparable to Gongsun Cha's battalion. Gongye Xiao Rong had not thought much of them, dismissing them as a threat, but this unknown battle general and this unknown battalion had cost his side a heavy price, and he was unable to advance one more step

They were as steady as rock!

And the detail-oriented Gongye Xiao Rong discovered that the enemy battalion was becoming even more resilient.

After this battle, this unknown battalion would completely transform and become a true elite force.

Their Tian Huan Battalion had become the enemy's whetstone.

There was no hope of victory. If they kept on fighting, the fatalities would only increase.

Gongye Xiao Rong was silent.

He had been talented from childhood and had smoothly advanced even in a large sect like Tian Huan. He had been respected by his fellow disciples and protected by the elders.

He had never thought that he would end up in a situation like this one day.

Defeat after defeat!

Looking at his battalion of which only slightly more than a third remained, looking at the faces that were looking in bewilderment at him, his heart suddenly hurt.

His face was slightly ashen but he knew that everyone was waiting for his decision.

“We will leave!”

He used almost all the strength in his body to say these three words.

————

When Mu Xi finished listening to the report from her subordinate, she was thoughtful.

“Daren, should we go take that chaos rift? The enemy is tired from fighting. Now that Gongye Xiao Rong has retreated, they would be relaxed and off-guard. This is a good chance!” the subordinate couldn’t resist saying.

The successive victories had established and secured Mu Xi’s position in the Palace Lake Wood Clan. Right now, she was undoubted as the top ranked battle general of the Palace Lake

Wood Clan, and was qualified to decide on the major discussions of the clan.

There had never been one that was so young in the history of the yao able to achieve such a level.

Mu Xi shook her head. “What is the use if we take it? It is already very good that we are able to hold this jie. Do not underestimate the other. They were able to stop Gongye Xiao Rong. It is hard to say for certain but just in defense, there are probably few that can compare.”

Seeing the subordinate’s disagreement, she said, “Don’t be proud because Gongye Xiao Rong lost a few skirmishes to us. We have never fought Gongye Xiao Rong head on. Gongye Xiao Rong is very strong to have defeated the allied army.”

After some thought, she ordered, “We need good relations with this faction. They have great ambitions if they dare to become enemies with Tian Huan. Naturally, they will need allies.”

“But they are xiuzhe!”

“You need to see the flow of history. The world is in turmoil, chaos rifts connect xiuzhe, yao, and mo territories. Within the decade, the barriers between xiuzhe, yao, and mo will be broken,” Mu Xi said solemnly.

The subordinate wanted to say more, but he acknowledged the

order when he saw Mu Xi's stern gaze.

Mu Xi looked at the back of the subordinate as he left with flashing eyes. She knew that she was too young. Even though she had been winning all this time, there were many in the clan that did not accept her.

Maybe she should build her own battalion.

When this thought appeared, the urge was unable to be removed.

The black crowds of people in the horizon seemed to be moving slowly but in a flash, they appeared. The battalion stretched like a cloud silently.

There was indifference on the face of every mo soldier. From a glance, it could be seen that they were experienced mo soldiers. The banners of the clans were raised and flew in the wind. There wasn't any stray sound from the battalion.

In the center of the battalion, an enormous chariot procession was the most eye-catching. Blue silk flew in the wind, and the copper tassels that hung from the eaves of the chariot roof chimed from far away. The four beasts that pulled the chariot were unusually ugly but they were extremely submissive standing the front of the chariot.

Beside the chariot, four large men with stern expressions had a wooden rack on their shoulders where a blue sword was placed.

As the ranks spread out, a tangible killing essence spread.

Great Peace City was silent. No one dared to speak loudly.

Zuo Mo wasn't frightened by the pomp at all. He looked around. Marshal Yu's battalion was not as large as he imagined and was just about ten thousand people.

This was a much lower number than he imagined.

In his imaginations, the battalion of a marshal should cover the sky. Each marshal usually had more than a hundred jie under their command.

Princess Xia suddenly said in a low voice, "Marshal Yu has been busy expanding his territories and his battalions have been mostly sent out. His own territories haven't been peaceful. But you have to be careful. This Yu Frontier Guard is the most elite battalion that Marshal Yu has. I have no way to help, be careful."

From these sparse words, Zuo Mo understood many things. He could hear the concern in the other's tone and comforted, "That's alright, I have my own measures!"

Princess Xia gritted her teeth and said, "If it cannot be helped, give the Anti Dragon Claw to him."

Zuo Mo's heart felt warm but when he thought of the Three Thousand Threads of Worry that had merged into his body, he grimaced inwardly. The Three Thousand Threads of Worry were wrapped around the Anti Dragon Claw. No matter how he tried, they would not unwind and leave the Anti Dragon Claw.

Even if he wanted to give the Anti Dragon Claw to someone else, he couldn't do it.

"Don't worry, don't worry." Zuo Mo comforted with a smile.

Shu Long and the others had returned to Zuo Mo's side and were on full alert.

The presence of this battalion intimidated all. Even Ming Hui and the others couldn't help but change expression. The Ming Bandits that he had built had not been afraid of anything but they had just suffered heavy losses. Now, after he personally saw the most elite force of Marshal Yu, he finally felt what true elite was!

His Ming Bandits, in front of this strictly organized battalion, could only be called "bandits"!

He had thought previously that with many people fighting over the Anti Dragon Claw, he would have a chance during the chaos. But when Marshal Yu came with his Yu Frontier Guards, he knew that the Anti Dragon Claw would land in Marshal Yu's hands.

Marshal Yu would probably not let people of terrible reputation like his Ming Bandits escape.

Ming Hui's expression became uncertain.

Chapter 638 - Mister Tong

The ferocious presence of the Yu Frontier Guards intimidated everyone.

The chariot with its billowing curtains felt like a great and ancient beast looking down at the world. The commanders surrounded it and the mo soldiers stood in formation like a dense forest. It was a murderous silence and the invisible pressure was like a lead cloud that made the air suffocating.

Zuo Mo's gaze was as sharp as a sword and fearless.

“Present the Anti Dragon Claw to me, and you will be spared death!”

An authoritative voice came from within the chariot. The voice seemed to have a power to reach deep into the mind of a person.

“You will be spared death!”

The Yu Frontier Guards shouted deafeningly in unison. It was like everyone was struck on the head. At the same time, a great wave of murderous intent came like an avalanche that swept the entire region!

Even experts of Zhu Ke's level changed expression. Ming Hui and the others were ashen-faced.

Zuo Mo's gaze was bright and his expression indifferent as though he had not heard that great shout.

Silent. It became deathly silent.

Everyone couldn't help but turn to look at Zuo Mo. Many people had expressions of schadenfreude. The Anti Dragon Claw was a sky mo weapon and a mo weapon that all mo dreamed of. Countless mo were jealous that Zuo Mo had obtained the Anti Dragon Claw.

Right now, Marshal Yu had come in person with the Yu Frontier Guards. No one believed that Xiao Mo Ge could make any more waves.

"Really?" Zuo Mo seemed to say to himself. His voice resonated all around even though it was not loud.

When the word came out, the other people stilled. Then expressions of disbelief came onto many people's eyes. Was Xiao Mo Ge thinking of resisting?

Resist? Marshal Yu had come in person yet Xiao Mo Ge dared to resist?

Did this person not want to live?

Many members of the Yu Frontier Guard were shocked by Zuo Mo's words as well but soon, their faces filled with anger.

Such daring!

He dared to disobey Marshal Yu!

Marshal Yu did not speak but those under his command could not resist. One person said coldly, “What? Even sparing your insignificant life is because Marshal Yu treasures talent! Be good and present the Anti Dragon Claw, swear your loyalty to Marshal Yu. Someone as lowly as you does not deserve a treasure like the Anti Dragon Claw!”

Anger rose on the faces of Shu Long and the others.

Zuo Mo was unaffected. His lips curled slightly in a disdainful smile as he spat out, “You want to die!”

Everyone was shocked.

Was Xiao Mo Ge mad? He dared to call Marshal Yu’s man the one who wanted to die!

Princess Xia paled. She pressed her lips together as her eyes became deeply worried.

Almost at the same time, a purple energy flashed through A Gui’s eyes. Her right hand suddenly moved towards that mo.

Crack!

A crisp sound of a bone snapping was eerily clear against the deathly silence.

The eyes of the mo who had just spoken bulged suddenly and his neck tilted at a strange angle. Before he could make a sound, he fell from the sky like a rock.

Hiss!

Sharp inhales sounded. Everyone look in terror at A Gui who was standing next to Zuo Mo. This person who appeared extremely ugly and had been following Xiao Mo Ge all this time but it was rare to see her act. The only time she had fought was when she and Ceng Lian'er had defended Zou Mo from Lin Qian's blow.

But this attack was even more powerful than the strike she blocked from Lin Qian.

Had she not used her full power previously?

Zhu Ke and the others also had uncertain expressions. They were astounded inside.

But what most people found even harder to understand was that Xiao Mo Ge didn't seem to have any fear at all when facing Marshal Yu. He even dared to talk back to Marshal Yu. Did this person have some major power behind him?

This thought flashed through people's minds but then they shook their heads. No matter what support they had, it was useless at the moment.

Marshal Yu had come with ten thousand Yu Frontier Guards. It was useless unless another marshal came with their own personal guard.

The death of their fellow enraged the Yu Frontier Guard. Even the calmest person was unable to maintain their calm.

A large full bearded man stepped out and bowed towards the chariot. He said angrily, "Lord! This subordinate is willing to go and fight this arrogant peon!"

Another person came out and shouted at the same time, "This subordinate is also willing to fight!"

Several others also came out to request to fight.

Zuo Mo's arrogance and A Gui's attack had completely enraged the people of Yu Frontier Guard who usually had their eyes looking at the sky.

"If one really has talent, there is nothing wrong in being proud." Marshal Yu's voice came from the chariot. "What is not good is when one doesn't have the talent to match their arrogance. This seat has no patience for people like that. Since you have requested

to fight, then go. You will be rewarded if you win. If you lose, you will belong under his command.”

When the words came out, the commanders stared at each other. They had requested to fight out of indignation, but they were not confident. They were still very wary of A Gui’s unfathomable attacks.

But if they were really defeated and had to swear allegiance to Xiao Mo Ge, the consequences would be too severe. Also, they could hear that Master’s fondness for talent had been stirred. In the end, Xiao Mo Ge might end up under the command of Master.

They knew Master’s fondness for talent. He liked to recruit young talents. If Xiao Mo Ge really had some talent, Master would not care about a few slight offenses.

If they really had to swear allegiance to him, then it would be worse than being killed.

Their gazes unconsciously moved towards a man beside the chariot in a plea for help.

This large man was very tall and had short hair. There was nothing outstanding about his appearance but his gaze was serene and his presence steady. Under the pleading gazes of the crowd, he smiled helplessly. Then he turned and bowed towards the carriage. He said in a respectful voice, “Master, this subordinate feels an itch to see Xiao Mo Ge’s skill. Please, Master, allow this subordinate to fight.”

“Oh, Mister Tong is rarely interested in the ability of others. Interesting, interesting.” Light laughter came from the chariot. This Mister Tong was someone that Marshal Yu trusted highly and so Marshal Yu said, “Then this seat will wait and see.”

“Thanks, Master.” Mister Tong bowed slightly towards the chariot.

He turned around. Noticing the joy on the faces of the commanders, he shook his head helplessly. He had a good reputation among the commanders and could not refuse their request for help. When he turned to face Xiao Mo Ge, and saw the Anti Dragon Claw on his back, heat suddenly flashed through his eyes.

He raised his right leg and lightly stepped forward. Under the eyes of everyone present, his figure disappeared as though he was teleporting through space.

Woosh. He appeared out of thin air.

With this light jump, inhales sounded.

One could see the skill of an expert when they acted.

No one had detected any vibrations from the seemingly simple step that Mister Tong took. There were those that cultivated mo eyes among the people present but no one had managed to observe

his step.

Zhu Ke, Chang Yuan Hao, and the others changed expression. Only experts who had reached [Domain] could faintly discern that Mister Tong's step was closely related to [Domain].

Zuo Mo's pupils contracted.

He did not understand the mysteries behind this step.

But Zuo Mo did not feel fear as he faced the challenging gaze.

His nerves had been highly tense after the battles of the past few days. The pairs of anticipating eyes were on him. He felt that he was like a rope that was being pulled apart and would snap at any moment. He had silently planned and calculated everything, holding up under the pressure these people placed on him.

He was silent, his mind was tired, he was struggling to remain upright.

But he finally made it through. Actually, ever since the battle with the Ming Bandits started, his mind calmed down and he entered new state.

The test of the past few days was like whetstone that had polished him. However, this time, what was being polished was not his mo physique, but his mind and his heart!

Unknowingly, his mind had completely transformed, become even stronger and resilient!

He did not have any stray thoughts, confusion, or terror. Even if he was facing an enemy he could not get the measure of, his mind was not affected at all.

Zuo Mo's Three Thousand Threads of Worry tightened. He was about to step out when a figure suddenly disappeared like a ghost from beside him.

Ceng Lian'er!

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. Ceng Lian'er seemed to be unusually eager for a fight today.

The two faced off in the air.

Mister Tong's step was ethereal and Ceng Lian'er's figure was seductive. Two completely different styles but both were filled with danger.

Mister Tong smiled. "Miss is very good. However, this one wants to fight Xiao Mo Ge, can Miss make way?"

Even though he said it politely, the meaning of his words were clear: you aren't my match, have Xiao Mo Ge come.

Ceng Lian'er stood her ground, her long red dress was like a rose blooming in the air. Her features were exquisite and her gaze dazzling while her presence was misty and ghostly. When the two distinct traits mixed together, it was a beauty that did not seem realistic.

Her opal black eyes were deep. Her lips moved and her voice was as light as smoke, "That is not up to you."

Finishing her statement, her wrists moved and turned slightly. Her long sleeves rippled in waves.

Seriousness came onto Mister Tong's face. He raised his right hand and directed a blow at Ceng Lian'er!

Both had movements that seemed slow and without any killing intent as though they were dancing.

Yet the sky between the combatants suddenly twisted. Then, ripples formed and started to move into the surroundings.

Ceng Lian'er's gaze became even more blurry. Under her long red dress, the white mo matrix was like flowers upon her beautiful smooth skin as it expanded. Her body was soft and flexible like a snake as she danced to a strange rhythm.

There was no ease on Mister Tong's face. His hair stood up on end, energy brimming from all parts of his body. His right palm

seemed to be holding something extremely heavy. The edge of his palm was disappearing at a very slow rate as though his hand was slowly sinking into a void.

The sky which had been rippling in waves suddenly started to boil. The vibrations became even more violent.

Bubbles of various sizes appear out of the thin air.

In a flash, the space between the combatants was filled with these bubbles. The largest of these bubbles were the size of a fist, and the smallest the size of a pinhead. Once they came out, they floated motionlessly in the air.

They were like the most normal bubbles. Under the sunlight, they reflected the world.

Chapter 639 - Divine Moon

Moonlight flashed through those bewitching eyes.

Pia!

The bubbles around the two exploded in unison.

Gusts of sharp air rushed out and covered the two.

Yet such powerful gusts were unable to harm the two at all. There seemed to be an invisible barrier two zhang around Mister Tong which stopped the gust. While Ceng Lian'er seemed to be intangible. The gusts easily passed through her. Her figure was like a reflection in the water. It wavered, became blurry and seemed almost unreal.

Mister Tong's gaze focused.

His hand grabbed at Ceng Lian'er

A black palmprint left his hand and turned into a black ball of mist that headed towards Ceng Lian'er. There seemed to be countless monsters howling from within the black mist. The roars filled the air and everyone who heard it felt their hairs stand up.

Ceng Lian'er's gaze was bewitching. Her lips parted slightly and she breathed.

“Moon!”

Her long sleeve moved lightly like silk in water.

The air around her suddenly became dark. A crescent moon floated behind her. This crescent moon was slightly taller than her, and gave off a cool light.

Ceng Lian'er was extremely excited. The divine moon had finally appeared!

The moon shen power succession technique she had inherited was relatively complete but some of the crucial parts had been lost. The heir of each generation had tried to do all they could to perfect the cultivation method but the restoration effects were minute. Even their own cultivation had progressed at a difficult rate.

Divine Moon, the crux of the later stages of cultivation, had been lost long before.

Now it was restored in Ceng Lian'er's hands.

Ceng Lian'er's talent was outstanding and she had worked hard on her cultivation from a young age. In this period of time, her frequent battles, especially the one with Lin Qian, had benefited her greatly.

The powerful Mister Tong pressured her greatly and was also the cause of her epiphany of the Divine Moon.

“Divine Moon!” A cool voice came from behind the silk curtains. Marshal Yu said, “So Ceng Lian’er cultivates shen power, it was this seat that made a wrong guess.”

The commanders around the chariot shook with astonishment on their faces.

Shen power!

So this was shen power!

The crescent moon in the sky seemed to have passed through time from the ancient era!

“Lord!” some of the commanders called.

“Do not let her escape,” Marshal Yu quietly commanded.

The middle-aged attendant next to Princess Xia had an unfocused gaze as she murmured to herself, “Divine Moon! So this is what shen power truly is like!”

She had been searching hard for decades and schemed to just reach the edge. Previously, she had detected that Ceng Lian’er cultivated shen power, but when she saw the crescent moon in the

sky, her mouth felt bitter.

The Divine Moon's appearance meant that Ceng Lian'er's shen power was finally on the right path!

A look flashed through Princess Xia's eyes and she reflexively looked towards Xiao Mo Ge.

Her eyes flickered. She noticed that Zuo Mo's body imperceptibly shook and his expression change slightly.

Noticing Princess Xia's gaze, Zuo Mo turned around. The two's gazes met.

Princess Xia found a flash of joy in Zuo Mo's eyes.

————

Bie Han was not interested in the fight ongoing in the sky. For battle generals like him who focused on battle command, struggles through individual power were not interesting. His Sin Battalion was almost all equal in power, and there were no strong experts. Almost all his energy was spent on how to squeeze the most power out of Sin Battalion.

Over a long period of time, this also became a habit, or rather, his combat style.

Regardless of the intensity of the battle in the air, it could not attract his gaze. He constantly swept the Yu Frontier Guards warily like a cunning wolf looking for an opening to attack.

He was not frightened by the Yu Frontier Guards.

Even though his days in the past had been the same as being in prison, Xuan Kong Temple was one of the four great sects. Even the opponents the sect sent against him were on par with Jiang Zhe. Growing up in an environment like this, Bie Han could not fear a battalion he had not even heard of, even if the other's leader was at marshal level.

After decades of being icy and stoic, his heart was as hard as stone.

The other people were intimidated by Marshal Yu's reputation and didn't dare to move. However, Bie Han constantly looked at this enormous battalion in search of a weakness he could use to break through.

His spirit had not calmed down from his battle with the Ming Bandits. He was like a lion that had been caged for too long. He had charged out of the cage and was yearning to find any fight!

Light flashed in his narrowed eyes.

When he saw a small troop of the Yu Frontier Guards move towards the flank when people were not paying attention, his eyes

turned cold.

After a moment of thought, he understood what the other intended—the other was surrounding Ceng Lian'er and preventing her from running away.

Even though this guess was slightly ridiculous because from every angle, it seemed impossible that Ceng Lian'er could escape, Bie Han did not hesitate. His narrowed eyes slowly swept across where the troop was situated and he believed even more in his own judgement.

The movement of this little troupe did not attract anyone's attention. Among the dense ranks, it was hard to detect a change in position. Even if the Yu Frontier Guard battle generals noticed this shift in position, they would soon look elsewhere. In such a large army, the change in position of a thousand people was not something of particular note.

Bie Han's eyes narrowed even more. The killing energy and light in his eyes was almost hidden by his eyelids.

This seemed like a change in position of no value, but Bie Han paid attention.

He quickly calculated the changes that would occur as a result of this little change in position.

Xiuzhe battle generals were the most skilled at divination. As one

of the best, Bie Han's divination skill could be called terrifying. In his mind, the motionless Yu Frontier Guards were shifting around.

The movement of the little troop would cause the middle of the army to thin by ten percent.

Noticing the experts near the chariot that were nervously staring at the two fighting in the air, Bie Han seemed to smell prey.

He became slightly excited, but his gaze became even deeper and his attention even more focused.

He had a strong feeling

—the opportunity was slowly coming towards him!

The fight in the air reached a climax.

Mister Tong's black mist that seemed to be made of numerous monsters howling dissipated quickly under the light of Ceng Lian'er's moon like the heat from boiling water after being poured onto ice.

Mister Tong's expression suddenly changed!

A drop of blood suddenly came out between his brows and flew into his hand.

Even though it was only one drop of blood, his palm looked as though it was covered in blood. This bloodied palm was raised up, and Mister Tong's expression became grave.

“Palm Eye Cliff!”

The sky above Ceng Lian'er darkened. She raised her head to look and saw a cliff hundreds of zhang tall dropping down quickly!

Hiss!

The people below saw it clearly and inhaled.

A mountain that was shaped like a hand had red channels on it like the patterns of a palmprint. What was most frightening was that on the palm there was an enormous bloody eye.

Anyone that was swept by this eye froze and their blood almost solidified!

Even the middle-aged attendant and the others showed some astonishment. They didn't know the powers of this blood eye, but just the presence of the falling mountain was enough to make people feel that they could not win.

“Such a powerful Palm Eye Domain!” Zhu Ke murmured, shocked inside.

The Palm Eye Domain originated from the Palm Eye mo skill. This was a very rare and obscure mo skill. The person would only cultivate one palm and one eye. Even Zhu Ke who was very knowledgeable had only heard rumors. But this unknown Mister Tong had clearly cultivated this extremely obscure mo art to a very deep level. His understanding of [Domain] seemed almost unimaginable.

Even from afar, Zhu Ke felt his heart speed up as he saw that Palm Eye Cliff and its cold presence.

“In the history of the Palm Eye mo skill, there probably isn’t anyone who can surpass Mister Tong. This non-descript mo skill has blossomed in his hand, and one has to admire him!” A one-horned mo standing next to the chariot praised .

This person was called Ding Dong. His large body was covered in thick armor. What was most curious was that the armor was growing out of his body.

“Those without persistence cannot do this!” another person praised. This person’s eyes were long and narrow, his gaze cold. There was a transparent pair of wings on his back that were as clear as glass. This person was called Qian Qing and was one of the more famous experts in Marshal Yu’s command.

“I hope that this woman can manage to survive a while longer,”

Ding Dong said with a smile, “I really anticipate examining shen power!”

Qian Qing snorted coldly and said, “Shen power is just a myth.”

However, the two did not look away. It was rare for Mister Tong to fight, and he was very low-key under Marshal Yu’s command. He had very good relations with everyone and there were not many chances to see him fight.

There were many experts in Marshal Yu’s command. Even as strong as they were, there was still competition.

The Palm Eye Cliff was Mister Tong’s ultimate move. They had only heard the name but never seen it before. Now, they focused their attention to see its power!

Countless eyes gathered on her, but Ceng Lian’er did not panic.

At some time, the crescent moon had moved in front of her.

Mist blurred her eyes, her long sleeves danced and her serene and ethereal voice flashed across everyone’s minds.

“Moon, moon, open!”

The crescent moon spun in a circle around her and then struck at the Palm Eye Cliff that was crashing down.

There was no sound or ripple.

The terrifying Palm Eye Cliff was split open down the middle like tofu!

Mister Tong's expression changed drastically and his hand froze.

“Moon, moon, shatter!”

The crescent moon spun quickly and turned into a flash of light. Ceng Lian'er beautiful figure flickered under the light of the moon.

Countless ruler-straight marks covered the Palm Eye Cliff in a flash.

Mister Tong's face turned from red to white. His pupils expanded in disbelief.

Pew!

Face ashen, Mister Tong sprayed out blood and fell face down from the sky.

At the same time, the Palm Eye Cliff crumbled. The pieces rained down and each cut on every piece was as smooth as a mirror.

The entire battlefield was left silent!

Chapter 640 - The Black Gold Seal Solder VS Qian Qing

The long sleeves blew in the air and rippled in waves. Ceng Lian'er stood serenely.

There wasn't a sound on the battlefield.

The Palm Eye Cliff was defeated as simply as this!?

Everyone's expression was shocked and they were left speechless. Even though they did not personally experience Mister Tong's Palm Eye Cliff, but the cold killing intent and cold presence that radiated off it was felt.

The ones who knew about the Palm Eye mo skill were shocked speechless.

Ceng Lian'er gaze moved around and she smiled under everyone's shocked gaze.

At this time, her beautiful face bleached white. She could not control her body and suddenly dropped out of the sky!

Several figures leapt out of the Yu Frontier Guards. They were extremely fast as they shot towards Ceng Lian'er!

Zuo Mo's eyes gave off a sharp light as he snorted coldly. His

figure flashed disappearing from where he was. Almost at the same time, A Gui's body also disappeared.

Bam!

A figure grunted as though he was hit by something heavy and flew away.

A Gui appeared in front of this group of Yu Frontier Guard experts like a ghost. There seemed to be an unspeakable presence on A Gui's wooden and lifeless face. The purple energy in her eyes was clear as she looked indifferently at the experts flying towards her.

Her posture was extremely strange, one foot was placed high and one was placed low as though she was stepping on a stair.

That pair of flawless feet held an eerie beauty.

The remaining people were intimidated by A Gui's uncanny attack and didn't dare to charge forward.

————

Zuo Mo grabbed the unconscious Ceng Lian'er. He then sighed a moment later. She was just tired. Even though he didn't have a good impression of Ceng Lian'er, they had known each other for some time. Additionally, Ceng Lian'er was so cooperative and listened to his requests to the extent that he couldn't even

complain.

A few strands of the Three Thousand Threads of Worry nimbly wrapped around Ceng Lian'er freeing up both of his hands.

Looking at the people facing A Gui, murderousness boiled in his eyes.

The moment that Ceng Lian'er had her breakthrough, the shen power in his body had been stimulated. It had started to circulate on its own. Many of the things that had been difficult for him to understand flowed easily through his mind and it was a joy.

However, what he hadn't expected was that the change in his shen power had not benefited his shen power, but his mo physique instead!

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

If his body was completely naked now, people would clearly see that all ten suns on his body were brightly lit up.

The brightest was the sun script between his brows. The dark gold script which was complex and exquisite glimmered like there was gold flowing through it.

With the Anti Dragon Claw on his back, Zuo Mo already gave people the feeling of being domineering. Adding on the blinding Sun script on his forehead, he seemed even more like a god

descended to the mortal realm. He was someone that people could not directly stare at.

The active and restless shen power flowed from his right hand into his body. The ten sun matrices were like whirlpools that continuously absorbed shen power.

Zuo Mo did not know what would result from this change.

Shen power and the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus were silently merging together.

Zuo Mo took a deep breath. This was not the best moment for a breakthrough. That would wait until he finished taking care of these people!

At this time, a ripple suddenly came from his ring.

The black gold seal soldier appeared next to A Gui. He looked around sneakily and drawled, “Born To Battle.”

When he saw the mo steeds of the Yu Frontier Guards, his eyes lit up. His expression immediately became excited. He licked his lips and puffed out his chest. He said with a righteous tone, “Sister A Gui, I’ll help you!”

A Gui did not turn back to look at him.

The black gold seal soldier had one hand placed on his hip and one hand pointing as he started to swear, “Hey! You insignificant peons, move to the side, don’t waste ye’s time. Ye has been hungry for a long time cough cough ye’s hand has been itching for a long time!”

Qian Qing and Ding Dong were the two in front of A Gui.

The two looked with shock and uncertainty at A Gui. Just now, they had seen their other fellow die to A Gui’s sudden attack. A Gui’s attack had come without any warning or movement. Just like Ceng Lian’er, it was uncanny and unpredictable.

Was this another person that cultivated shen power?

They two didn’t even look at the black gold seal soldier.

Mo puppets existed in the mo territories but most of them were nothing special. Mo puppets couldn’t influence a battle at this level. It was much harder to create a mo puppet that could fight against top generals than it was to cultivate to become a top general.

While the black gold seal soldier seemed lively, the two did not place any importance on him.

But clearly, the black gold seal soldier was very displeased with how they dismissed his presence.

The dark face that mirrored Zuo Mo's face bared its teeth viciously. "You dare to dismiss ye? I'll eat you!"

Finishing, he charged at the two!

A figure returned next to the chariot and reported in a low voice, "Mister Tong is dead."

"It really is a pity. Mister Tong was a rare expert to have been able to cultivate the Palm Eye mo skill to such a level." The voice from the chariot was slightly regretful.

"Shen power is as dominant as expected!" This person was called Wu Yu. He was the most powerful expert under Marshal Yu's command and highly trusted.

There were many experts in Marshal Yu's service and there were ten that were called the Ten Yu Frontier Guards. Qian Qing, and Ding Dong were among them. Wu Yu was the first of the Ten Frontier Guards and let them. Mister Tong had ranked sixth out of ten. Qian Qing ranked seventh, Ding Dong fifth. The person that A Gui had killed had been called Song Long and ranked tenth.

The Ten Yu Frontier Guards had an elevated status. Each one of them had been experts that were regional commanders and Marshal Yu had spent great effort to gather them.

“I had not expected that Xiao Mo Ge would also have many experts in his command,” Marshal Yu said slowly. “So young, yet so able. As expected, an accomplished youth!”

Wu Yu smiled and said, “When this subordinate was at his age, my time was spent in the pleasure quarters and bars. Compared to Xiao Mo Ge, that was a total waste.”

Hearing Wu Yu speak so roughly, Marshal Yu chuckled. “If Ding Dong and the others hear you say this, wouldn’t they be ashamed?”

Wu Yu smiled.

Marshal Yu suddenly said, “You seem to be entering marshal level soon.”

Wu Yu grimaced. “The time has not arrived.”

Marshal Yu said lightly, “I will make a copy of the shen power for you. It will be up to you if you can break through or not.”

“Thanks, Lord!” Wu Yu suddenly became excited. He had been stuck at the peak of general level for a long time but had been unable to find a solution to break through to marshal level. He knew that if he kept on going like this, his chances of a breakthrough to marshal level would decrease.

“Helping you is also helping me. When you are in marshal level, I

will be able to relax.” The voice inside the chariot held tiredness.

Wu Yu’s expression was solemn. “This one will not fail what Lord has given!”

“Qian Qing is about to lose.” Marshal Yu was slightly surprised. “Xiao Mo Ge has such a powerful mo puppet?”

Wu Yu stilled and his mind turned back to the battlefield.

————

Qian Qing had never been in such a sorry state. He had never thought there would be a day when he was being beaten by a mo puppet and by such a large margin!

This mo puppet was extremely strange. When it fought, strange characters would appear on its body. Even Qian Qing who was knowledgeable didn’t recognize any of them.

But it was extremely dangerous!

He didn’t dare to touch them.

After a few rounds, he was suppressed by the black gold seal soldier.

Qian Qing was of high birth. The bloodline of the Bright Void Cicada Mo gave him unparalleled speed. He was also able to tear apart space at will. [Space Tear] could enable a weak mo to become an expert that killed without a trace.

He would appear out of nowhere and out maneuver his opponent. But no matter how he tore and jumped through space, the black gold seal soldier seemed to be able to predict his movements and those two fists were waiting for him.

Damn it!

He didn't know what the characters on the fists of the black gold seal soldier were. Every time Qian Qing looked at them, he was unable to suppress a thread of terror.

Qian Qing was talented and experienced. He knew what this thread of unknown terror meant.

Only something extremely dangerous could make him instinctively feel danger!

How was it possible?

Wasn't this black guy in front of him a mo puppet?

Had he met a peerless mo puppet?

Qian Qing was both shocked and furious!

However, if he left the battlefield now, his situation would become extremely terrible. His ranking among the Ten Yu Frontier Guards would quickly fall and most importantly, the Lord would lose faith in him.

There was nothing scarier than that!

The bloodline of the Bright Void Cicada Mo was noble but they were no longer had the great numbers of the past. The reason that the clan had prospered in these past few years was because he had managed to find shade under the great tree that was Marshal Yu.

He was a smart person and he understood Lord's like and dislikes very well.

If he died in battle, his family would still receive the care of Marshal Yu and would not fall into decline. If he ran from battle, he would lose everything he possessed now!

In a short moment, Qian Qing made his decision.

He stopped. The wind blew past his face as his panicked eyes calmed down.

[Space Tear] was the talent that all Bright Void Cicada mo experts had, and the most famous ability of the Bright Void Cicada mo clan. He was very familiar with the technique, but this was not his

only offensive attack.

Relying on only just [Space Tear] he entered the top ten of the Yu Frontier Guards.

There were not many that knew of the mo physique he cultivated or the [Domain] formed by his mo physique.

This was his secret!

Compared to their current low numbers, the Bright Void Cicada mo had once existed in great numbers and produced many experts. They were natural-born assassins, and served many factions. But in secret, they had gathered mo skills from every place they served.

The experts of each generation would use these mo skills and the Bright Void Cicada mo bloodline as the foundation to created many mo physiques.

These mo physiques were endlessly varied and each had their own attributes.

Even within the Bright Void Cicada mo family, there would rarely be people who would cultivated the same mo physique. Because of the decline of the Bright Void Cicada mo, the mo physiques that the clanspeople cultivated were not kept secret like in the past. But no one knew the mo physique of one person, Qian Qing, the most accomplished Bright Void Cicada mo of the present!

He hadn't thought that the first time his mo physique was seen in public that it would be to face a mo puppet.

The terror on Qian Qing's face disappeared. What replaced it was strong confidence!

Chapter 641 - Together

[Luo Li](#) seemed to be in a lucid dream.

Note: In Chinese, Luo Li called the chain [Bu Li]. Bu is no, or a negative prefix so the literal translation would be never apart or never separated. It also fits the pattern with Luo Li, Wo Li, and Bu Li.

It was a very strange dream, he knew that he was dreaming, but everything in the real world was so clear. He could hear the breathing of Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng Shimei. He could feel the small molecules floating in the air. He could feel the flows of air from tens of miles away that were almost imperceptible as though they passed next to him. He could feel the vitality hidden inside the ground

His senses felt outside world in such detail with his mind's eye.

Yet what was in front of him was only darkness, a darkness filled with the presence of death.

He was already dead!

This piece of knowledge remained on his mind for an unknown number of days.

At the beginning, he had been immersed in that rich and detailed world. He had explored it, and everything that happened in the surroundings did not escape his “eyes” though he could not see it.

But when he gradually mastered this technique, or rather, this unique method, the black deathly dream did not change at all.

He did not forget the reason he was here.

That beautiful figure that haunted his mind entered his dream.

He tried to do all he could to add color to this dream of darkness and death. He created colors that he used to draw out that figure he could not forget.

When the last bit of color entered Wo Li's eyes, the wooden Wo Li suddenly came to life.

The elegant and serene figure was like a lotus bud in bloom. The clear eyes added a hint of murderousness. She looked at Luo Li with a complicated gaze. Her lips moved and she suddenly sang, "I live, thou die, this is separation!"

Boom!

It was as though something struck Luo Li's head.

The black world started to crumble. He felt his body become transparent as Wo Li's body became tangible. The blackness gathered between the two of them and formed a black chain with one end connected to Luo Li's body and the other to Wo Li's body.

An understanding came to Luo Li and his mind was filled with happiness.

Life-Death Lock, so this was the Life-Death Lock!

No, he felt that the name [Life-Death Lock] was not appropriate. The person who had created this technique had never predicted the changes that would occur in the future.

His mind moved. He suddenly pointed at the black chain and said firmly, “This chain is called [Together]!”

When Wo Li heard this, her body shook slightly. Her cool gaze softened. Shrouded in sword essence, her lips moved again as she sang, “Separated in life and death, two hearts chained together, never to be apart even in reincarnation.”

When her words ended, countless complex characters flew out of their bodies and spread along the chain. The characters that came out of Luo Li’s body flashed with a black light while the scripts that came out of Wo Li flashed with a white light. The two energies connected in the middle of the chain.

Ding!

The chain shook and suddenly turned bright red. Those metal links transformed into love knots tied from red string that connected the two.

The red string gradually became faint until it disappeared.

But Luo Li could easily feel the red string. He knew that from today onwards, his fate would be forever tied to Wo Li's fate. Even death would not be able to separate them.

He also knew that he was not a living person any longer.

But joy filled his heart.

It was worth anything to see her again.

The transparent wings on Qian Qing's back vibrated at a rapid rate. Transparent ripples spread into the surroundings with Qian Qing as the center.

When the first wave of ripples came close, Ding Dong who was next to Qian Qing recognized the power and retreated rapidly!

These transparent ripples seemed weak like hair floating in the air.

When the first ripple met the black gold seal soldier, his body suddenly lit up. The formation scripts seemed to be stimulated and floated onto his skin.

The careless smile on the black gold seal soldier's face disappeared and his gaze immediately became cold.

A sound skill!

Those seemingly harmless ripples were an extremely powerful kind of sound attack!

[Cicada Silk Block]!

That was the name of the mo physique he cultivated. Other than himself, no one knew of this. In the bright Void Cicada mo family, sound skilling were a minor technique. However, this [Cicada Silk Block] was extremely powerful. It was very hard to cultivate so there were not many that had successfully done so.

Beside the chariot, Wu Yu was slightly surprised, "Qian Qing actually had a trick like this up his sleeve, it seems that he has some hope of victory."

"The Bright Void Cicada mo bloodline is noble. In the past, it had been very strong. Even though it has declined greatly, they still have some assets. This sound mo skill isn't bad. It seems that there is still value in nurturing him," Marshal Yu said lightly.

Wu Yu nodded and said, "I will take care of this. This mo puppet is really extraordinary. If Lord can get Xiao Mo Ge into your service, he is worth nine of the guards!"

Marshal Yu was also moved by this but remained slight.

The fighting in the sky was intense.

The ancient character on the black gold seal soldier's palm was very sturdy. The sound skill ripples that were even sharper than flying swords would be fended off by a sweep of his hand.

But the Cicada Silk Block came endlessly from all directions.

Qian Qing was channeling his mo physique to its limits. He did not keep anything back. The transparent wings on his back moved and blurred until it turned into a patch of light.

The Cicada Silk Blocks increased and became even more densely packed.

A strange smile suddenly appeared on the black gold seal soldier's lips.

When this strange smile appeared on a cold and indifferent face, it became even more eerie.

He suddenly puffed out his mouth and inhaled!

Hiss!

Like a whale sucking in water, the Cicada Silk Blocks that filled the air flew into the black gold seal soldier's mouth!

In a blink, all the Cicada Silk Blocks in the air were gone as though someone had diligently cleaned all of them.

Burp!

The black gold seal soldier burped in satisfaction. He grinned, baring his teeth, as he waggled his eyebrows at Qian Qing. "Bro, you got more?"

Qian Qing was left dumbstruck.

Ding Dong hadn't expected that his action of retreating would cause A Gui to attack.

A Gui suddenly appeared like a ghost next to him and started the fight. His reaction was quick. He knew how powerful A Gui was and he pointed towards A Gui.

A crisp green light suddenly shot out of his finger towards A Gui!

A Gui's bare feet stepped on the empty air and her figure suddenly disappeared.

Bam!

Ding Dong seemed to be struck by a heavy hammer. His body shook and he was forced multiple steps backwards.

His expression was ugly. He knew that A Gui would be even more troublesome than the black gold seal soldier but only when they actually fought did he truly understand how difficult A Gui was to deal with.

The other's attacks never showed any warning signs and were strangely powerful.

A crack appeared on a piece of armor on his back.

Ding Dong was a Green Turtle mo from Eastern Sea Jie. The turtle shell he grew was difficult to damage with flying swords and was almost the strongest armor that could be found. It was by relying on this impenetrable armor that he could survive countless battles, grow, and reach the status he had today.

But

He looked at A Gui with terror. A Gui's attack just now had caused a crack to appear on his armor, something which had never cracked before!

Damn it!

Yet A Gui did not show any mercy. Her hands continued to move.

Bam bam bam!

The string of powerful attacks hit Ding Dong like raindrops.

With every blow, Ding Dong's body would shake. After a string of successive attacks, his body flew and shook like dice. No matter which direction he fled in, A Gui's attacks would not miss.

The purple energy in A Gui's eyes was burning as she slapped at the air yet her gaze was not on Ding Dong but on Zuo Mo.

Her gaze was filled with concern!

Zuo Mo detected A Gui's gaze but at this time, he was unable to respond. There was a complete transformation occurring inside his body. Shen power and the mo physique were merging.

Each tiny tendril of power that flowed through his body burned like lava.

The ten sun scripts were like ten suns and gave off astounding power and heat.

What shocked Zuo Mo was that they were slowly revolving in unique paths.

But Zuo Mo did not have the time for admiration and shock because he found the true method to use the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Revolutions!

When the ten suns revolved, a vast and strong power filled his body.

This power was unlike the power of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus he had discovered before. It was both yang and strong, but it was not domineering. It was as vast as the ocean and warm as the sun.

Zuo Mo reflexively channeled the [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] that he was still unfamiliar with. That vast yang power furiously flowed into his [Ten Crow Celestial Domain].

The revolutions of the ten suns suddenly accelerated!

Even more power flowed into the [Ten Crow Celestial Domain].

Zuo Mo seemed to have entered another world. The [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] quickly inflated like a balloon. When it reached a

certain size, it did not grow anymore but the revolutions of the ten suns did not stop. Power was still flowing into the Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

A hint of understanding came.

The sun was domineering in one aspect but its heat created life for all beings.

The sun was the beginning of all life!

When these words appeared in his mind, his body suddenly shook at the same time!

The Ten Crow Celestial Domain that was filled with power transformed again.

Vitality erupted. Green grasses sprouted. They grew at an astounding rate and formed a sea of grass in a blink in front of Zuo Mo. Then, little trees grew out of the grass. They grew up into the sky and formed a dense forest.

Animals started to appear in the forest.

Zuo Mo seemed to gain an understanding. He raised his head and looked at the sky.

There was a sun hanging high up.

But as power flowed in, another sun formed.

A third one, a fourth one

The trees and grasses started to wither, the earth started to crack, and the animals died!

When the tenth sun appeared in the sky.

Fire erupted from the burnt earth. The sky was dark red. Streams of fire flowed and burned, and it seemed like hell!

Ten Crow Celestial Domain, the hell domain!

Chapter 642 - Wu Yu

When Bie Han saw Zuo Mo and A Gui move to act, his eyes narrowed into thin blades.

He perceptively realized that the Yu Frontier Guards were unable to control themselves. While their ranks still looked orderly on the surface and unchanged, Bie Han could feel the urges under this calm.

This was an intuition difficult to describe.

Bie Han's mind gradually calmed and his gaze deepened.

When the enemy could not resist from acting, it usually meant an opportunity would appear.

He did not have as much manpower as the enemy and he needed to capitalize on an opportunity.

Wu Yu decided to act.

If he did not act, Qian Qing and Ding Dong would both die on the battlefield. The Ten Yu Frontier Guards had already lost Mister Tong today. If Qian Qing and Ding Dong were also lost, then it really would be a heavy blow.

It was not so easy to recruit experts of this level.

“Miss, have mercy!”

Wu Yu was very fast and suddenly appeared near A Gui to try and rescue Ding Dong.

A Gui and the black gold seal soldier were strong and each had their skills but he did not fear them. He was halfway into marshal level, and could be called a quasi-marshal. He would be considered a top tier expert in the Hundred Savage of the Dark.

When he stepped into the air, a feeling of extreme danger rose.

His heart shuddered and his right hand reflexively struck out from his side.

Bam!

His hand shook and he had to channel his mo skill to suppress this strange burst of energy.

Was this shen power?

Before he could think further, A Gui's attacks came in succession.

A Gui's hands slapped at the air but did not make a sound or any light. However, Wu Yu felt like a mouse caught in the stare of a cat. His hairs stood on end and there was a feeling of extreme danger on his mind.

Wu Yu recognized the severity of the situation and his expression turned grave. His right eye suddenly lit up and a cool blue light shot out.

The air in front of him became as hard as iron.

Bam!

The air exploded. Cold flows of air gusted out in all directions.

Wu Yu was shocked but his gaze became even hotter. As expected of shen power! His move just now was called [Ice Blue]. It was extremely cold and could even freeze air until it was as hard as iron. If one was caught by it, they would most likely die immediately.

A Gui's attacks were hard to predict and wondrously powerful. He hadn't thought that [Ice Blue] would be defeated so easily!

But even so, Wu Yu was happy. His hopes of stepping into marshal level finally showed hope. If he could comprehend shen power, he would benefit greatly and entering marshal level would only be a matter of time.

Wu Yu was very experienced in battle and his power was great. With Ice Blue blocking the attacks for a moment, he managed to steady himself.

On his back, a pair of pitch black bat wings spread. The edges of his wings were covered in blood red bone spikes. Light flowed like fire. He also held a string of copper coins that were round on the outside and had square holes on the inside. There were seven coins that were strung together with a black string.

He snickered and threw the copper coins into the air.

“Black Heart Treasure Coins!” Zhu Ke’s pupils shrunk and his expression changed slightly.

When the words were spoken, many people immediately changed expression.

The sky mo weapons were the top tier of mo weapon and up until now, there were only twenty articles that qualified for this rank. Some mo weapons were wondrous and powerful. While they were not as mysterious and incomprehensible as the sky mo weapons, they were still top grade mo weapons. The owners of those articles were all powerful people or the lord of a territory. These top tier mo weapons that were ranked just slightly below sky mo weapons were called earth mo weapons. They were treasures that countless people in the mo territories dreamed of.

There were twenty sky mo weapons and one hundred and eight of the earth mo weapons.

The Blackheart Treasure Coins were one of those earth mo weapons.

No one had thought that the common-looking copper coins on Wu Yu's hands were the infamous Blackheart Treasure Coins!

There were seven blackheart treasure coins. No one knew who had made them, but this mo weapon could form its own domain called the Ineffectiveness Domain. Inside this domain, the five elements would be thrown into chaos, even yin and yang would be reversed.

The seven treasure coins that flew into the air suddenly disappeared.

The scene in front of A Gui changed. What was under her feet was the blue sky and above her head was the great earth.

Wu Yu smiled. Shen power was strong but it was direct. In his eyes, shen power lacked transformations. He had ways of dealing with it.

Once the Ineffectiveness Domain formed, even gods would have a hard time escaping.

Yet just then, a crack came from nearby. Wu Yu stopped and then reacted. His expression changed and he had a bad thought.

As expected, when he turned around, he saw Qian Qing with his neck twisted.

The black gold seal soldier snickered at him.

Wu Yu's face darkened. Marshal Yu was here, and they had lost so many people. With so many people as an audience, it would not be good if the news spread. He knew that Lord wanted to recruit Xiao Mo Ge's group, but if it became too ugly, then it would not be beneficial for anyone.

A pity!

This mo puppet was very intelligent to have defeated Qian Qing. It was rare to see mo puppets of this level. However, while he felt regret, Wu Yu did not have any intentions of holding back. He needed someone to make an example of!

This would stop now!

He snorted coldly. The bat wings on his back flapped.

The smile on the black gold seal soldier's face suddenly froze. He seemed to be restrained by something and was unable to move.

No matter how he struggled, he was unable to break free.

The black gold seal soldier panicked and shouted at the top of his

lungs, “Big Bro, save me! Save me!”

Wu Yu laughed when he heard this. This mo puppet was really interesting. But his expression turned heavy. “No one can save you!”

He suddenly laughed. He was explaining this to a mo puppet, how stupid!

The black gold seal soldier was like a still pillar of gold, unable to move, and could only shout at the top of his lungs.

Then a slightly hoarse voice came from behind Wu Yu. “Really?”

Wu Yu was startled. Before he could react, the scene in front of him suddenly changed.

A dark red sky with ten suns suspended high up, a cracked earth desolate and endless as fire erupted from it. There was nothing that lived here. White bones piled up everywhere. A feeling of this being the end of the world rose.

Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

Wu Yu’s expression turned stern.

Xiao Mo Ge!

As he expected, a thin figure with the enormous Anti Dragon Claw on his back appeared nearby.

Wu Yu's expression quickly recovered as he examined Zuo Mo curiously. "Oh, you just had a breakthrough? As expected, you are very talented! I noticed that you were at the threshold to completing your Ten Crow Celestial Domain. Now you are able to create this, that wasn't easy!"

He smiled calmly as the black bat wings on his back slowly flapped.

Small flows of air blocked the burning air.

"You are a talented person." Wu Yu said to himself as he flapped his wings. "Young yet having accomplished so much. It is the first time I have seen someone like you."

It seemed to be praise. His expression was filled with disbelief.

"You also cultivate shen power. Something that many people dream of. You are very lucky." He shook his head and said seriously, "But today, you only have one path. Obey and surrender, swear fealty to my Lord. In the future, we will not treat you unfairly. If you persist in resisting, do not blame me for being vicious. Oh, I forgot to tell you, I am also skilled in the secret technique of searching souls."

Wu Yu suddenly smiled lightly. "Isn't it very hard?"

Zuo Mo's body imperceptibly shook.

“This Ten Crow Celestial Domain far surpasses what your power can support. You are very talented to have comprehended to this level. But it is a pity that your body cannot tolerate it.”

Wu Yu said lightly, “I am only giving you this chance because you are talented. If your Ten Crow Celestial Domain is complete, you might be able to restrain me. But right now, you are not a match for me. Surrender, you don't have a chance.”

“You really are too mother***ing chatty!” Zuo Mo forced himself to snort. His right hand shook slightly behind his back and he suppressed it.

Wu Yu shook his head. “The smarter the person, the more likely they do not know when to give up.”

Finishing, his wings suddenly flapped.

A whirlwind appeared in front of him.

The wind spun rapidly and the pillar of wind became thicker. It started to suck up the sand and stone on the ground. In a blink, this pillar of wind became dozens of zhang tall and was still increasing in size!

Zuo Mo did not speak. The ten suns in the sky slowly revolved.

Boom!

Suddenly, dozens of fire pillars erupted and swallowed Wu Yu.

“It is useless.”

Wu Yu’s voice came from behind Zuo Mo.

He appeared behind Zuo Mo, untouched by the flames. That pillar of wind also absorbed much of the flames and formed an enormous pillar of wind that was over five li in diameter. It was like a pillar continuously reaching into the sky. Even the suns in the sky lost color in its presence.

Sand and stone moved. The earth shook like dice.

Zuo Mo’s expression became uglier but he still put all his power into the revolution of the ten suns.

The suns were burning!

The earth started to melt. The stones started to melt. Lava erupted from the cracks. In a blink, the lava flowed into countless rivers that crossed each other.

“You disappoint me,” Wu Yu said indifferently. Almost at the same time, a cold light flashed across his eyes.

He had discovered Xiao Mo Ge’s position.

Ever since Wu Yu stepped into the range of Xiao Mo Ge’s domain, Xiao Mo Ge’s position had been uncertain. The Ten Crow Celestial Domain was Xiao Mo Ge’s domain and his presence had always been hidden well. Wu Yu had been using his speech to disturb the other so he would expose his position.

While his words were easy going, he was actually very wary of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. It was the first ranking domain in general level and it was very powerful. If he faced it head on, even if he won, it would take great effort.

And if he could find Xiao Mo Ge’s position, then he would definitely win!

When he discovered Zuo Mo’s position, he did not hesitate in attacking. While he had said those words, he did not spare anything and used a killing move!

He did not have any intentions of leaving Xiao Mo Ge alive!

[Bat Sickle!]

Zuo Mo felt his body freeze. His body was restrained by a strong power around him. This power was very strange. No matter how

hard he tried, he was unable to break free.

Woosh, Wu Yu suddenly appeared behind Zuo Mo. His bat wings were like two great swords that sliced towards Zuo Mo with green light.

Wu Yu had the confidence that he could cut Zuo Mo in half.

At this time, Zuo Mo did not seem to notice of the danger from behind him. A smile suddenly came onto his face.

Chapter 643 - Deadlock

Wu Yu could not see the smile when it appeared on Zuo Mo's face but for some reason, he had a feeling. His heart jumped. Did Xiao Mo Ge have something up his sleeve?

Yet his wings had already moved at full power. He did not hold anything back in this blow! His pair of wings almost disappeared into the air. Even the howl of movement could not catch up! Even if there was a mountain in front of him, he had the confidence he could cut through it.

Suddenly, great pain came from his wings.

Blood suddenly sprayed from Wu Yu's pair of indestructible wings!

An indescribable pain came from his wings. Wu Yu immediately changed color.

The wings seemed to have been cut up by very thin knives and fell into dozens of pieces in the air!

In the air, dozens of strands that were as thin as hair flickered in and out of view. If it wasn't that there was blood on some of them, Wu Yu would not have detected them at all.

What was this?

Wu Yu felt terror.

But before he could react, his body suddenly became restrained. Countless invisible threads tightly wrapped around him. These invisible thin threads were extremely strong. They started to tighten. Because they were very thin and strong, they were as sharp as knives! Wu Yu's strong physique was forcibly cut open by these tiny strands.

Pew!

Tiny sprays of blood seeped out from all parts of Wu Yu's body. The thin strands sank deeply and terrifyingly into his flesh.

Three Thousand Threads of Worry!

The Three Thousand Threads of Worry could restrain even the Anti Dragon Claw. Wu Yu didn't have the power to resist them.

The black sickle on Zuo Mo's body had not yet disappeared. He was tightly bound but his smile became even brighter. From the beginning he knew that his chances of success at defeating Wu Yu with just the Ten Crow Celestial Domain was not high.

He put his hopes on the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. The Three Thousand Threads of Worry was something that could subdue something as vicious as the Anti Dragon Claw. It shouldn't have a problem against Wu Yu.

He really had used great effort to bait Wu Yu to come close.

Showing weakness, showing pride

Luckily, the outcome was as he had expected. The Three Thousand Threads of Worry could shift from being tangible and intangible.

The two of them were both restrained but one could not forget that they were still inside Zuo Mo's Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

Zuo Mo had expended great effort to lock down Wu Yu. He did not hesitate and the killing moves came right after.

The ten suns in the sky suddenly spun.

Woosh!

An extremely faint flame suddenly sprouted from under Wu Yu.

A blue light rose on Wu Yu's body that stopped the flame.

Inside the blue energy, Wu Yu's expression was terrifying. His body was soaked in blood. A furiously murderousness flashed through his eyes as he bit his tongue.

The blood on his body suddenly moved as though it was alive. Mo

insects the size of a thumb climbed out of his blood.

These mo insects were completely covered in Wu Yu's blood and no matrices could be seen on them. They quickly moved on Wu Yu's body.

As the blood mo insects moved, a thick layer of blood coloured light was released from them which shrouded all of Wu Yu's body.

At this time, the blue light could not withstand the faint gold flame and crumbled.

Zuo Mo had a bad feeling. This blood coloured light was very hardy. Even though it hissed as it was being burned and slowly decreased in size, the speed was very slow.

The faint gold flame was one of Zuo Mo's last tricks.

The Sun Crystal Seed was inside his body, and the shen power he cultivated had merged into the Ten Crow Celestial Domain which caused unexpected changes to happen to this Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

The Sun Shen fire was one of those.

Originally, the flame of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain should have been the seventh-grade Golden Crow Feet Fire. The legend had it that the golden crow was covered in fire, and the three wisps on its feet were the most powerful. Those were called the Golden

Crow Feet Fire.

But Zuo Mo had an immature sun in his body. This Sun Crystal Seed formed the crux of Zuo Mo's Ten Crow Celestial Domain which caused it to rise in power.

But what really caused this change was Zuo Mo's shen power merging into the mo physique. When the Golden Crow Feet Fire was touched by shen power, it underwent an innate change which caused this newborn fire to be peerless in its dominance.

This kind of fire had never been recorded before so Zuo Mo called it the Sun Shen fire.

The Sun Shen Fire was more domineering than all fires that Zuo Mo had ever seen. If Zuo Mo hadn't formed this fire, he would not dare to touch this fire at all.

The Golden Crow Feet Fire was already seventh-grade. This Sun Shen Fire far surpassed it so it probably was eighth-grade. Even with its uniqueness, it was still being stopped by this layer of bloody light. How could Zuo Mo not be shocked?

What was this ghastly thing?

Behind the curtain of blood, Wu Yu was even more astonished. These blood mo insects were his ultimate life-saving measure. They were called bat blood insects. He usually fed them with all kinds of poisons, and varieties of bat blood, including his own

blood.

These bat blood insects were considered immortal. Unless it was a marshal, normal mo weapons and flames were ineffective against them. These bat blood insects could also travel through space at will and were hard to predict and defend against. If it burrowed into the body of the enemy, it would suck the other's blood and energies.

Wu Yu's cultivation had grown in these years and rarely fought. However, he had carefully raised these bat blood insects.

In this emergency, he released these bat blood insects. But he had not expected that the blood layer formed by the bat blood worms could not stop the advance of Ten Crow Celestial Domain's fire!

His first reaction was, 'this was impossible!'

While the Ten Crow Celestial Domain was the first domain in general level, Xiao Mo Ge definitely had not reached its complete form. The power of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain resided in its ability to channel the power of the world, not in its fire. How could it have such a powerful flame?

What he found even harder to believe was that the thin invisible strands on his body actually restrained the bat blood insects!

All of the bat blood insects were tightly restrained and could not break free and move through space!

Watching as the blood barrier was slowly burned away, his hopelessness grew.

“Someone, come! Quick, help!”

A wail echoed through the Ten Crow Celestial Domain but it could not pass out of the domain.

Zuo Mo also felt extremely panicked. Right now, all of his power was focused on powering the Sun Shen Power and he did not have any attention to spare. If someone really came to help, then it would not be good!

Ding Dong had stopped and fled once Wu Yu had thrown out the Blackheart Treasure Coins and set up the Ineffectiveness Realm. He had been unable to breathe under A Gui’s storm of attacks and he finally managed to calm his mind slightly.

Watching as Wu Yu easily restrained that terrifying and ugly woman, Ding Dong felt excited.

Wu Yu Daren, as expected of the first seat of the Ten Yu Frontier Guards!

His power was really unfathomable!

He felt even more anticipation when he saw Wu Yu Daren easily playing with Xiao Mo Ge inside the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. Due to the fright and humiliation he had received, he wanted to kill this group with his own hands.

Yet he was left gaping at the following events.

In a flash, Wu Yu Daren was heavily wounded and unable to move?

Watching as Wu Yu Daren was swallowed by the flames, Ding Dong was so frightened he almost turned and fled. Fortunately, the blood light that came after stopped the flames.

Ding Dong was a very smart person. He quickly saw that while Xiao Mo Ge's Ten Crow Celestial Domain suppressed Wu Yu Daren, the two were in a deadlock.

A daring thought flashed through his mind.

If he could save Wu Yu Daren, in the future, he could do what he wanted under the command of Marshal Yu! Wu Yu Daren was the first expert in Marshal Yu's command and the person most trusted.

Finding riches in danger!

When he thought of this, Ding Dong gritted his teeth. He turned

and charged towards Zuo Mo.

“Ha, you want to do something sneaky?” The black gold seal soldier had a disdainful expression. Because Wu Yu did not have the attention to spare, he had used a way to break free of the [Bat Sickle] on his body.

He looked at Ding Dong with a malicious smile.

Ding Dong’s heart went cold. How could he have forgotten this calamity?

Qian Qing had died by the hands of this strange mo puppet. Even he had been shocked at the power that Qian Qing had concealed. But even so, he had died terribly at the hands of this dark gold mo puppet.

Damn it!

The black gold seal soldier’s grin was terrifying in Ding Dong’s eyes.

————

Woosh woosh woosh!

Dozens of figures flew out of the Yu Frontier Guards. They saw that Wu Yu Daren was in danger and came to help.

Shu Long and the others also flew out when they saw this.

The two sides started to fight in the sky.

Shu Long and the others could be considered of above average power in the mo territories, but they had just fought and this was the moment they were most exhausted. At this time, they were just fighting by risking their lives. Adding on that they were skilled in cooperating, they managed to block this wave of attacks.

The intensity of the battle in the air was almost unimaginable.

The other people were watching entranced. Everyone was shocked at the hardness of Xiao Mo Ge's subordinates. They had thought that these subordinates were tired after a hard battle but they were still unrelenting when facing the famous Yu Frontier Guards.

Where had Xiao Mo Ge recruited such strong subordinates from?

Many people found this hard to comprehend. They had all personally experienced that hard battle against the Ming Bandits. Other than Zhu Ke and a few other powerful people, all of them were tired and completely drained of strength.

Suddenly, a strange sound in the air rang over the entire battlefield.

The Ineffectiveness Domain set up by the Blackheart Treasure Coins was divided in two from the middle as though two enormous hands had ripped it apart. The scenes inside the Ineffectiveness Domain disappeared. With a whine, the seven blackheart treasure coins landed with dimmed lustre on the ground.

A Gui stood silently in the air.

This sudden event immediately changed the situation on the battlefield.

Shu Long's side was naturally cheering while the Yu Frontier Guards had ashen expressions. They had seen how powerful the woman was just now!

The Yu Frontier Guards immediately retreated.

At this time, a sigh sounded across the entire battlefield.

“This marshal is very disappointed in your performance. Does this marshal have to personally fight?”

The Yu Frontier Guards who had been demotivated immediately flushed. Their eyes filled with blood as they moved forward to engage in battle again. The elite soldiers of the Yu Frontier Guards back in the ranks could not stop themselves from entering the fray.

In a blink, the Yu Frontier Guards had the advantage.

Yet just at this time, no one noticed a sharp light flash across Bie Han's eyes.

Chapter 644 - The Golden Crow Battering Ram

Bie Han had felt that the Yu Frontier Guards showed signs of relaxing and becoming disorganized, now with the rush of seemingly random individuals, the previously strong defense was starting to fall apart.

The elite Yu Frontier Guards that were stirred by Marshal Yu had started to fly out of the ranks.

Empty spaces appeared among the organized ranks. These spaces appeared random and did not seem to be of great weakness to the Yu Frontier Guard's thick ranks. Even Marshal Yu dismissed it. For a troop that was ten thousand strong, the departure of several hundred people did not affect the overall strength of the battalion.

However, Bie Han did not think the same.

The Yu Frontier Guards that had charged out were the elite members. They were not great in number but they were all core members of their little teams. They had a direct effect on the overall combat abilities of the Yu Frontier Guards. This effects of this would be hard to detect normally, but if the troops encountered a strong opponent, it would show.

Looking at the Yu Frontier guards that were flying out, Bie Han suppressed his urges to fight.

The weakness was slowly appearing but there was no change in the core formation of Marshal Yu's troops. Even if he charged in now, he would not be able to threaten the core formation.

He continued to wait patiently.

————

The Yu Frontier Guards who had been emboldened into battle were astoundingly strong in battle. Shu Long and the others immediately felt the pressure increase.

However, as A Gui and the black gold seal soldier joined the battle, the pressure on them decreased quickly. Experts like A Gui and the black gold seal soldier could be of great effect in small-scale battles like this.

The two did not have any match. Everywhere they passed, the elite Yu Frontier guards would fall from the sky. They were like ghosts and hard to catch, not giving the enemy a chance to surround them.

But the number of people in the sky increased.

The usually proud Yu Frontier Guards were truly angry now. They crazily flew out of their ranks, and entered the battlefield.

Beside the chariot, a subordinate could not resist urging, "Lord, we need to charge!"

“Charge?” Marshal Yu said slightly.

“Yes!” the subordinate said urgently, “Only one charge would be needed! If this continues, the fatalities will be too high!”

A piece of the sky suddenly became dark red with ten suns fixed at positions inside. They were slowly spinning at an indescribable and profound rhythm. They were like ten magnets that attracted and repelled each other.

Under the ten balls of flame, a figure carrying a dragon claw stood proudly.

Zuo Mo’s face was cold and golden scripts flickered through his eyes. A serene gold light lit up from the sun script at his forehead and he appeared like a god descending to mortal realms.

“Kill!”

The voice was like thunder and rang over the entire battlefield.

The dark red sky suddenly expanded and quickly spread outwards from Zuo Mo.

This transformation came so quickly that more than a hundred of the Yu Frontier Guards were unable to react before they were sucked in. The ten suns suddenly released a powerful golden light

that criss-crossed on the dark red sky, and flames flowed on the ground below.

Among the golden flows of fire, the brigadier level Yu Frontier Guard wailed and started to burn with a boom. They burned to ashes like dry wood in an instant.

Inside the dark red Ten Crow Celestial Domain, the ten suns started to revolve slowly again.

“Such a powerful Ten Crow Celestial Domain!” Zhu Ke couldn’t resist saying in shock.

The [Soul Mo Lure] that he cultivated was one of the top mo skills in the mo world but it focused more on being unpredictable. He could not kill one hundred brigadiers like this.

Ten Crow Celestial Domain, as expected of the first domain in general level!

Unparalleled in its dominance!

This move astounded the entire field!

A brief pause even appeared on the heated battlefield. Everyone was shocked by such a dominating blow.

The Yu Frontier Guards changed expression and unconsciously

showed a thread of fear.

Even though there was an enormous gap between brigadier and general, every one of the general levels present were silent and shocked at seeing one move kill a hundred brigadiers.

Zhu Ke and the others were even more astonished. They knew that Zuo Mo's Ten Crow Celestial Domain had been at an elementary level at the start of battle. But now Ten Crow Celestial Domain was domineering and held a vast presence!

Many people were also puzzled. The [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] was very rare and most of them had never seen it before but Xiao Mo Ge's [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] seemed even more powerful than the records of [Ten Crow Celestial Domain]!

Shock and uncertainty mixed on people's faces.

With a long shout, Zuo Mo shot up. When he was several hundred zhang in the air, he suddenly turned and like a spear, he dove down.

The light of the sun shone at his brow. The air rushed past his face and his hair rippled in the wind. But his face was as hard as stone and did not change. The dark red space around him flickered like a flame. However, it spread across the sky like it did before but was closely held against Zuo Mo's body. Those ten domineering and burning suns turned to ten fist-sized golden balls of flame that revolved rhythmically around Zuo Mo's body.

Having just killed Wu Yu, Zuo Mo was at his peak. His mind was completely clear, the [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] seemed to be a part of his body and moved to his thoughts.

Looking at the fierce battlefield under him, fighting spirit burned inside Zuo Mo and rampaged.

The Anti Dragon Claw on his back seemed to detect his raised spirits and vibrated lightly.

A layer of gold overlaid over Zuo Mo's vision.

The air rushing past him cut like knives but he was unaffected.

Looking at the ground coming towards him, he suddenly spread his arms wide!

Boom!

The ten suns revolving around his body sounded at the same time!

They spun rapidly and increased in speed. The dark red space expanded outwards, pulled by the revolutions of the ten suns. In a blink, Zuo Mo seemed to be smashing towards the ground like a ball of furious dark red flames.

The Yu Frontier Guards paled!

Xiao Mo Ge's target was the Yu Frontier Guard ranks!

“Protect the Lord!”

Panicked voices sounded in waves. The Yu Frontier Guards immediately panicked.

The boom in the air seemed to sound inside their minds. The ground under their feet shook. They looked over in shock. The dark red flow that roared had rushed towards them seeming to increase in size.

They almost suffocated from the pressure!

“Hmph!”

A faint sound came from the chariot and a tall figure appeared in front of the Yu Frontier Guards. No one knew how he came to appear there, but when this figure entered the field of view, everyone had the same two words appear on their minds.

Marshal Yu!

Marshal Yu was finally personally taking action!

Faint blue long hair swayed in the wind. His features seemed to be carved from stone. His eyes were a faint blue. There was a faint

smile on his lips and he seemed to exude a strange charisma.

This was Marshal Yu!

Having already reached marshal level, he was one of the strongest in the Hundred Savage Realm, someone that countless people revered and respected!

Marshal Yu raised his head and his expression was normal as though that terrifying dark red ball of flame did not exist.

Just as everyone's attention was focused on this great battle, no one noticed that Luo Li who had been lying beside Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng had silently stood up.

There was a faint smile on the corner of his mouth.

Then his figure started to fade as though he was disappearing into the void.

Beside him, a beautiful figure seemed to materialize.

A peerlessly beautiful face slowly became clear.

She opened her eyes.

Marshal Yu!

Zuo Mo's pupils contracted but at this time, he was at his peak. He did not feel any terror. That great and motionless figure below stimulated his fighting spirit to burn brighter.

Come!

The ten suns moved even faster and Zuo Mo's mind became even clearer.

His eyes were tightly locked onto Marshal Yu and did not move away.

As the distance between them closed, an imperceptible look of shock flashed through Marshal Yu's eyes.

Now was the time!

Zuo Mo's figure seemed to oppose the rules of the world and suddenly came to a complete halt in the air. There was no buffer between the extreme high speed movement and the extreme stillness. His position was extremely strange, his chest and abdomen sucked in, his body bowed like a bow. His spread arms were brought together in front of his body.

“Kill!”

His forehead suddenly lit up. A golden energy rippled across his face.

The golden flames suddenly shrunk into the center like they were grabbed by an invisible hand!

A golden pillar that was about seven zhang thick smashed towards Marshal Yu at an astounding speed. The ten golden crows on the pillar were all at different positions.

The [Golden Crow Battering Ram]!

Unlike the loud noise just now, the golden pillar was silent when it moved as though it was intangible.

Marshal Yu's pupils suddenly contracted. A thread of a smile appeared on his lips. "Good attack!"

He reached out with his right hand and pushed towards the golden pillar descending from the sky!

Hiss!

A strange howl filled the air.

The people on the ground feel a strong suction force come from the sky that caused them to almost trip and fall. All of them

jumped in fright and steadied themselves. Air flashed across their bodies and gathered in the sky. They almost thought they were inside a windstorm.

If they were watching from the sky, they could see it more clearly.

The air from a radius of one hundred li around Marshal Yu's raised right hand was gathering. If one looked from afar, they would see it was a great funnel.

The power of one marshal level attack was this powerful!

Zhu Ke and the others had pale faces. They had been shocked by Lin Qian's sword strike but right now, they found that the distance between general and marshal level was unable to be crossed! Compared to Marshal Yu's blow, Lin Qian's sword strike was like a firefly compared to the moon.

There was an innate difference between the two's power!

Those that were less brave felt their knees weaken and almost sank to the ground.

Zuo Mo did not know what other people were thinking. At this moment, his mind was completely clear and unaffected. He also saw the power of Marshal Yu's attack but he wasn't afraid at all. He felt excited! Unusually excited!

Marshal level!

So this was marshal level!

His calm eyes was filled with the light of excitement and determination.

His hands pressed together and mo matrices lit up on the golden pillar. The ten golden crows became even brighter in color and the golden pillar seemed to slow down as though it was moving through water.

Marshal Yu had not thought that Zuo Mo would have transformation to the attack at this time!

He could not disguise his shock this time!

Zuo Mo could not maintain his calm. This was his strongest move. His mind was excited and he could not help but shout soundlessly.

Go, Golden Crow Battering Ram!

Chapter 645 - Death Lock Separation Sword

Clang!

A thick deep sound seemed to burst in people's minds. With a deep rumbling, it passed through their bodies and numbed their extremities. The hair on their bodies stood on end.

Time seemed to stop in this moment.

The Golden Crow Battering Ram stopped twenty zhang away from Marshal Yu's head.

Pia, a crack suddenly appeared on the glittering surface of the Golden Crow Battering Ram. Then several more appeared, crack crack crack, cracks quickly spread across the surface of the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

Boom!

The Golden Crow Battering Ram suddenly gave off a blinding light. As it exploded, a domineering and burning presence exploded.

At the same time, a sharp light flashed across Marshal Yu's eyes.

His upraised right hand pushed up again!

The collision of two great powers was like two meteors crashing together. The light was as bright as that of a sun!

The air within hundreds of li roared and raged with turbulent gales.

Everyone staring at the clash only saw a blinding white light. . The thundering explosion caused their ears to ring, and the world seemed silent. However, they could not hear anything clearly. Many people reflexively gaped in horror. Those that were more powerful and skilled forced themselves to calm down. They detected the incoming danger.

A shock wave rushed at them like a steel wall!

Bam bam bam!

The mo that met it first were unable to react before they seemed to be launched with a heavy hammer. They threw up blood as their bodies were thrown back.

The terrifying wave of air was unstoppable. The elite Yu Frontier Guard Forces were like dry branches tossed in the wind and unable to resist at all.

Zhu Ke and the others changed expression. They shielded the princesses as they retreated.

Those that were slower to react and were swept away by the

wave of air.

It was alright if they escaped with the momentum of the terrifying power. Some people wanted to use their strength to steady themselves. Cracks sounded. For these people the bones inside their body could not withstand such a strong power and shattered!

It was like the apocalypse had come!

Everyone was stunned. Their minds were shook and their faces ashen.

The power of one attack left all of them were stunned!

No one noticed that a light ethereal figure marched against the gust of air, against the flow of people.

The steely wave of air was like tofu in front of this beautiful figure. It did not cause any obstruction for her. Like a nimble fish, her body shook and she burrowed into the wave of air.

Marshal Yu narrowed his eyes. His right hand that was now placed behind his back was trembling slightly.

He was extremely shocked.

Ever since he had reached marshal level he had not fought, no one dared to. In the Hundred Savage of the Dark, marshal level existences were the apex. Even though he focused more time on other affairs, he had not neglected his own cultivation.

He actually felt a thread of pressure from Xiao Mo Ge's attack!

If it wasn't that his right hand was still uncontrollably trembling, he would not believe this reality.

Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

Was it really that powerful?

He felt uncertain. In front of a marshal, the domain of a general level should not be a threat at all! But why did Xiao Mo Ge's [Ten Crow Celestial Domain] make him feel pressured?

Was it because of shen power?

As the thought flashed through Marshal Yu's mind. His eyes lit up.

It definitely was shen power.

The light and the gusts of air did not affect him at all. He remained motionless in the air like rock. He raised his head to look

at the black dot in the sky. A smile came to the corner of his mouth.

Compared to Marshal Yu's barely ruffled appearance, Zuo Mo was left in a much sorrier state after the clash.

Smoke wafted off of him and his clothing was in tatters. Large and small wounds covered his body. The dark red light around him was dim and the ten suns seemed to have lost their glow. The attack just now didn't just drain all of his power, it had caused him significant injuries.

His face was pale and the sun script on his forehead was dim. The light from the other nine sun scripts were also gone. Without the ten suns absorbing the shen power, the shen power was left completely unchecked. It now rampaged through his body.

Zuo Mo forced down the blood that rose to his throat and stared coldly at Marshal Yu.

"You are the only one I have ever seen to have such presence at general level," Marshal Yu said idly. His tone was filled with praise.

Zuo Mo did not speak. It wasn't that he didn't want to, but he was unable to. His body seemed to be boiling right now. The shen power rampaged through his body, and the attack just now had

actually caused a crack to appear in the seal on the Sun Crystal Seed.

At the Battlefield of Sealed Extinction, the ancient corpse had said that Zuo Mo wasn't able to absorb the power of the Sun Crystal Seed because it was too powerful, and he would even be wounded so the corpse had sealed the seed's power.

Zuo Mo had never expected the attack just now would cause a crack to appear in the Sun Crystal Seed's seal.

A hot flow that almost melted him slowly escaped from the Sun Crystal Seed. This hot flow was minuscule but once it appeared, the messy shen power inside Zuo Mo's body suddenly quieted.

It was the first time Zuo Mo had ever encountered a situation where his shen power would stop moving. A strange feeling rose.

At this time, an extremely vicious and icy flow suddenly flowed along his back and into his body.

Zuo Mo's expression changed slightly and his heart skipped a beat.

Anti Dragon Claw!

Damn it, at such an important time, the rebellious Anti Dragon Claw actually came out to meddle!

The Three Thousand Threads of worry did not move at all. No matter how Zuo Mo tried, it didn't seem to be able to do anything against this icy flow.

Marshal Yu slowly flew up until he was at the same height as Zuo Mo.

He looked wryly at the motionless Zuo Mo and said idly, "What? You only have the power for one attack? It is not realistic to think that you can defeat me with this one attack."

His eyes were sharp and he could see that it was a mess inside Zuo Mo's body. Not just fighting, Zuo Mo didn't even have the power to move a finger right now.

Marshal Yu smiled faintly. His hand spread and he grasped at Zuo Mo.

The air around Zuo Mo suddenly solidified. Zuo Mo was unable to move.

Having captured the other alive, Marshal Yu was in a much better mood. Xiao Mo Ge cultivated shen power but he was far weaker in terms of power. He only had the power for one attack. Thinking of the gains this time, he disregarded his losses.

With the shen power cultivation method in hand, he would have a chance at a breakthrough. More importantly, with shen power,

he would have the hope of breaking into king level!

King Level!

These two words caused his mind to heat up.

He wanted to return immediately and study shen power. But he was a marshal and he had strong self-control, so he repressed the impulse. He smiled and then pulled his hand back.

Zuo Mo's figure flew towards Marshal Yu.

Zuo Mo immediately panicked.

At this time, a serene singing voice seemed to come from the unseen ground.

“Why is life a joy, why is death a sorrow, two hearts separated by yin and yang, bound together by a chain!”

Countless sword lights blossomed. In a flash, there was a sea of them. They seemed to materialize out of nowhere. They budded, bloomed, and then withered at a stunning rate.

A beautiful and cool figure stood like a sword in the sea of flowers.

When Zuo Mo saw the newcomer, he was startled. And then he reacted, it was Wo Li, Luo Li Shidi's sword spirit!

Had Luo Li Shidi woken up?

In this moment, Zuo Mo was filled with joy!

Luo Li's awakening meant that he had comprehended the [Life-Death Lock]!

In the sea of flowers, Wu Li's figure was as cool as a sword but that added to her charisma.

Where was Luo Li Shidi?

Zuo Mo could not see Luo Li anywhere and was slightly puzzled. But then he started to panic. Even if Luo LI Shidi had comprehended the [Life-Death Lock], he definitely was not a match for Marshal Yu.

Damn it!

He was going to suffer great losses in business this time!

Zuo Mo did not have any of the fighting spirit he had previously.

He wanted to gather his power to tell Luo Li Shidi to run. But his body did not move. It was completely out of his control and he couldn't make a sound.

Marshal Yu was slightly shocked. "You have some skill."

These beautiful flowers were made from countless sword essences. Layered together, it was like a beautiful sea of flowers.

Flower Sea Sword Domain?

He smiled dismissively. Inside, he pondered the origins of this Xiao Mo Ge. The his subordinates were astounding. But then he realized a thought. Xiao Mo Ge was in his hands. If he did not willingly submit, then he could set a jinzhi in the other. Marshal Yu did not fear that Xiao Mo Ge would rebel.

As to these powerful subordinates of Xiao Mo Ge, they would naturally now belong to him.

When he thought of this, his mood became even better. The sword essence sea in front of him became even more joyful to look at.

Wo Li floated in the middle of the sword sea and looked at Marshal Yu with a cool and clear gaze.

She suddenly closed her eyes and her lips moved. "Life-Death Lock Separation Sword!"

Marshal Yu's heart jumped and a feeling of danger rose.

Pia, a flower suddenly shattered. As the petals fell, a tiny red chain was pulled out of the flower and each of the petals and lengthened.

The sea of flowers shattered.

The red chains criss-crossed and layered over one another. In a flash, countless red chains of varying thickness winded back and forth like a sea of red snakes.

The red chains shot at Marshal Yu at a stunning speed.

What was strangest was that these chains were completely made from sword essence! And this strange sword essence that was not living or dead, nor yin or yang. Even Marshal Yu who had seen many things had never seen such a strange sword essence before!

What sword essence was this?

The underestimation and dismissal that Marshal Yu held before was swept away. His expression became grave.

This sword essence was extremely strange. He had a strong feeling if he came into contact with these sword essences, the outcome would not be good. He could not say why this was. This

presence that was not living nor dead, and between yin and yang was a strange existence that seemed to waver between life and death.

He detected danger.

Chapter 646 - Chained Together

It really was strange!

How long had it been since he had felt danger?

Danger, ever since he stepped into marshal level, this word seemed to be unconnected to him. When the presence of danger came at him, even he blanked for a moment.

However, Marshal Yu quickly reacted. With a high hum, a sharp green sword light penetrated the sea of flowers and flew into his hands.

The long green sword was narrow and carved with ancient scripts.

This was not a flying sword that xiuzhe used, but a mo weapon, a mo sword!

With the sword in his hand, all of Marshal Yu's hesitation and uncertainty was swept away. The sword in his hand was called the Green Carp Tongue Sword, and was one of his mo weapons. It was ranked above the Black Heart Treasure Coins.

The Green Carp Tongue Sword had been obtained after he had killed an enemy back when he was a general. At the beginning, its quality was average, and paled in comparison from its power today. He had tried all the ways he could think off, refining it with

all kinds of methods available to him. Its power continued to increase, and it jumped into the ranks of earth mo weapons to become one of the most famous mo weapons of the present era.

The Green Carp Tongue Sword was forged from the tongue of a rotten carp mo. The rotten carp mo was a kind of mo that lived deep in the sea. Their strongest organ was their green tongues which were hard and sharp, able to pierce through any object. After their death, the only part that would not rot was their green tongue. That was how the name of their clan came to be.

The Green Carp Tongue Sword slashed at the flower sea split into.

The sky full of red chains decayed when touched by the green light! The green light flashed, and a deep and black fissure appeared in the sky!

A sword that could rend space!

A dark and rotten presence came from the crack. The flora that still remained on the ground quickly withered.

The sea of flowers quickly wilted and withered. In a flash, the endless sea of flowers became dried and withered branches.

The most important reason the Green Carp Tongue Sword was able to rank among the earth mo weapons was that it could rend apart space. Marshal Yu had found an ancient jinzhi from the

remnants of a record. It was able to rend space and connect to Rotten Jie, and the most important material to forge this jinzhi was the tongue of a rotten carp mo.

For an expert like Marshal Yu, once the crux was identified, everything else wasn't a problem to figure out.

The Green Carp Tongue sword was forged according to this method.

The Rotten Jie was a strange land. It wasn't large, but was filled with monsters. What was most famous was the unique miasma there, it had yin and corrosive properties. It was one of the greatest poisons in the world. It was even troublesome for marshals if they came into contact with it. If one was weaker than marshal level, they would be immediately killed.

As the corrosive miasma flooded out of the crack in space, Wo Li's sword essence flower sea quickly withered. Those tiny red chain links quickly melted like snow under the sun.

Wo Li's calm gaze didn't change, as though what was happening was within her predictions.

She bent down to touch the withered flowers, and sang in a clear voice, "Life not life, death not death, my heart will not separate."

The dried flower sea on the ground suddenly started to absorb the rotten miasma. In a flash, it seemed to have taken in nutrients

and bloomed again. The flowers that had absorbed the corrosive miasma became even brighter and the red chains that had melted took form again, this time with rainbow colored marks scattered throughout.

A sweet taste filled the air.

“Interesting!” Marshal Yu said with a change in his expression. In his view, this astounding change was extraordinary.

As a marshal, he had better judgement than other experts. With a glance, he saw that Wo Li’s cultivation was a strange one related to life and death. This surprised him. Life and death was one of the most profound and eternal questions. A method with life and death as the core principle was always cryptic and difficult to cultivate. But any method that dared to use the principle of life and death was always a powerful one.

He recognized the danger and became cautious.

The other’s presence was very strange. She brimmed with life, but it seemed to have been drawn and transformed from death energy. There were two completely opposite presences, life and death, on her. This strange state meant that he was unable to accurately gauge the other’s strength.

Marshal Yu understood. The corrosive miasma would not threaten this mysterious woman, it would only become fertilizer for the sea of flowers. The corrosive miasma was a kind of death energy formed after decaying. The other had the ability to turn life

to death, and change death to life.

The sea of flowers rippled and sword essence moved.

Suddenly, many slender chains appeared at Marshal Yu's feet and wrapped tightly around him.

"Hm!" Marshal Yu snorted coldly. The chain around his legs immediately flew apart.

Yet at this time, the sea of flowers started to slowly spin with Wo Li as the center.

The sea of flowers was becoming an enormous whirlpool!

Clank!

The sound of an enormous chain sounded. A great chain slowly rose from under her feet. With every movement upwards, there was the sound of the chain trembling.

The chain was thicker than an adult arm. It was completely black and covered with red mo matrices.

Marshal Yu's expression was grave and he threw the Green Carp Tongue Sword into the air.

When the Green Carp Tongue Sword flew into the sky, it turned into a slender green carp. Suddenly, a burst of thunder sounded, and electrical snakes danced. Rain droplets poured down.

The curtain of rain covered the world as mist spread.

These droplets of rain seemed gentle, yet the sea of flowers suddenly slowed under the great rain.

Marshal Yu's [Rain Domain of No Return]!

Each rain droplet contained great power, and was so sharp it could penetrate armor. The ground immediately became riddled in holes.

However, while the sea of flowers slowed in its spinning under the Rain Domain of No Return, it was still blooming brightly.

Wo Li looked indifferently at Marshal Yu as the chain slowly rose from behind her back.

If Marshal Yu could enter the sea of flowers, he would find that under Wo Li's feet, at the other end of the sea of flowers, there was a transparent figure, Luo li. He was standing at the other end of the sea of flowers, the chain moving down from his back.

Chained Together.

This move was called [Chained Together]!

Zuo Mo didn't have the time to pay attention to the fight. The situation inside his body was the strangest at this time.

That thread of hot flow from the Sun Crystal Seed immediately intimidated the shen power that had messed up his body like a king conquering the world. Yet when the dark and vicious energy of the Anti Dragon Claw also burrowed into Zuo Mo's body, it was like a furious lion that leapt over.

The cold and vicious energy of the Anti Dragon Claw did not show weakness and welcomed the confrontation.

It was like a storm. The two powers were evenly matched as they fought.

The Zuo Mo's body became the battlefield for these two presences. For a while, the left side of Zuo Mo's body would be extremely cold while his right side was burning. These two powers were like two monsters inside Zuo Mo's body. Zuo Mo's shen power didn't dare to move, like a frightened child.

Everywhere they passed, his body would be left extremely damaged. Fortunately, Zuo Mo still had the Greenvine Mystical Water. This droplet of Greenvine Mystical Water was intelligent and it continued to heal Zuo Mo's body.

But the next event caused Zuo Mo's soul to almost fly out of his body.

As though it was stimulated by the Anti Dragon Claw more hot flows came from the Sun Crystal Seed, and in response the Anti Dragon Claw, the peerless mo weapon, did not back off. Threads of cold and vicious energy continued to burrow into his body from his back.

The two sides started to fight intensely again.

Zuo Mo's face was white!

Heavens, if they continued, ge wouldn't have enough Greenvine Mystical Water no matter how much ge had!

If this continued, his body would definitely be ripped apart by these two presences.

But what Zuo Mo hadn't expected was that the hot flows from the Sun Crystal seed quickly gained the upper hand. It clearly was stronger. Zuo Mo sighed in relief. If the two continued to fight, he would most likely die quickly.

But the following developments cause Zuo Mo to panic again.

The hot flows of the Sun Crystal Seed that had the upper hand

left scorched dust behind in its path. Even the Greenvine Mystical Water was unable to repair it.

Zuo Mo understood. The hot flows from the Sun Crystal Seed were not something his body could tolerate right now. Compared to the present situation, the previous situation when the two sides had been evenly matched was much better.

Little Anti, give a bit more cold energy, a little bit more!

Zuo Mo furiously thought of ways to help. But the cold energy didn't increase, and were being destroyed by the Sun Crystal Seed.

Zuo Mo who had been praying furiously saw this and was enraged.

Useless person!

You couldn't even defeat an immature fireball, you sky mo weapon, sky mo weapon my ass!

Zuo Mo swore inside.

When he thought this, the Anti Dragon Claw on his back suddenly vibrated furiously. It seemed to have heard Zuo Mo's curses. A vast vicious presence that was many times stronger than before furiously charged into Zuo Mo's body as though it was furious!

The Three Thousand Threads Of Worry seemed to detect that this was a crucial time, and had loosened its restraint on the Anti Dragon Claw.

This burst of energy from the Anti Dragon Claw was extremely strong. When it charged into Zuo Mo's body, it scattered the hot flows from the Sun Crystal Seed. Zuo Mo felt the Anti Dragon Claw continue to tremble on his back. Zuo Mo seemed to have a feeling that the Anti Dragon Claw was a brawny large man that was now roaring smugly with laughter.

But Zuo Mo didn't cheer and almost wailed. The presence of the Anti Dragon Claw had scattered the hot flows of the Sun Crystal Seed and was now rampaging through his body.

The vicious killing intent was now also rapidly destroying his body!

Damn it!

Zuo Mo wanted to cry. Luckily, the Sun Crystal Seed was unable to tolerate defeat and another burning flow of heat came out of the crack and leap towards the vicious energies of the Anti Dragon Claw.

The two forces teetered back and forth. Zuo Mo's body became the battlefield where the two forces fought a tug-of-war.

All kinds of great pain tortured Zuo Mo's nerves but he was unable to move or cry out. In front of these two great vicious things, Zuo Mo was so minuscule he was an infant.

But he did not give up.

Even if it was painful to his bones, he gritted his teeth and maintained his calm to focus his attention.

He knew that if he was to find a way to survive the battle of these two great and viscous forces, he had to be calm!

He didn't remember what time it was, just as Zuo Mo was becoming numb

A chance arrived!

Chapter 647 - Transformation

Nothing could rival the brutal presence of the Anti Dragon Claw, not even the wasteland beast that Zuo Mo could summon using the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art. But this brutal presence was nothing compared to its power in the past. According to Pu Yao and Wei, the Anti Dragon Claw had been weakened for thousands of years by the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. This caused Zuo Mo to desire and admire what presence the Anti Dragon Claw had in the past.

The brutal energies of the Anti Dragon Claw furiously flooded into Zuo Mo's body.

The Sun Crystal Seed was stimulated by this. A thick, almost tangible, flow of heat poured out from the crack as it slowly advanced.

One was an unparalleled ancient and vicious object, the other was a great treasure of the world, one cold, one hot. When the two forces came into contact, it was like cold water poured into hot oil.

In front of these two terrifying powers, Zuo Mo's steel hard mo physique was fragile as paper. In a flash, it was covered in holes. If it wasn't for the Greenvine Mystical Water's healing properties, he would have already turned to dust long ago.

But as the battle heated up, the positions of the two sides steadied and they gathered near each of the ten sun matrices on Zuo Mo's body.

These ten sun matrices of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique were naturally attuned to the Sun Crystal Seed and acted as wells where shen power naturally gathered. The Sun Crystal Seed's power flowed into the ten mo matrices as a result.

Taking advantage of this the cold and brutal energies of the Anti Dragon Claw quickly took over all of Zuo Mo's body and started to furiously attack these ten sun mo matrices.

If someone was to touch Zuo Mo's body now, they would find to their shock that his entire body was freezing but the ten sun mo matrices burned like hot metal.

As the battle intensified, even the shen power in Zuo Mo's sealed right hand was attracted and entered this great battle.

Zuo Mo himself was left extremely weak.

The powers inside his body rampaged out of control. His body was a mess and heavily injured.

Yet at this moment, Zuo Mo found a chance.

There was another power in Zuo Mo's body that he had always forgot—the Soul Setting Divine Light!

This divine light came from Wei's succession. Other than placing

jinzhi in Gu Ming Gong, Zuo Mo had never used it again. It was not that Zuo Mo had a low opinion of its power, but the succession of the Soul Setting Divine Light was too ancient and too difficult to understand. Even Wei could not speak of the specifics. The divine light itself was strange and Zuo Mo didn't even know where to begin studying it.

What he had not expected was that the Soul Setting Divine Light slowly emerged out of the Three Thousand Threads of Worry during this moment of great danger. These two terrifying powers, Three Thousand Threads of Worry and the Soul Setting Divine Light, had not destroyed each other. Zuo Mo was not surprised about the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. Something that could restrain the Anti Dragon Claw had to be a treasure on par with the Anti Dragon Claw. This divine light that originated from the dawn of the world also was unaffected. Zuo Mo immediately realized that the Soul Setting Divine Light was a treasure on the same level as the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed!

When the Soul Setting Divine Light burrowed out of the Three Thousand Threads of Worry, it slowly swam like a rainbow fish in Zuo Mo's torn up body.

Forced to desperate straits, Zuo Mo's heart jumped when he discovered the Soul Setting Divine Light.

Opportunity!

Right now, all other powers in his body were completely suppressed by the Sun Crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw so he could not use them. The Three Thousand Threads of Worry were

not suppressed but because of the uniqueness of its power, it was of no help in this battle.

The sudden discovery of the Soul Setting Divine Light was akin to a life-saving herb to Zuo Mo!

Zuo Mo immediately controlled his emotions and pushed down the joy and excitement he felt. He thought back to how he had previously activated the Soul Setting Divine Light.

As expected, when his thoughts shifted, the Soul Setting Divine Light immediately stopped where it was.

Zuo Mo was joyed. It seemed that he could control the Soul Setting Divine Light. Given his present helplessness, a power that he could control was what he needed the most! Even if this power was tiny, he would not give it up. A power that he could control meant that he did not have to wait for his fate to be determined by others.

He carefully controlled the Soul Setting Divine Light. Because it had been too long since he had used it, and he wasn't familiar to start with, his control was extremely crude at first. Zuo Mo was not demotivated. He usually seemed to be uncaring, but the more dangerous the moment, the clearer his mind was and the more patience he had.

The conflict between the Sun Crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw reached a white-hot level.

The burning flow that poured out from the Sun Crystal Seed continued to flood into the ten sun mo matrices. The ten sun mo matrices were quickly filled up. They were filled with power like ten balls of flame. Because the power that was added was too strong, the mo matrices were completely awakened. The awakened mo matrix actually concealed its light. The burning heat turned to darkness.

Light and dark, they were twins!

Zuo Mo seemed to understand when he saw this scene!

The power in every sun mo matrix far surpassed the limits of what the mo matrix could tolerate. If there was no outside force that reduced the power, the Sun mo matrix would not be able to tolerate the overflow and would explode. It would only end up in one way for Zuo Mo, dying in an explosion of blood and gore.

Fortunately, there was the Anti Dragon Claw!

The cold and brutal energy of the Anti Dragon Claw surrounded the ten sun matrices from all directions. The stimulated Sun Crystal Seed realized that the sun matrices was a battlefield where it held the advantage. There, held the home ground advantage! If it caused these sun matrices to explode, then it would undoubtedly lose this advantage!

Therefore, the sun matrices were simulated on a path that Zuo Mo never thought about.

—Evolution!

The power of the Sun Crystal Seed flooded every part of the Sun Matrix. The power that was several levels above the sun mo matrix repeatedly cleansed the mo matrix causing it to change.

Like grass sprouting, the complex mo matrix silently grew.

It was the first time Zuo Mo observed the growth of a mo matrix.

The Anti Dragon Claw was also intelligent. It responded to the transformation of the Sun mo matrix.

A layer of frost appeared on Zuo Mo in the areas around the sun matrix. This layer of frost was not white or blue, but a faint grey. A portion of the Anti Dragon Claw's brutal energy started to heal Zuo Mo's almost ground up flesh.

Yet the Anti Dragon Claw's icy power was too brutal. Even if it was trying to heal, it felt like thousands of little icy knives cutting repeatedly into Zuo Mo's flesh.

Zuo Mo endured the heart-boring pain as he carefully controlled the Soul Setting Divine Light. He hid it in a corner and waited patiently for a chance. He realized that this moment was not the best time to act. The Sun crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw were all accumulating power. The following clash would most likely be even more intense than before.

Zuo Mo's mo physique was sturdy, but in front of something as vicious as the Anti Dragon Claw, it was not enough. Large amounts of blood and flesh disappeared like melting snow in front of the brutal energies. Leaving only the blood and flesh that could absorb the brutal energy.

This lead to a process in which Zuo Mo's blood and flesh was completely transformed. The strongest flesh quickly expanded and thrived, the weakest rapidly shrank and died. They continued to struggle in the ocean of brutal energy and gradually stabilized.

No one noticed that a grey mo matrix had appeared inside Zuo Mo's body and it was slowly growing, creeping across his body like ivy. The grey mo matrixes were completely different than the mo matrices he had before. Some dense scales appeared on the edges of the mo matrix. If one looked closely, they would find that these fine scales were extremely similar in color and shape to the scales of the Anti Dragon Claw, but much smaller.

The heavy brutal energy filled the space one zhang around Zuo Mo and seemed to be one with the Anti Dragon Claw.

But outside of this one zhang, the presence of the energy was completely absent. Not allowing anyone present to detect it.

Everyone's gaze was deeply attracted to the battle between Marshal Yu and Wo Li.

“[Chain Together]!

Wo Li's slender fingers pointed at Marshal Yu. Her cool gaze contained determination and fighting spirit. Under the sea of flowers, Luo Li was reflected. While his body was transparent, there was a smile at the corner of his mouth.

Almost at the same time, the two of them spoke.

Wo Li's voice was cool and as hard as a sword, “Together!”

Luo Li's voice was a murmur and gentle as water, “Together!”

Woosh, A thick chain suddenly flew out from under Wo Li's feet like an ancient snake that shot at marshal Yu.

The air was filled with the sound of the chain clanking. The whole of the flower sea was trembling.

A strange presence that was hard to describe moved into the surroundings as the chain clanked.

This was

Zhu Ke's expression was uncertain.

“This is” the middle-aged attendant exclaimed but she

suddenly stopped as her face became completely bloodless.

Xia suddenly raised his head. His breathing was so heavy it could be heard clearly through the thick armor.

————

This was the presence of life and death!

Marshal Yu's eyes were filled with shock and gravity. This snake-like metal chain was made from two opposing powers, life and death!

If he was not seeing it with his own eyes, he would not believe it!

Life and death, two diametrically opposed powers yet they were merged together so beautifully. It really was fantastical.

What method was this?

Who was that woman?

Countless thoughts flashed through his mind but in a moment, his mind became clear again.

This chain that was woven from life and death was one of the highest powers that he had ever seen. It was so exquisite, so

fantastical, it was hard to believe. As a marshal, even Marshal Yu sighed and praised it.

But such an exquisite and creative power still had weaknesses.

It was not condensed enough.

The other should have just comprehended it a short time ago. Even though they had understood to the crux of the ability, they lacked practice and the power was too weak. It was akin to a very powerful seedling. Maybe it would be powerful when it matured, but the seedling that had just germinated was thin and delicate.

Power came from methods, but also from an accumulation of experience.

Compared to this method of life and death that was undoubtedly a top skill, Marshal Yu did not have anything like that. But in terms of accumulation, the other was far lacking.

He had never thought that he would be forced to such a state by such a young woman.

Marshal Yu smiled, full of self-scorn. However, someone that could comprehend such a wondrous method was qualified to be his opponent!

The smile on his face gradually faded away. His expression became solemn and devout as he raised the Green Carp Tongue

Sword.

The countless hardship and obstacles on his path of cultivation flashed passed his mind's eye. His mind suddenly broadened!

A figure stood with a sword under a drizzle of rain.

I will let you see the true power of this marshal level's [Rain Domain of No Return]!

Chapter 648 - No Return

The feeling of extreme hot and cold mixing together made him want to throw up blood.

But Zuo Mo did not have the time to throw up blood. He was furiously learning how to manipulate the Soul Setting Divine Light. Learning as he went was not something that he wanted to do, but he had no choice at this time. The Soul Setting Divine Light was his lifeboat. Other than this, he had nothing else to respond with.

The Soul Setting Divine Light, the light that accompanied the dawn of the world. It was like a little multicoloured fish, sometimes obedient and sometimes mischievous. Regardless of the urgency Zuo Mo felt, he could only calm down and experience it.

This was a multicoloured world.

All kinds of coloured light were gathered in this extremely slender divine light. The birth of all colours of light when the world had began were included in this little divine light.

It was not of the five elements, nor did it belong to yin or yang, and had nothing to do with yao, mo, and xiuzhe.

When Zuo Mo's mind was immersed in the Soul Setting Divine Light, an ocean of chaotic information followed him. What was most attention-catching was an ancient presence that struck at his mind.

In this moment, he seemed to see the primordial chaos, the dawn of the world.

He knew that this was an illusion. The Soul Setting Divine Light might have a sliver of an ancient presence, but much of it had disappeared after being passed down for so many years. It would be good if just a tenth of a percent remained. Just how much information was at the dawn of the world. Could a divine light hold all that?

But even this one tenth of a percent was precious enough.

The dawn of the world was the beginning of all methods. Just comprehending a little bit would be of endless benefit. On this, no matter if the person was yao, mo, or xiuzhe, they were all the same.

Zuo Mo did not have any methods of comprehending this presence from the dawn of the world. Even if it was the core of all methods, even if it was the most precious part of the Soul Setting Divine Light.

In such an emergency, wasn't trying to comprehend it just seeking death? The practical Little Mo Ge was furiously pondering the use of the divine light, and how to manipulate the divine light.

Under the threat of death, a person's potential would be more easily uncovered. Zuo Mo actually understood a bit more of the Soul Setting Divine Light that usually was so hard to understand.

The most powerful ability of the Soul Setting Divine Light was “setting.” It could “set” everything in the world, and this was the reason for its name. Zuo Mo could not understand the reason, but this was not a time to study the reason. It was fine as long as he knew how to use it.

Zuo Mo used the Soul Setting Divine Light to sweep a tiny bit of the brutal energy of the Anti Dragon Claw. As he had expected, this vicious energy froze where it was.

This caused Zuo Mo’s confidence to rise. He tested it on a tiny hot flow from the Sun Crystal Seed. It also was a success.

He suppressed the impulse he felt and patiently waited for an opportunity.

The Soul Setting Divine Light was a wonder, but this fragment of Soul Setting Divine Light was extremely small. Zuo Mo suspected that it would not be able to set a great deal of power. It could only be used at a critical moment, and important place.

The mo matrix was growing and changing. He knew that this was the mo matrix evolving.

Zuo Mo’s body was being rapidly changed and strengthened by the two enemy powers even if he was not willing. At this time, Zuo Mo was like an experienced hunter. He had already found the weakness, and right now, he only had to wait patiently for a chance to deliver a fatal strike.

The evolution of the mo matrix was very fast.

The Sun scripts were completely changed. Ten life-like suns floated on the surface of Zuo Mo's body. They were like suns embedded in Zuo Mo's body, especially the sun at his forehead. It was like a miniature sun that revolved without end. The number of paths between the ten suns had multiplied several times. It was profound and complex as the paths crossed. If someone slightly weaker looked at them, they would find they would become dizzy.

The dense scales that had been near Zuo Mo's mo matrix had disappeared, and the new mo matrix sank under his skin so that it could not be seen. But someone familiar with Zuo Mo would notice that his figure had changed slightly. Zuo Mo's original figure could not be considered to be brawny but muscles were clearly defined. Right now, his figure had become much thinner. Only Zuo Mo knew that his body was multiple times as strong now.

His body had been tempered again. The weak blood and flesh had been eliminated by the vicious energies of the Anti Dragon Claw. Each bone, every sinew, every muscle, was now multiple times stronger than before. The refinement was even more complete than the time with the Shifting Star Sands!

If this had occurred at any other time, Zuo Mo would be smiling so wide his eyes would be squinting but right now, he did not feel any joy.

He suspected that the completion of the refinement meant that

the final conflict between the two powers was about to start!

Zuo Mo's guess was correct.

Wind blew and there was a fine drizzle of rain..

The curtain of rain seemed endless and covered thousands of li. The red threads were clear and transparent with a springy presence. There was no darkness, it was warm and unspeakably comfortable.

Under the curtain of rain, those that were weak showed intoxicated expressions. They unconsciously released their mo weapons dropping them on the ground. The sound of the weapons merged into this drizzle and the owners did not realize they had done so.

More and more people released the mo weapons in their hands and became intoxicated in the rain.

The mo skill that Qi Diao Yu was most skilled in was illusory sound. He detected the power of this rain and his expression changed. Unconsciously, the water droplets around him sped up. With a sharp howl, it seemed to break through the curtain of rain.

The curtain of rain was these same droplets but the sound of the drizzle was soft and intoxicating.

The sharp howl seemed to burrow into the sticky water and then disappeared. The three droplets of water seemed to have gotten drunk themselves. They slowed down as they flew until they moved at the speed of a turtle.

Qi Diao Yu's face was ashen. For the first time, he felt helplessness. He didn't have any power to fight back.

"The Rain Domain of No Return" he murmured with a complicated expression. "As expected, there is no return!"

Between the threads of rain, a kind of lazy power unconsciously burrowed into his body.

Qi Diao Yu felt his consciousness seemed to move slower, his body became heavier. It feel very comfortable and he did not wanting to move.

He showed a strange expression of intoxication.

No return, no return!

The moment the curtain of rain appeared, the sound of clanking of the chains imperceptibly paused. Then the chain which had charged towards Marshal Yu, like a dragon, seemed to have

entered water. An invisible power pressured it from all directions.

The metal chain suddenly lit up with a mix of white and black light. The rain shook and the chain sped up.

Marshal Yu smiled slightly and dismissed it.

The curtain of rain did not change but the chain that had just speed up quickly slowed down as though it was now pulling something heavy. The black and white lights quickly faded within the rain curtain.

In a blink, the black and white lights were consumed.

The metal chain that had been so formidable and unstoppable suddenly became slow like a sleeping babe floating in the air.

The sword essence flower sea seemed to slow down until it appeared to have stopped.

Wo Li's cool expression finally changed.

The domain of a marshal!

It was this powerful!

This endless rain in front of her was something that could

disrupt even the march of life and death!

In terms of profoundness of power, the Rain Domain of No Return was lacking compared to the metal chain. However, the power disparity was too large! Luo Li had just comprehended the Life and Death Lock. The time was too short. Marshal Yu had went from colonel to brigadier, to general, and then into marshal level. Each step had been set on a firm foundation and the amount of power he had accumulated was almost unimaginable.

When power reached a certain level, it would cause an innate change.

No matter how exquisite the Together chain was, it wasn't a threat to absolute power.

One could defeat ten!

This was a weakness!

No matter how talented they were, they could not take a shortcut on this path of accumulation!

Marshal Yu found their biggest weakness.

He smiled faintly. The other side did have talent to force him to such a point. But, this was the end!

Just at this time, a shocking ripple came from behind him.

His smile froze on his face. Before he could turn around, boom, something seemed to explode behind him. A ripple that almost caused him to lose the urge to fight exploded suddenly from behind him!

He turned back to look in shock.

A bright sun burned in the rain!

Having made their final transformations, the collision between the two powers was intense.

The brutal energies of the Anti Dragon Claw had turned into black serpents that roared as they leapt at the ten suns. The Sun Crystal Seed that was in complete control of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain suddenly released a burning light. The serpents that came close turned to dust!

But there were many of the black serpents that were made from the brutal energies. They continued to move without any care.

The battle suddenly entered the most vicious stage.

This was a full-scale head-on clash of power!

The brutal energies of the serpents charged at the ten suns like a relentless tide. The ten suns moved across Zuo Mo's body. The Sun Crystal Seed had actually activated the Ten Crow Celestial Domain in response!

Boom!

Golden light suddenly came from around Zuo Mo!

It was like sun that suddenly bloomed in the rain!

Before the rain could come near the golden light, it evaporated.

The sun suddenly turned dark.

Marshal Yu reflexively raised his head. He saw the blurry sky that had been covered by the rain was now a dark red as though the sky was aflame.

The entire sky became dark red, and the area was even larger than his curtain of rain!

This was

Suddenly, a dot of light flew out of the golden shield on Xiao Mo Ge's body into the sky. The curtain of rain could not impede the dot of light. It grew as it flew and in a blink, it hung in the sky.

A sun!

Several more dots of light flew from Zuo Mo's body into the sky.

In a flash, ten suns were spread out in the sky.

Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

This was the Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

Marshal Yu almost didn't believe his own eyes. No matter how powerful the Ten Crow Celestial Domain was, it was only the top dog in general level. Compared to marshal domains, it was a whole level below. There was an innate difference in level.

How could the Ten Crow Celestial Domain break through his Rain Domain of No Return?

This was impossible!

Before he could understand everything happening in front of him, an unprecedented feeling of danger rose without any warning.

His heart jumped wildly.

Chapter 649 - Sun Crystal Seed's Ten Crow Celestial Domain

This feeling of danger came without any warning and approached so fast that Marshal Yu wasn't able to react. In truth, he was unable to react. The pressure that the Ten Crow Celestial Domain gave him was suffocating!

A strange unfamiliar feeling of suffocation!

How long had it been since he felt such pressure? He didn't remember but he was shocked and intimidated by this strange feeling of pressure.

Zuo Mo did not know of Marshal Yu's terror and really did not have the attention to spare. He was walking on a tightrope. If he wasn't careful, one stumble and he would fall to his death. In front of the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed, Marshal Yu wasn't worth a mention.

He truly felt this.

However, Zuo Mo felt surprised that the Sun Crystal Seed had activated the Ten Crow Celestial Domain but he quickly understood. The Sun Crystal Seed most likely had detected the threat of the Anti Dragon Claw and wanted to use the power of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain to fight against the Anti Dragon Claw!

The power level of the Sun Crystal Seed's Ten Crow Celestial

Domain far surpassed his own. The Ten Crow Celestial Domain it activated was far more powerful than normal! Every transformation of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain was activated, even the higher-level transformations were activated as the higher-level power filled it.

Zuo Mo watched the entire process and didn't dare to divide his attention at all.

Even if he was in a dangerous situation right now, the scene in front of him attracted his attention. He could see every change in the Ten Crow Celestial Domain with his own eyes. He paid rapt attention to how the Sun Crystal Seed activated the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. If he paid close attention, then he would be able to know all the transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. The Sun Crystal Seed was even pointing out the path of progression for the Ten Crow Celestial Domain as well!

Zuo Mo greedily watched the changes of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain under the control of the Sun Crystal Seed.

At this time, the Sun Crystal Seed was the best teacher.

No matter if it was the Sun Crystal Seed or the Anti Dragon Claw, they seemed to have intelligence on level of a person.

The Anti Dragon Claw detected the Sun Crystal Seed's intentions. A vast murderousness immediately filled the space.

The rain drizzle of the Rain Domain of No Return suddenly froze under such a heavy murderousness. The Rain Domain of No Return was as fragile as glass.

Countless little grey wisps of killing essence swam between the frozen raindrops.

Cold and vast, brutal and savage, like a vicious beast baring its fangs and glaring at its prey with its crimson red eyes. It easily tore apart the layers of defenses and charged into people's minds with little to no resistance.

The people affected felt endless terror come as a wave sweeping their legs out from under them and immediately swallowed them.

Bam!

A clear and pleasing shattering sound echoed.

The Rain Domain of No return only lasted for a few breaths under the attack of the Anti Dragon Claw before it collapsed.

Marshal Yu's face paled. The Rain Domain of No Return had been defeated, and he had been wounded by the backlash of power.

His eyes were filled with terror. He looked at the wave of murderousness that seemed to be a great grey monster howling and fell into a daze. Anti Dragon Claw! Was this the true power of the sky mo weapon, the Anti Dragon Claw?

Suddenly, he felt he was so minuscule, as tiny and insignificant as dust.

Ambition, pride, it was like a beautiful bubble that popped. His face was ashen and his eyes dim.

However, he was at marshal level. The murderousness had momentarily stunned him but he had the power to fight back. The mo skill in his body detected danger and started to circulate on its own. His body suddenly shook, his face paling even more, but his calm expression gradually fought its way back from terror. Though there was still shock on his face, his eyes had cleared up.

So risky!

The danger just now had been greater than any of his fights. Marshal Yu looked with lingering fear at Xiao Mo Ge, whose figure was shrouded in golden light in the sky. Inside that blinding ball of golden light was a grey pillar of energy that shot into the sky. That was the Anti Dragon Claw.

Anti Dragon Claw, sky mo weapon!

Only now did he truly understand the meaning of these six words. He finally understood only those marshal level and above could tame the Anti Dragon Claw.

Marshal Yu suddenly smiled in self-disdain.

Previously, he had thought of how to subduing the Anti Dragon claw. Now, he finally understood how laughable his thoughts were. There were many sayings about the Anti Dragon Claw but everyone believed one: ‘only marshal level and above could subdue them’.

But after personally seeing the Anti Dragon Claw, Marshal Yu immediately understood that this saying was not complete.

It was not marshal level or above that could tame them, but above marshal level. Other than the power of a marshal, one also had to have the appropriate mo skill. Something as brutal as the Anti Dragon Claw would only be tamed by those bloodthirsty and battle-hungry.

Otherwise, even if one had the power of a marshal, they would be shattered by the killing essence of the Anti Dragon Claw.

Understanding this bewilderment flashed across Marshal Yu’s mind.

Even he was unable to withstand the killing essence of the Anti Dragon Claw. Theoretically, Xiao Mo Ge should have been ground to dust. But Xiao Mo Ge was unharmed in the air. Also, the power contained in the golden light was different but terrifying in the same way. What was that?

Was that another sky mo weapon?

This thought flashed through Marshal Yu's head but he immediately felt it was absurd. It was the greatest of fortunes to encounter one sky mo weapon like the Anti Dragon Claw. How unlikely would it be for someone to possess two at once?

Marshal Yu was the strongest person on the battlefield and his perception was also the strongest of all the people. He quickly found that the target of the Anti Dragon Claw's attack was not him but seemed to be that ball of golden light and the Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

Marshal Yu felt curious and happy, and also a thread of lingering fear.

If the target of the Anti Dragon Claw had been him, then now ...
...

This guess caused him to shudder.

————

Boom boom boom!

The conflict between the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed became even more intense.

The Ten Crow Celestial Domain had reached its strongest state.

The great power created by the revolution of the ten suns had formed a golden pillar of fire in the sky and shot at Zuo Mo and the Anti Dragon Claw.

The Anti Dragon Claw that had possession of nine-tenths of Zuo Mo's body did not show weakness. The grey mo matrix appeared again on Zuo Mo's body. A faint grey light suddenly appeared around Zuo Mo and shielded him.

The black shadow of a dragon flickered inside the grey shield of light.

When the pillar of fire came into contact with the grey shield, it struck the surface and was deflected off.

Sparks flew and rained down.

Vrrrom!

The ten suns in the air seemed to be infuriated and the light intensified. Countless streams of dark fire appeared in the dark red sky.

The sky was like a river, and the flames like water!

The golden pillar of light became even brighter. The thick pillar of light started to shrink and condense until it almost solidified!

The croaks of crows suddenly resounded in the sky and out of each sun came a crow shrouded in flame.

When the ten golden crows flew out, they turned into ten streams of light that entered the golden pillar!

It was as though cold water was suddenly poured onto the golden pillar and it froze. Ten golden crows appeared on the pillar in different lifelike positions.

From far away, Marshal Yu's pupils suddenly contracted.

–[Golden Crow Battering Ram]!

He had personally experienced the power of Xiao Mo Ge's move. This move was extremely powerful killing move, that surpassed the power of the general level.

But the golden pillar in front of him felt completely different than the one that Xiao Mo Ge had used.

Pressure!

Yes, it was pressure this time was a suffocating pressure!

The moment the pillar formed, the sky and earth seemed to moving, time seemed to stop, the dust in the air froze, everything seemed to still.

Marshal Yu knew that this was just a feeling. He knew that this was just a phenomenon that appeared because the power was great enough but uncontrolled shock still rose from the deepest part of his mind.

Clang!

The Gold Crow Battering Ram heavily hit the grey shield.

Marshal Yu's body shook from the impact. The sound seemed to explode inside his skull. His mind blanked for a brief moment. Those further away with weaker cultivation immediately sprayed out blood. They were seriously wounded.

Under such a strong attack, the grey shield was unable to withstand it, and exploded.

However, the grey shield did not dissipate immediately. It turned to dozens of grey figures that shot at the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

Howls sounded in the air.

Numerous wisps of grey mist suddenly came out of Zuo Mo's body. When they appeared, they turned into grey shadows that charged towards the Golden Crow Battering Ram. These grey shadows turned into little grey dragons. They howled and roared as they moved along the body of the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

In a blink, many tiny cracks appeared on the surface of the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

The little grey dragons continued to fly out of the grey energy and join in the attack. These little dragons were vicious as they howled and roared. Their bodies were thin and long, they had four limbs, and their heads were triangular-shaped. There were two extremely short horns growing at their foreheads. What was most shocking was that half of their body was a gaping maw and two rows of white teeth that was like two rows of the sharpest knives and chilled people's hearts.

Boom!

The Golden Crow Battering Ram suddenly fell into pieces and released golden fragments of energy.

Under the dark red sky, the scattered dots of golden energy were beautiful to look at, like fireflies.

An extremely beautiful scene created within extreme danger!

The grey dragons that lost their target roared. Their voices were not loud but they contained a heart-rattling brutality and bloodthirst. Because of their great number, the sound was like a tide and caused listener's scalps to prickle.

Smelling blood, the grey dragons jumped up like towards the ten

suns in the air.

The streams of fire that rampaged in the dark red sky seemed to detect danger and headed for the grey dragons.

The sky immediately became the most vicious battlefield.

The flames and the grey dragons continued to collide and destroy each other. Neither side showed any signs of giving up. Grey dragons continued to fly out of the grey mist and the ten suns continued to send off streams of fire.

To the people watching the scene in front of them seemed like the apocalypse.

The Anti Dragon Claw seemed to be discontent with the fight that was at a deadlock. It suddenly shook and a vast and brutal energy flooded into Zuo Mo's body. This brutal wave of energy was stronger than any of the previous surges! If Zuo Mo's body had not been tempered by the Anti Dragon Claw, it would have been destroyed at this moment. But even after being modified by the Anti Dragon Claw's energies, and having formed the grey mo matrix, the grey energy still caused stabbing pains in his body wherever it passed.

When this brutal energy entered Zuo Mo's body, the grey mo matrix on the surface of Zuo Mo's body suddenly brightened.

The mo matrix flashed a strange light and gave people a feeling it

seemed to have come alive!

Zuo Mo endured the pain and did not dare to miss any detail.

He had a strong feeling.

Killing move!

The Anti Dragon Claw was about to use its killing move!

Chapter 650 - Rebirth

Zuo Mo's intuition was accurate.

The grey mo matrix on his body flashed with an unusual light that seemed to flow and slide on the surface of his body. A strong wind formed in Zuo Mo's surroundings, the fine gusts of wind were like blades that sheared everything around them. The ground, the stones, the pebbles in the vicinity were turned to dust by the gusts of wind!

In an instant, a hole more than fifty zhang deep appeared in the ground under Zuo Mo's feet.

Zuo Mo's body floated motionlessly in the air.

Then, a single deep roar seemed to come from within the ground.

The roars of the grey dragons previously had been a multitude of fine roars like a tide, and caused people's hairs to stand on end and their scalp to prickle. This roar seemed to be a call from the ancient times, with the weight of time as it sounded from deep within the ground.

For the first time, Zuo Mo's mind was overcome.

For some unknown reason, an indescribable emotion spread through his mind.

He was not the only one. Even Marshal Yu's face shook and he entered a brief daze.

Just as everyone blanked, the mo matrix on Zuo Mo's body quickly changed. A shadow silently floated out of the mo matrix on Zuo Mo's body.

When this blurry shadow appeared, a brutal and vicious presence immediately filled the battlefield. The people who were still unfocused reacted in the most instinctive way, trembling!

Unconsciously trembling! Uncontrollably trembling!

Under this peerlessly brutal energy, their bodies were left cold and they trembled.

Roar!

A wave of anger suddenly exploded and spread through the entire field. Everyone seemed to be hit hard.

The suns in the sky lit up in response to the roar of the shadow. The ten suns revolved in the sky at an extremely slow rate. A great and pure power formed from the revolving suns.

Zuo Mo was the first one to recover. He did not forget that he was dealing with a dangerous situation. If he was the least bit careless, he wouldn't even get a chance to amend the situation.

Every detail of what was happening in his body clearly flashed across his mind. He knew that every detail had a chance of determining his fate, life or death. He needed to find that minuscule chance from all this.

There were many transformations that he had a hard time understanding. Both the Sun Crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw represented power of a higher level, each beyond his knowledge. But he still memorized it and did not give up.

The terrifying presence released by the blurry shadow caused his soul to tremble instinctively.

Suddenly, he saw a colossal beast. Its rampaging presence and its enormous shadow enveloped his minuscule figure. The strong pressure he felt left him suffocating.

This was

The shadow suddenly broke free of Zuo Mo's body and flew into the sky.

Dragon!

A true dragon!

The blurry figure held the presence of a true dragon. In the

moment it flew into the air, the presence of the king of all beasts rippled out wards like a pebble thrown into water.

No one knew that at this time, in this jie, all the animals were prostrated on the ground as they trembled!

But in Zuo Mo's mind, what it gave off was not the energy of a dragon, but a cold and brutal killing essence. It was as though its sharp thick dragon claws dripped with black blood.

The purest of all killing essences!

In this moment, even the Three Thousand Strands of Worry decided to retreat. Other than the thickest few strands, the other strands of worry released the Anti Dragon Claw.

The Anti Dragon Claw that had a portion of its restraints undone, unhesitatingly displayed its power and brutality!

This dragon shadow moved like a blur of grey lightning and Zuo Mo was unable to see its path clearly.

As the shadow blurred, a sun at it's peak intensity fell from the sky. Streaking through the sky like a comet, it howled as it smashed towards the grey shadow!

Roar!

The grey shadow suddenly roared, the killing energy reaching a peak. Rushing upwards, it fearlessly welcomed the sun's incoming attack!

Pure killing essence was like the sharpest blade essence in the world.

Both sides were peerless in their speed.

Two lights, one gold and one grey, drew across the horizon and collided.

Dong!

An deafening sound. The entire jie shuddered!

There was no explosion, no gust of air, just a terrifying sound of the collision.

Everyone felt the golden light brighten until it was blinding. Their vision went white. But the light quickly faded and their vision recovered. Then they found that flames were raining down.

Every thread of flame was a seed that had been caught in the wind and floated in the air.

But this was just the beginning.

The nine remaining suns in the sky suddenly fell one after another!

Dong dong dong!

With every sound, Zuo Mo's body reflexively shook. Blood seeped out from his nose, eyes, and mouth. No matter if it was the Ten Crow Celestial Domain or the shadow of the dragon, they were connected to him. When the two were fighting like this without any regard the damage they suffered, Zuo Mo's body was collateral damage.

If this was in the past, his body would have been unable to endure the backlash from the fight.

Fortunately, his body had been strengthened, but even so, with every impact, his body suffered a heavy blow. The power inside his body was not under his control but it still existed.

Every impact was soul-rattling, and the entire jie trembled in unison!

Ten times in succession, the Sun Crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw clashed and did not leave anything behind. The magnitude of the backlash that Zuo Mo's body endured reached a shocking intensity.

The grey mo matrix on the surface his body was twisted and tangled in on itself like metal wire.

The rain of fire gathered back into ten suns again. However, they were several times smaller and dimmer than before. They were like ten red beads that entered Zuo Mo's body again.

The earth-shaking collisions surpassed Zuo Mo's knowledge.

In front of such great power, Zuo Mo could not react at all.

However, the battle had not ended. The two, now wounded, returned to the old battlefield back in Zuo Mo's body. The conflict was not as powerful as before but in terms of danger, it was even greater.

The Sun Crystal Seed was much dimmer but it still continued to release hot flows. Zuo Mo discovered that the hot flows released by the Sun Crystal Seed was weaker than before.

The Anti Dragon Claw's presence was also weaker.

Once again, the battlefield was where the ten sun matrices were located.

The power of the two sides weakened as they continued to destroy each other. Zuo Mo found to his joy that the suppression of his power seemed to show signs of weakening.

But the damage his body endured became greater. As the two

powers continued to weaken each other, they did not have any power to spare to heal Zuo Mo's body. The Greenvine Mystical Water was still being suppressed. While there was signs of release, it was still unable to move.

Zuo Mo started to feel urgency. He knew that as the two powers weakened, he would regain control of his body, but he was afraid that his body would be damaged beyond repair by that point.

He could not wait until that moment!

As the suppression weakened, Zuo Mo's mind recovered its usual nimbleness. He did not hesitate and made a decision.

He had to do something!

The only card he had left was the Soul Setting Divine Light. At this time, no matter what, he had to try. His body was pushed to the point where it was going to completely collapse.

His first target was one of the sun matrices, the sun matrix at his forehead.

The sun matrix was much dimmer than before, but there was still much of the hot flows of energy from the Sun Crystal Seed inside. The brutal energies of the Anti Dragon Claw outside were continuously attacking this sun matrix.

The power of the two sides collided and shifted as they fought of

dominance.

The Soul Setting Divine Light suddenly appeared.

Without any warning, the two powers were suddenly frozen in place. No, set in place. The sun matrix that had been restless just now was strangely calm.

The following changes were out of Zuo Mo's expectations.

Zuo Mo had observed that the two powers had been colliding and destroying each other. But now the situation seemed slightly different. When the power of the two apparent mortal enemies was set, Zuo Mo discovered that there was a novel power that glittered like the stars that was left around the sun matrix.

This power was not like any power that Zuo Mo knew of.

Compared to the brutality and dominance of the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed, these strange fragments of power were unusually peaceful and gentle. As Zuo Mo's thoughts moved to examine the fragments, they entered Zuo Mo's blood and flesh.

The next change brought joy to Zuo Mo.

These seemingly peaceful and harmless fragments had the strong ability to heal and regenerate. Once they entered Zuo Mo's flesh, the flesh started to miraculously heal.

Yet the healed flesh seemed different than before.

There was no time for Zuo Mo to study it carefully now. There were nine other sun matrices where the battle was raged on.

With his confidence boosted, Zuo Mo urged the Soul Setting Divine Light towards another sun matrix.

The Soul Setting Divine Light was as powerful as expected. Anything that it shined on, regardless of the intensity of the battle, would be immediately set.

Zuo Mo furiously searched for the fragments of power that appeared after the two powers collided. He had them enter his flesh and the effects were great.

As three sun matrices were sealed by the Soul Setting Divine Light, both the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed seemed to have recognized that their control over the situation was quickly unravelling. The two powers immediately retreated.

Boom!

Zuo Mo's body suddenly shook. He once again had control over his body.

The joy at surviving this hardship rose. In this moment, he had

an impulse to cry from joy.

But he quickly calmed his mind. At this time, there were more important things to do.

The strange new power that was floating around the sun matrices!

Zuo Mo greedily merged every drop of this newborn power into his body. He did not waste one bit of it. These dots and particles of power were not strong, and disappeared after being merged with his flesh.

Zuo Mo's body was healing at a visible rate.

His nearly ruined body was restored in a short period of time. No, not as the same as before, but having changed again.

Shen power, ling power, mo skill, spiritual consciousness, these familiar powers once again returned to his body. Strong confidence rose. Power was the basis of confidence. Without power, his confidence was unrooted.

There was nothing more beautiful than this familiar confidence!

At this time, Zuo Mo suddenly noticed unusual movements in the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. From the beginning, the Three Thousand Threads of Worry seemed to have been neutral. It did not participate in the battle between the Anti Dragon Claw and the

Sun Crystal Seed so its movements now were unusually eye-catching.

Hm!

This was

Chapter 651 - When He's Sick, Take His Life!

Several strands of the Three Thousand Strands of Worry suddenly burrowed into the Anti Dragon Claw.

The Anti Dragon Claw shook but the furious struggle and resistance that Zuo Mo had expected from the Anti Dragon Claw did not come. Was it? Zuo Mo suddenly had a realization. The Anti Dragon Claw had exhausted itself in the conflict with the Sun Crystal Seed just now and was in a weakened state!

The following scene seemed to prove Zuo Mo's guess. Pew pew pew, the slender Three Thousand Threads of Worry punctured the Anti Dragon Claw like needles. The Anti Dragon Claw shook but did not resist.

Great opportunity!

For natural born opportunists like Little Mo Ge, if he missed an opportunity like this, then he would not be Little Mo Ge.

With his strength, he didn't know how long it would take him to subdue the Anti Dragon Claw. Previously, he had only managed to hold onto the Anti Dragon Claw by using the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. But holding it and subduing it was not the same. Even though the Anti Dragon Claw could not escape, he could not channel the power of the Anti Dragon Claw.

Right now, this was when the Anti Dragon Claw was weakest and the best opportunity to subdue it.

Take his life when he was sick, this principle was also able to be applied to sky mo weapons. In blink, Zuo Mo threw aside his respect of the Anti Dragon Claw and started to scheme against it. Only now did he find that the Three Thousand Threads of Worry was the most cunning and evil of the three. This guy had pretended to be neutral from the beginning but showed its hand when the Anti Dragon Claw showed weakness!

Very vicious!

But I like it!

Zuo Mo did not wait around watching but reached out as well! Regardless of how the Three Thousand Threads of Worry subdued the Anti Dragon Claw, it could not help him tame this peerless mo weapon. He had to do it himself.

Zuo Mo tried to reach towards the Anti Dragon Claw.

In the moment that his hand touched the Anti Dragon Claw, an extremely brutal energy suddenly burrowed into Zuo Mo's body.

Extreme fury!

He felt the anger of the Anti Dragon Claw. Thunderous roars echoed in his mind intimidatingly!

Zuo Mo was startled but he quickly calmed down. Compared to the vast brutal energies before, this energy was sharp but weaker, leading Zuo Mo to be more certain that the Anti Dragon Claw was in a weakened state. He found to his joy that his newly tempered body did not feel any discomfort when enduring this brutal energy.

This made Zuo Mo overjoyed.

The Anti Dragon Claw also noticed this quickly. Another gust of brutal energy entered Zuo Mo's body. Zuo Mo's body suddenly froze. This energy seemed the same as the one before, but when it entered Zuo Mo's body, he immediately detected the difference.

Dark and cold!

Extremely dark and cold to the point it almost froze Zuo Mo. At this dangerous moment, Zuo Mo hurriedly activated the Soul Setting Divine Light!

The Soul Setting Divine Light was as wondrous as usual. This extremely cold energy was immediately set.

Zuo Mo finally released a breath.

But this energy was extremely cold and could not be absorbed like the previous brutal energies by Zuo Mo's mo matrix. This cold energy was extremely pure. Zuo Mo knew his own abilities and that it would not be easy if he wanted to process it with his own

power. But if he did not process it, it may lead to great trouble.

An idea sparked. He thought of the remaining sun matrices.

There were still many hot flows from the Sun Crystal Seed inside the sun matrices. Would the hot and cold pair together well? His thoughts moved and Zuo Mo threw the extremely cold energy into a sun matrix.

When this energy was thrown into the sun matrix, it was like cold ice poured into boiling oil and caused a great disturbance.

In moments, the extremely cold energy disappeared and half of the hot flow in the sun script was gone. More of the new power fragments appeared.

Zuo Mo was overjoyed. These unfamiliar power fragments were of great benefit to him.

After digesting these power fragments, Zuo Mo continued to focus his attention on the Anti Dragon Claw.

At this time, his hand was tightly gripping the Anti Dragon Claw. This was the first time he touched the Anti Dragon Claw. The dragon claw was covered in icy and hard dragon scales, but the dragon scales where he held the mo weapon were much finer than the scales elsewhere.

More strands of the Three Thousand Strands of Worry burrowed

into the Anti Dragon Claw and it trembled even more violently.

At his time, the Anti Dragon Claw grew dim like it had lost all of its light.

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth and reached into the Anti Dragon Claw along the Three Thousand Threads of Worry.

Boom!

It was like Zuo Mo's finger had been placed into a glacier. Great cold energies immediately exploded forth and spread into Zuo Mo's body from his finger. Grey frost headed for Zuo Mo at lightning speed.

Not good!

Zuo Mo paled. He suddenly understood, he had been tricked!

The Anti Dragon Claw purposefully pretended to appeared weak to lure him. Such a cunning mo weapon!

Just as the frost was about to cover Zuo Mo immediately, Zuo Mo unhesitatingly threw out his ultimate card—Soul Setting Divine Light!

The Soul Setting Divine Light seemed small but it was unexpectedly powerful,

Gritting his teeth, Zuo Mo released the cold flows towards the three remaining sun matrices. In moments, the cold energy that invaded his body had disappeared but so had the hot flows.

Zuo Mo felt some pity. He finally understood what these hot flows were. They were the base source of the Sun Crystal Seed's power. If he could have processed them, it would have been greatly beneficial for his shen power and the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. It was a pity that the cold flow had been too powerful and he could not withstand it on his own.

Fortunately, the two powers had destroyed each other and created those new power fragments.

After this fright, Zuo Mo became even more cautious. The Anti Dragon Claw was valuable, but if he lost his life trying to tame it, then it would not be worth it!

This cold energy seemed to be the last attack the Anti Dragon Claw had. The Anti Dragon Claw became almost lifeless in Zuo Mo's hand like a withered branch. It was extremely dim and there was none of its awesome presence that it showed before.

Zuo Mo did not encounter any more resistance. His hand reached into the Anti Dragon Claw and easily touched the icy bone at the core.

This bone seemed to be carved from ice. Zuo Mo couldn't help but shudder when he touched it. It was too cold! But Zuo Mo's face

showed joy. He knew he had found the crux!

The Three Thousand Threads of Worry seemed to understand that Zuo Mo had tamed the Anti Dragon Claw and shrank back out from the body of the Anti Dragon Claw. This was the first time Zuo Mo saw the Three Thousand Threads of Worry release the Anti Dragon Claw completely.

Suddenly, Zuo Mo's hand was empty. The thick Anti Dragon Claw had disappeared and was replaced by a grey claw bracelet on his wrist.

This bracelet was dim in color and nondescript.

In this moment, Zuo Mo seemed to be dreaming.

He had succeed?

He had really succeed?

A surreal feeling overwhelmed him. Had he subdued the sky mo weapon Anti Dragon Claw like this? Looking at the grey bracelet on his wrist, Zuo Mo's expression was slightly dazed. The entire process had been surprising but the attempt was almost unimaginably easy. It had gone so smoothly that Zuo Mo felt that there had been a problem somewhere along the line.

Zuo Mo quickly found that there really was a problem!

No matter how he called out to it, the grey bracelet did not respond at all. It did not react as though it was dead.

Zuo Mo was stunned. Why was it like this?

The great disparity made him almost throw up blood!

Anti Dragon Claw! Where did my sky mo weapon, Anti Dragon Claw, go?

The bracelet did not move at all and did not shine. No one would connect this dim article to the vicious and peerless Anti Dragon Claw.

Depressed, Zuo Mo quickly sorted out his emotions. Right now, he had not completely escaped the present danger and he could not waste his time on this matter.

He looked around and his gaze immediately landed on Marshal Yu.

Marshal Yu did not look as at ease as he previously had. His face was white and he seemed to be wounded. Thinking about the earth-shaking conflict that had just occurred, Zuo Mo realized that Marshal Yu had probably been suffered a major injury.

Zuo Mo's guess was very accurate.

Marshal Yu had been greatly affected. It could be said that the blow he had received was much greater than others. One reason was because he had been closest to Zuo Mo when the battle had happened so he naturally received more of the collateral damage. The other reason was because he was the strongest person present and had the deepest understanding of power. Higher level powers affected him more than other people.

However, his gaze flickered. He was wounded, but he was not demoralized. He was filled with confidence. He had been affected the most, but he had gained the most!

If he could successfully recover, and could digest all that he comprehended today, his power would definitely go up a level.

Zuo Mo also understood this and his gaze became vicious.

At this time, Marshal Yu had gone through a hard battle and he was wounded. This was when he was weakest. Zuo Mo's own power had actually increased and he was at his strongest.

If he waited for Marshal Yu to heal completely, the other was not someone that he could defeat under normal circumstances. He could not reach marshal level any time soon. Zuo Mo did not know what level Marshal Yu would reach after digesting his comprehensions today.

Zuo Mo was disappointed that he could not use the power of the Anti Dragon Claw but it wasn't as though he didn't have other

tricks in his sleeve. Other than Ceng Lian'er who was unable to fight, Wo Li, A Gui and the black gold seal soldier still had most of their power. With him added on, they might have a chance!

This was the best chance to kill Marshal Yu!

No matter what, he had to keep Marshal Yu from leaving! Otherwise, there would be trouble in the future.

Zuo Mo suddenly showed his viciousness. He gritted his teeth. With a sudden flicker of his body, he dove at Marshal Yu.

“Kill Marshal Yu!”

Almost as his words sounded, A Gui, Wo Li and the others moved!

Bie Han had been far away and not been affected too greatly by the shockwaves. But he still felt nauseous. Fortunately, the nightmarish battle had finished and he recovered.

The fight between the Ten Crow Celestial Domain and the grey dragon had been heart-stopping but even then, Bie Han's gaze had not left the other's ranks.

He noticed that the ranks of the Yu Frontier Guards had been

affected and become messy. Innumerable weaknesses appeared clearly in his eyes.

When Zuo Mo shot at Marshal Yu, Bie Han admired Zuo Mo's decisiveness.

Almost at the same time, Sin Battalion silently moved towards the Yu Frontier Guards.

Chapter 652 - Struggle

Zuo Mo's charge was sudden and Marshal Yu was caught off his guard.

Even if his strength had been affected by his injuries, he was still not someone that Xiao Mo Ge could defeat. Didn't the exchange just now reveal that?

Or did Xiao Mo Ge think that he could be taken down with the aid of the Anti Dragon Claw?

A smile blossomed on Marshal Yu's face. A hint of disdain and derision flashed through his eyes. The Anti Dragon Claw was powerful and the wounds he had received were not light, the power of any weapon was determined by the wielder. He was sure now that while the Anti Dragon Claw was in Xiao Mo Ge's possession, he had not subdued it.

Since it was not subdued, the Anti Dragon Claw was ownerless!

A sharp light flashed through his eyes.

Seeing Zuo Mo and the others leap at him, he was not afraid. With a smirk he activated the Rain Domain of No Return again.

Under the peerless brutal energy of the Anti Dragon Claw, the Rain Domain of No Return was fragile. However, without the suppression of the Anti Dragon Claw, the Rain Domain of No

Return was soft but fatal.

The thin strands of rain were gentle and lingered in the air.

Yet Marshal Yu who had focused almost all of his attention on Xiao Mo Ge did not notice that the purple light in A Gui's eyes was much stronger than before.

No one noticed the change.

A Gui had been severely wounded. Her shen power had been suppressed by the Rain Domain of No Return. Then she had been caught in the conflict between the Anti Dragon Claw and the Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

Yet at this time, her expression seemed to suggest she was unaffected. Her snowy-white bare feet did not have a speck of dust on them.

She stood in the air like a ghost. The purple energy in her eyes was so thick it was almost tangible. If Zuo Mo saw this, he would be astounded. The purple light in A Gui's eyes had an additional eerie light, its presence thicker than it had ever been before.

A Gui's expression was indifferent. She glanced at Zuo Mo. In that moment, the indifference on her face melted like the snow.

She quickly turned away and her expression returned to indifference.

Her bare feet silently stepped on the empty air and her figure disappeared.

—————

Zuo Mo did not know of A Gui's transformation. At this time, he only focused on Marshal Yu!

There was not a stray thought in his mind!

Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

When the sky became dark red again, many people reflexively raised their heads. The Ten Crow Celestial Domain that the Sun Crystal Seed had created had been so powerful it frightened them to their core.

However, they quickly found that Zuo Mo's Ten Crow Celestial Domain was not as powerful as it was previously.

In the midst of it all, Marshal Yu became even more confident that the one that had been fighting the Anti Dragon Claw was most likely another great treasure and not Xiao Mo Ge. Having thought this through, a disdainful smile rose on his lips. He did not need to

be wary of this Ten Crow Celestial Domain, instead he was angered that Xiao Mo Ge dared to use a general level Ten Crow Celestial Domain against him!

It really was an offence!

The mo had strict ranks. In front of marshal levels, generals were like ants.

Marshal Yu had a great army and his strength as a marshal was enough for him to look down on others. Until now he had gone easy on Zuo Mo because of his fondness for talented individuals. But right now, his heart was filled with murderousness and he did not have any benevolence left!

The Ten Crow Celestial Domain moved.

A golden pillar came from the sky.

[Golden Crow Battering Ram]!

The disdain on Marshal Yu's lips deepened. This Xiao Mo Ge just didn't know what was good for him, he was as dumb as an ox!

This move clearly was not of any threat to him, yet Xiao Mo Ge dared to use this move. It was laughable.

The Green Carp Tongue Sword pointed into the sky. Rain

suddenly gathered, spinning, and funneled to a point.

The strands of rain swam and twisted around the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

————

“Idiot!” Zuo Mo had a similar smile of disdain that flashed across his lips before his expression became focused again.

It was the [Golden Crow Battering Ram] and appeared the same as it did before.

When the swirling rain wrapped around the Golden Crow Battering Ram, a strange field of power surrounded the Golden Crow Battering ram. Immediately, the Golden Crow Battering Ram seemed to have sunk into a bog and slowed down.

There was no panic on Zuo Mo’s face, and his eyes lit up.

He huffed lightly and then shouted, “Scatter!”

Boom!

The Golden Crow Battering Ram suddenly exploded!

Countless needle-like golden lights suddenly spread into the

surroundings. The rain that had surrounded the Golden Crow Battering Ram evaporated, and the needles of golden light entered the rain.

Marshal Yu immediately grunted as his body wavered!

He had not expected that Zuo Mo was laying a trap. His expression was both shocked and irritated.

Zuo Mo had seen the entire process of how the Sun Crystal Seed setup the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. He had memorized all of the transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. This was something unimaginable to him in the past. No one could say that they understood the Ten Crow Celestial Domain well. Even Pu Yao and Wei did not know too much about the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, this had meant Zuo Mo needed to explore on his own.

He had not expected that the Sun Crystal Seed would borrow his Ten Crow Celestial Domain and reveal its secrets. The higher level power performed all the transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain and helped even his mo matrix mature to its completion.

This was a benefit to Zuo Mo.

A mature and perfected Ten Crow Celestial Domain. After seeing all the transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, he knew which direction to cultivate to go up a level.

He still needed time to digest and practice what he had gained

today, but undoubtedly, even without the Anti Dragon Claw, Zuo Mo's strength had completely transformed.

He purposefully used the Golden Crow Battering Ram to trick Marshal Yu.

When he saw Marshal Yu's figure sway, he knew he had succeeded! However, he did not feel any pride. This was a difficult battle that had just begun!

Would could a marshal be killed so easy?

If this was a different place and time, Zuo Mo definitely would not choose a such a suicidal course of action. But he knew that if he did not kill Marshal Yu, all that waited them was endless pursuit. Marshal Yu wasn't just powerful individually, he possessed many powerful battalions. After he recovered, it would just be a matter of time before everyone's died!

Once Zuo Mo made his decision, he did not hesitate one bit.

With the first attack having succeeded, he continued onwards!

Bie Han led Sin Battalion and charged into the enemy formation like a sharp knife.

In his eyes, the weaknesses in the Yu Frontier Guards formation were clear. His charge was determined. All in Sin Battalion were mo with incomplete souls. They did not know fear, did not have emotions. They would systematically carryout all of Bie Han's orders. They were the true killing machines.

Bie Han who was usually reserved was like a fiery blade, boisterous and powerful.

The Yu Frontier Guards had not thought the enemy would dare to charge their formation!

They were caught off guard and immediately suffered a great number of casualties.

The Sin Battalion was like a bolt of lightning that split the Yu Frontier battle formation into two.

If one looked down from the sky right, they could clearly see that the route the Sin Battalion advanced was not straight, but zigzagged.

Bie Han's path when he charged each time was precise. All the points he passed through were weaknesses he had detected!

The Yu Frontier Guards finally woke up from their shock.

Then they found their thick ranks had been divided in two by the enemy! Corpses were littered everywhere, their battle formation

was disheveled mess, the usually proud Yu Frontier Guards were left furious!

When had someone dared to charge at the Yu Frontier Guards?

When had someone else dismissed the battle prowess of the Yu Frontier Guards so?

The foundation of the Yu Frontier Guards showed its depth now. Though Marshal Yu was not present, some general level battle generals started to direct the battalions. The lucky Yu Frontier elite that had survived the earlier battle quickly returned to the ranks. The experts that had been guarding the chariot flew to the very front in the hopes that they would buy some time for the main army to rally.

Yet they underestimated the skill level of battle general they were facing!

A snarl suddenly appeared on Bie Han's icy face.

He felt that his blood was boiling, desire for battle filling his heart. He wanted to howl into the sky.

“Kill!”

A shout thundered across the sky.

Sin Battalion attacked again!

Zuo Mo was extremely cautious about Marshal Yu's Rain Domain of No Return. He chose close-quarter combat.

He was now familiar with the transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, but one, he had not mastered all of the transformations, and two, the general level Ten Crow Celestial Domain was not a match for the marshal level Rain Domain of No Return. He was not the Sun Crystal Seed and could not bring out such high level power.

Zuo Mo's attitude of fighting to the death infuriated Marshal Yu.

Marshal Yu had been of high status for a long time. It had been many years since someone dared to offend him, and not give into his demands!

He was not afraid of close-quarter combat!

The Green Carp Tongue Sword disappeared from his hand. Without seeming to take a stance, his hand flipped and he made a grabbing motion towards Zuo Mo.

Hiss!

Like the hiss of a snake, an enormous clawed shadow left his hand and flew towards Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo felt his vision darken. The enormous clawed shadow covered his field of vision. A terrifying gust of wind rushed at him like a snake.

Fighting spirit roiled in Zuo Mo's eyes. He did not dodge. His hands came together and his body straightened towards the clawed shadow.

A golden light shaped like a spike covered Zuo Mo's entire body. Decisively he charged at Marshal Yu's clawed shadow.

[Gold Thread Spike]!

One of the ten transformations of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.

The two forces collided in a clash of brute force

Boom!

Zuo Mo vision filled with a blinding light and his body shook. The backlash of power was like being struck by lightning. He couldn't help but grunt. However, his hand was held steady and did not shift.

His vision cleared up. He had charged through the clawed shadow!

Zuo Mo's confidence increased. The golden light brightened and its presence became sharper.

Yet at this time, the black gold seal soldier and A Gui had both sneaked near Marshal Yu.

They had surrounded him!

Marshal Yu did not reveal any panic on his face. He was unaffected as though he did not care about the destruction of his clawed shadow.

He stared at Zuo Mo and suddenly smiled.

Then Zuo Mo felt a strange and extremely powerful suction force pull his body to the side.

This was!

Zuo Mo was startled.

“You really think that a domain of a marshal only has such simple capabilities?”

Thirty zhang around Marshal Yu rain started to come down in a drizzle. Through the drizzling rain, Marshal Yu's disdainful voice clearly passed into Zuo Mo's ears.

The Rain Domain of No Return!

Chapter 653 - A Gui's Attack

Rain Domain of No Return!

The smaller Rain Domain of No Return was just thirty zhang in diameter did not span a large range like it had previously. Yet the area it enveloped had a strange and powerful repulsive power. This strange power was not large in expanse but it was frighteningly powerful. Zuo Mo had never thought that even with such a fast attack, he was still forced off his mark.

He was surprised that the domain could be used like this.

It really was wondrous!

The reason he had chosen close-quarter combat was so that he could avoid Marshal Yu's Rain Domain of No Return. He hadn't thought that he would end up colliding with the Rain Domain of No Return anyway! Had never expected that Marshal Yu could use the Rain Domain of No Return in close-quarters.

Zuo Mo was too fast. When he was pulled astray by the field of power, he was not able to react in time and could only watch as he darted passed Marshal Yu.

Marshal Yu was prepared and his hand lightly reached towards Zuo Mo.

If his hand landed, Zuo Mo would be seriously injured if not

killed! Marshal Yu's movements were mighty and forceful. Just a glancing blow would result in a serious injury.

Facing at a life and death situation, Zuo Mo's response was quick.

Woosh, the space around him suddenly became dark red. A wave of hot air spread into the surroundings.

Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

Zuo Mo used what he had just learned and activated the Ten Crow Celestial Domain!

Marshal Yu laughed coldly. His hand did not shift from its path.

The hand seemed to be weak but Zuo Mo felt his breathing stop in his throat. Little Mo Ge's expression changed drastically. His Ten Crow Celestial Domain was channeled to its limits but he didn't have any confidence he could stop this blow.

At this time, a figure suddenly charged out.

Pia!

A clear sound of a collision rang out and the figure that rushed forward flew backwards.

Marshal Yu's blow was forced slightly astray by this figure. The air pressure of the blow brushed Zuo Mo's body and passed into the empty space behind him. It created a deep hole over twenty zhang in the ground.

It was the black gold seal soldier that was thrown backwards. He bared his teeth and hissed. His expression indicated the pain he felt and the seal scripts on his body became dimmer.

Zuo Mo was calm. He found that while his Ten Crow Celestial Domain was suppressed by Marshal Yu's Rain Domain of No Return, he could still cancel out the strange effects the repulsive field had on him. While Marshal Yu was overbearing in his movements and blows, he clearly was not skilled in close physical combat.

This was an opportunity!

Zuo Mo's body twisted. Like a slippery fish, he followed the path the strange field of power flowed in and suddenly appeared below Marshal Yu's right.

His right hand formed a fist that suddenly exploded with blinding golden light and furiously dancing golden flames

[Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem]!

Ten transformations, ranking first in dominance, the first fire! [1]

Marshal Yu snorted coldly. His left arm raised the five fingers of his hand extended towards Zuo .

Bam bam bam bam bam!

Like heavy beats of a drum, five terrifying gusts of air hit Zuo Mo's Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem!

Zuo Mo was struck heavily. His body shook and the flames dancing on his right fist were forcibly extinguished. Even more terrifying was that when the five gusts of air hit his fist, one half of his body was left numb and unable to move.

At this time, countless black chains appeared out of the air and burrowed into the Rain Domain of No Return.

Wo Li had attacked!

These chains were like the sharpest of sword essences. In a blink, they pierced the Rain Domain of No Return.

The Rain Domain of No Return had a strange field of power in the thirty zhang it covered but it was too small of an area. It stopped the great majority of the chains but two still managed to pierce through it!

The two chains twisted in strange positions within the Rain Domain of No Return!

Marshal Yu who had been calm until now changed expression!

The twisting chains caused the invisible field of power to disappear.

Suddenly, a ghostly figure ran alongside the chain and entered the field of power to silently appear behind Marshal Yu.

A Gui!

Her eyes were filled with purple energy. Her hand pressed in the empty air three cun from Marshal Yu's back!

There was no sound!

Marshal Yu's body suddenly shook.

His expression froze on his face, his eyes filled with disbelief.

Why was it like this?

... ... why was it like this

He stood woodenly.

He wanted to turn around but no matter how hard he tried, his body did not listen to him.

The light in his eyes retreated like the tide and in a blink, the light was gone.

————

The Yu Frontier Guards had incurred heavy losses!

Bie Han's Sin Battalion harvested life with an indifferent attitude. They did not have pity, feel sympathy, or know exhaustion! They continuously charged at the Yu Frontier Guard's ranks. Even though they were had fewer members, they held the advantage.

They were strong and vicious. They never feared engagements where they were outnumbered. They continuously shifted their positions. Each tactic was unexpected. From the initial charge, they held the advantage.

The Yu Frontier Guards were having a very difficult time and were exhausted. They lacked a powerful battle general to lead them.

In Bie Han's eyes, a battalion like this was full of holes to exploit.

If it wasn't for the Yu Frontier Guard's flexibility, they would have crumbled a long time ago. But if this continued, the defeat of

the Yu Frontier Guards would just be a matter of time.

“This battle general is too powerful!” Ming Yu Wei was shocked she almost couldn’t speak.

She was not the only one, Ming Hui and the others were stunned. At this time, they finally understood just how powerful this battle general they had fought was!

In the beginning, they had thought of taking advantage of the chaos and to attack Sin Battalion from behind.

But after seeing the entire battle, their lips trembled and their limbs felt cold. They couldn’t muster up those thoughts any longer. They saw with their own eyes how Sin Battalion dismembered the Yu Frontier Guards. The comparatively slow responses of the Yu Frontier Guards could not stop the predation by Sin Battalion at all.

At times they were as sly as wolves, and at others as ferocious as tigers.

The battle general of Sin Battalion was unbelievably powerful. His control of the entire battlefield reached a frightening level.

But what shocked people even more was Bie Han’s unrelenting style of fighting.

They would aim at the enemy's weakness with strong attacks. A minor weakness would quickly worsen. Then this weakness would become more significant until it affected the entire battle!

And if the enemy managed to surround them, they would find an opening at the most opportune time and fight their way out before turning around and slaughtering the pursuers.

In this short battle, the Yu Frontier Guards had suffered great losses.

Their advantage was slowly growing because the battle formation of the Yu Frontier Guards broke down under their repeated charges!

If they managed to completely destroy the battle formation of the Yu Frontier Guards, then no matter how many people the Yu Frontier Guards had, they would become lambs waiting for slaughter!

It really was powerful!

Ming Hui and the others accepted their loss. They had lost for reason!

The death of Marshal Yu became the straw that broke the camel's back.

Many of the Yu Frontier Guards that were fighting saw Marshal Yu's body fall from the sky and were left dumbstruck. Some had even started to cry.

Terror and hopelessness spread like the plague across the battlefield.

The Yu Frontier Guard's morale had almost been broken by the charges of Sin Battalion had complete collapsed.

Everywhere Sin Battalion passed, blood and flesh flew. Bie Han was like a bloodthirsty blade as he directed Sin Battalion.

The outcome of the battle was set but Bie Han did not relent. He continued to slaughter the Yu Frontier Guards!

He was like a meat grinder on full power.

A killing machine!

————

There were no words that could describe what everyone felt right now.

They saw the death of Marshal Yu with their own eyes. This was the first marshal to die of unnatural causes in hundreds of years!

There was a saying in the mo territories, only marshals could kill marshals. However, they saw a marshal die at the hands of some unknown people. Among them, the most famous was Xiao Mo Ge. While Xiao Mo Ge seemed to have some fame in Great Peace City, but in the entire Hundred Savage of the Dark, he was a nobody compared to Marshal Yu, someone who had been famed for decades.

What was even harder to accept was that there wasn't a marshal among them!

Everyone had believed that Marshal Yu would ultimately win in the end. Even when the Anti Dragon Claw had been dominating, no one thought that Marshal Yu would fall in battle.

But Marshal Yu had died.

Felled by the hand of an unknown female.

That female was the maid standing next to Xiao Mo Ge. No one present even knew her name!

The great Marshal Yu fell to a woman like this.

If they hadn't seen it with their own eyes, no one would have believed it.

Even now, they did not understand why Marshal Yu died.

Zuo Mo panted heavily. His fight with Marshal Yu had been short but it was a dance with death.

Zuo Mo felt very surprised that A Gui had killed Marshal Yu.

But when he saw the burning purple energy in A Gui's eyes, he suddenly understood why she succeeded and his expression changed.

He didn't feel any joy. With a flash, he appeared next to A Gui and grabbed her hand.

What he didn't notice was a thread of warmth flashed through her purple eyes when he grabbed A Gui's hand.

Zuo Mo's heart sank.

The purple energy in A Gui's body was now many times stronger than it had ever been!

This was not good!

The purple energy was a very eerie power. It could make A Gui very powerful but at the same time, it would corrode A Gui's body, destroy her vitality and seal her six senses.

Zuo Mo understood that A Gui had definitely suffered extremely serious injuries in exchange for the victory just now!

The purple energy was unique in that it would become stronger after injury. But even so, it could not be so strong! Zuo Mo looked at A Gui. He knew that something had happened to her just now.

Zuo Mo didn't feel the joy of victory.

The purple energy in A Gui's body was so strong. Her condition would quickly worsen and her connection with the outside world would be completely blocked.

Damn it!

Zuo Mo's expression was dark.

A Gui silently stood next to him as he held her hand. Her eyes filled with purple energy were gentle.

Looking around, Zuo Mo knew he finally won!

However, what he did not know that a similarly intense battle was occurring in another place. .

Chapter 654 - Gu Liang Dao

Gu Liang Dao looked at the mo battalions who had almost been wiped out and praised, “Brother Gongsun’s battalion is peerlessly sharp!”

Gu Liang Dao’s figure was tall, his features rough and his voice boomed like a drum. His face was weathered and he didn’t look anything like the disciples of the four great sects who lived in comfort. His praise attracted agreement from the commanders around him. They all nodded. These battle generals from Xi Xuan were all subordinates of Gu Liang Dao. They had followed him for a long time, and usually had their eyes up in the sky. But right now, they did not disguise the admiration they felt.

This battalion was qualified to be treated this way.

Gongsun Cha smiled bashfully and said, “Brother Gu is too complimentary. If it was not for Brother Gu’s help, we would still be travelling here.”

His tone was sincere.

The battalions of Gongsun Cha and Gu Liang Dao had met in Old Field Jie and the two had immediately started to fight. Gu Liang Dao had been shocked by the power of Vermillion Bird Camp and he immediately ordered his battalion to retreat. Even though Vermillion Bird Camp had some mo among their ranks, the great majority of them were sword xiu. Gu Liang Dao had thought that this was a core battalion from Kun Lun and sent someone to

inquire.

When he learned that the other was not a Kun Lun battalion, Gu Liang Dao was even more shocked. If he did not see it with his own eyes, he wouldn't believe that any faction other than the four great sects would have such a strong battalion.

Gu Liang Dao appeared rough but he was actually detail-oriented. He immediately began forming a relationship with the unknown faction. A strong battalion, and a top ranked battle general, they were worth the effort to establish amicable relations.

The battalion that Gu Liang Dao led had been undefeated in the mo territories. He hadn't felt any pain at giving this Old Field Jie up to Gongsun Cha if he had to.

When he learned that Gongsun Cha was doing all this to meet up with a single person, Gu Liang Dao was filled with curiosity. Such a powerful battalion, and such a powerful battalion general, their origins would not be simple. Any person that could have them as an escort would not be simple. And when he heard about how Gongsun Cha and the others were travelling through numerous jie and fought innumerable battles in search of his shixiong, he was moved.

After pondering for a few moments, he decided to help Gongsun Cha.

Gongsun Cha hadn't thought that the other would be willing to help him. Seeing the other's sincerity, Gongsun Cha agreed. With

Gu Liang Dao as company, their rate of advance accelerated.

The two battalions travelled together and as they continued to fight along the way, their admiration of each other increased. Nothing had to be said of Gu Liang Dao's status. He was the most famous battle general of Xi Xuan, and one of the top battle generals in the world. But he had not thought that Gongsun Cha could rival himself.

Gongsun Cha's style was strange and hard to predict.

After spending time with Gongsun Cha, Gu Liang Dao had gained a better understanding of this person and respect had formed. Gu Liang Dao was an open person and valued friendship highly. Gu Liang Dao came from Xi Xuan but he was not one of the core disciples. He had obtained his present position purely through fighting. Gongsun Cha had never expected that Xi Xuan's Tiger General, famed through the world, was not a core disciple.

Whenever this was mentioned, Gu Liang Dao's subordinates had expressions of rage.

Gongsun Cha felt this was hard to believe. Such a famed battle general yet his sect did not value him. Were the higher-ups of Xi Xuan blind?

Later on he learned that Gu Liang Dao's good friend had died due to the son of one of the higher-ups in the sect. Gu Liang Dao had waited for a chance and heavily injured this disciple. If it wasn't that the matter eventually blew up, that higher-up would have

already taken Gu Liang Dao's life. But while he managed to live, he had offended the the majority of the higher-ranking members of the sect. This meant he could not safely stay in the sect so he was sent to Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie.

He had fought many battles of varying scale, all the while the core disciples of the sect had schemed against him but he managed to survive and accumulate achievements. His victories meant that, in public, the sect had to reward him, but in the shadows they colluded against him. They did so by sending him on ever increasingly dangerous missions.

He had, against the odds, miraculously survived and grew even stronger. Because of his openness and the value he placed on friendship, a group had gradually formed around him. The people he attracted were not valued by the sect, but they were talented and skilled.

Gongsun Cha gaped when he heard this. He had never thought that Xi Xuan's Tiger General who seemed to be so honored on the surface was forced into such a bad situation.

Gu Liang Dao did not care about these matters and brushed them away with a smile. While his relationship with the sect's higher-ups was terrible, he was open and willing to help others. This allowed him to make many friends from many places.

Gongsun Cha wondered why Gu Liang Dao did not leave Xi Xuan. With his strength, he would have an easy time no matter where he was. However, Gongsun Cha did not ask. Everyone had core beliefs they held onto and guarded.

With two powerful battalions and two top ranked battle generals, the road forward was smooth. But when they were just about to arrive at Great Peace City, they suddenly encountered a lot of mo. These mo came from different families, and they carried mo weapons. The group seemed to be scheming something.

Once battle started, Gu Liang Dao was a completely different person.

Before the mo could react, he sent the order to charge. He was decisive and did not hesitate at all!

Vermillion Bird Camp was not willing to fall behind and also entered the fray.

The battle was one-sided.

Gu Liang Dao and Gongsun Cha even had the time to idly chat.

The battle quickly finished but during the cleanup phase of the battle, when Gongsun Cha heard the terms “Great Peace City,” “Xiao Mo Ge,” “Great Peace Treasure Pavilion” from the captives, his expression immediately changed.

Especially when he heard that Marshal Yu’s Yu Frontier Guard had arrived ahead of them, Gongsun Cha’s face almost turned completely white. Even Gu Liang Dao’s expression became more serious.

A marshal level!

Gu Liang Dao had interacted with the mo ever since Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie. He knew what a marshal level existence represented.

But he still didn't hesitate to accompany Gongsun Cha to Great Peace City!

Feeling urgency, Gongsun Cha headed for Great Peace City at full speed.

But when they arrived at Great Peace City, they saw Bie Han massacring the Yu Frontier Guards.

————

With the little black dots appearing in the sky, the calm expressions of Great Peace City's populace immediately changed.

Bie Han who had been excited by the slaughter immediately became calm again. He forced down the murderousness he felt and stopped his slaughter. He carefully retreated back to Zuo Mo's side. He narrowed his eyes and stared at the battalions flying over at high speed. His gaze suddenly focused.

Two battalions!

His skill was high and he immediately recognized that the two battalions flying at them were two elite battalions.

He felt his heart shudder.

He had had a fun time in the fight just now, but he had also expended great energy.

If a conflict occurred, then it would not end well.

Gongsun Cha and Gu Liang Dao had seen Bie Han's almost mad style of fighting. Both of them were surprised. But when Gongsun Cha saw Bie Han fly next to Zuo Mo and set up a perimeter, he immediately understood.

As expected of Shixiong!

Gongsun Cha praised inwardly. When he saw Zuo Mo was safe and unharmed, he immediately released a breath. Then he became excited. He had finally found Shixiong after travelling so far!

When Vermillion Bird Camp saw Zuo Mo, they couldn't help but cheer.

At this time, everyone's tense nerves relaxed.

So these were Xiao Mo Ge's people.

But Princess Xia and the others had expressions of shock and surprise. They had already been shocked at Bie Han's Sin Battalion but now two battalions that could rival Sin Battalion had arrived!

What was Xiao Mo Ge's background?

However, once they discovered that the majority of these two battalions were xiuzhe, the crowd shifted again. Was Xiao Mo Ge also a xiuzhe?

The fighting between mo and xiuzhe was an everyday occurrence. The mo had a deep hatred of xiuzhe. If it wasn't for the strength of these two battalions, many people would have attacked already.

When Zhu Ke and the others looked at Zuo Mo, their expressions were complex.

Only Princess Xia's expression returned to normal after a momentary pause.

The arrival of Vermillion Bird Camp led by Gongsun Cha allowed Shu Long and the others to relax. The suppressed exhaustion crashed into them like a tide and they could only yield to their bodies.

With Gongsun Cha introducing them, Zuo Mo and Gu Liang Dao met each other and thanked each other for the help.

Gu Liang Dao examined Zuo Mo and was filled with shock. He hadn't thought that Zuo Mo could be so young. When he heard Vermillion Bird Camp's cheers just now, he knew that Zuo Mo was extremely well-liked by these people. It was not easy to accomplish that. Also, observing what he had from this journey alongside Vermillion Bird Camp, he knew just how proud this battalion was.

This person was impressive to have received such affection from Vermillion Bird Camp!

Gu Liang Dao's gaze then landed on Bie Han. At this moment, Bie Han was like sword that had been resheathed. There wasn't any edge to him and it was the exact opposite of his bloodthirsty battle state just now. Detecting Gu Liang Dao's gaze, Bie Han didn't even flick an eyelid and stood silently at the side. The icy blue mo matrix made him appear like an icecube giving off cold air.

Gu Liang Dao suddenly spoke, "Are you Bie Han of Sin Battalion?"

Bie Han stilled. He hadn't thought that the other would recognize him. He nodded. "That's me."

Gu Liang Dao's eyes lit up. He smiled and said pointedly, "The rumors say much about the most accomplished battle generals of Xuan Kong Temple: Jiang Zhe is flexible, and Bie Han is fearless. Seeing you today, the rumors are not false!"

Bie Han frowned. "I am not of Xuan Kong Temple."

Gu Liang Dao wasn't surprised at all and nodded. He said, "I have also heard of the matter of Brother Bie." He couldn't help but glance at Zuo Mo. The news that Bie Han had fled Xuan Kong Temple wasn't a secret among the higher-ups in the xiuzhe world and the information had been spread far. Sin Battalion had always been one of the core battalions of Xuan Kong Temple. The defection and betrayal of a battle general and a core battalion from the four great sects had never happened before.

What he also had never expected was that Bie Han would pledge his allegiance to this unknown Xiao Mo Ge.

"Who are you?" Bie Han hadn't expected the other to know so much about him and was slightly surprised. When he had been in Xuan Kong Temple, he never went out. There were only a rare few that knew so much about him, yet the other had managed to easily identify him.

"Xi Xuan's Gu Liang Dao." Gu Liang Dao smiled.

"I have heard of you." Bie Han nodded and understood. No wonder the other knew of him, he was a disciple of the four great sects. The competition between the four great sects had been ongoing for thousands of years. The factions had a thorough knowledge of their rivals.

"Your days aren't easy, why don't you join us?" Bie Han said

directly.

Gu Liang Dao's smile froze on his face.

Chapter 655 - Relations

Gu Liang Dao had not expected Bie Han to be so direct but he also felt puzzled. Put generously people like Bie Han were proud. They usually looked down on everyone and thought highly of themselves as the center of the world. Gu Liang Dao had only known that Bie Han had led Sin Battalion and left Xuan Kong Temple. But he still felt it incomprehensible that he had decided to follow this youth.

He then looked at Gongsun Cha standing at the side and Vermillion Bird Camp. Zuo Mo already had two top battalions. While this kind of strength could not rival the four great sects, it was much greater than the normal intermediate and small sects.

Puzzlement, shock, confusion, these emotions mixed in his mind.

“With the two of you here, there’s no need for me.” Gu Liang Dao said with disdain directed at himself. While this was just a courtesy response, it reflected Gu Liang Dao’s attitude. He did not know how big Zuo Mo’s factions was, but he had two top battle generals. If he joined them, he would only be gilding the lily and it would be difficult for him to earn a position in the inner circle.

His intelligence and cunning were greater than pure battle generals such as Gongsun Cha and Bie Han to have been able to gather such a group of people in such difficult circumstances.

While Bie Han was not skilled in scheming, he was perceptive. When he heard Gu Liang Dao say this, he did not try to persuade

any further, and said coolly, “But in the future, Xi Xuan will not be tolerant of you.”

The words hit the sore spot in Gu Liang Dao’s heart.

While to outsiders he looked to have a great reputation in the xiuzhe world and he was the top battle general from Xi Xuan, the higher-ups from Xian Xuan would not support him. Ultimately he was someone who had been categorized as something to be abandoned. To them he was an eyesore.

The greater his reputation was, the more terrified the Xi Xuan higher-ups became of him.

While the higher-ups were spoke good words on the surface and appeared understanding, Gu Liang Dao knew that it was just to lull him into a false sense of security. Because of this, he was willing to fight in the mo territories which carried great danger rather than return to the sect.

It was most likely that if he returned to the sect, what awaited him was loss of his command.

Gu Liang Dao was someone who was pragmatic. After a moment of silence, he smiled freely and his expression was not disguised at all. He said openly, “The matters of the future will wait until the future. No one can have smooth sailing all the time. It is enough to have gained something from this trip!”

Zuo Mo and Gongsun Cha couldn't help but admire this. Even the icy look in Bie Han's eyes melted slightly.

"This little brother heard that a marshal came, is he" Gu Liang Dao had a questioning look in his eyes.

"We accidentally killed him." Zuo Mo tried to keep his face normal and said with slight embarrassment—actually, it had been A Gui that had killed him.

Gu Liang Dao was struck dumb by Zuo Mo's expression and even more so by the words. He stammered out, "Accidentally ki killed"

He was not the only one affected, The commanders around him gaped as though they were seeing ghosts.

"En en en." Zuo Mo nodded repeatedly.

Gu Liang Dao's expression froze for a moment before he said, "Brother Xiao, as expected as expected the youth become heroes!"

He said "as expected" twice. He didn't know what words to use to describe his mood right now. He couldn't see any indications that the other was joking. He also knew that Xiao Mo Ge would not lie to him about this matter. The event would have just occurred and there were also many people present. He would only need to briefly investigate to find the truth of the matter.

And when he connected this to the scene of Bie Han had been slaughtering mo, this answer seemed reasonable. If it wasn't that the marshal had been killed, would the marshal would have tolerated his battalion being culled like sheep?

All the evidence seemed to indicate that Xiao Mo Ge's words were not false.

But that was a marshal, not a dog, a marshal!

He was equivalent to a fanxu xiuzhe!

Even in Xi Xuan, one of the four great sects of the xiuzhe world, fanxu xiuzhe were rare. They either spent their years in seclusion, or they were out travelling the world. But any fanxu xiuzhe was a strategic power for a sect.

Gu Liang Dao had fought against the mo and he had a deeper understanding of the mo than normal xiuzhe. In the mo world, the marshal level was the top power. They were the mo's strongest battle generals and strongest experts. Each of them was a person that could affect the state of the Hundred Savage Realm.

The fall of any marshal would be news that would cause all of the mo world to shake. This was even more of a bomb than any jie getting taken over.

Zuo Mo suddenly became even more mysterious and

unfathomable in his eyes.

Gu Liang Dao kept his calm but the commanders around him couldn't help but become cautious. Up until now, while the four major sects had obtained some gains, the yaomo had not been seriously harmed.

For the mo, the fall of Marshal Yu would be greatest loss up until now!

Gu Liang Dao quickly recovered from his shock. He was filled with curiosity and puzzlement but he forced these feelings down. It would be impolite to pry so deeply. He changed the topic, "Where is everyone planning to go now?"

"To Nether Springs Jie." Zuo Mo did not conceal this. The other had come to help. No matter what the reason for that was, it was a debt. Also, he could see that Gu Liang Dao was a open-minded and generous person.

"Nether Springs Jie?" Gu Liang Dao was slightly shocked but he did not ask why Zuo Mo and the others were going to Nether Springs Jie. He said after some thought, "Nether Springs Jie is in an extremely deep region of the Nether Realm. It is far away, and there are many powers along the way, it will not be an easy journey!"

Zuo Mo nodded, feeling the same. "Yes."

Gu Liang Dao took something out of his ring and handed it to Zuo Mo. He said with a hint of self-mockery, “While I am just pretending to follow orders, this little brother has to still conquer a few jie in order to satisfy my sect. I cannot go with Brother Xiao. This jie map is something that this little brother gained as a spoil from a fight. It does not belong to my sect. The information about the Hundred Savage Nether Realms and all of its jie are marked on this map, I hope this will be of some help to Brother Xiao.”

Zuo Mo’s expression changed. The other’s expression was sincere. It was a small item but its value was several thousand jingshi and was even more valuable to Zuo Mo!

This person was cunning but open and generous in how he treated people, he really is a hero.

Zuo Mo’s expression became stern and he put away the mirth in his expression. He bowed towards Gu Liang Dao. “Many thanks, Big Brother Gu! This little brother’s true name is Zuo Mo and I have used the pseudonym Xiao Mo Ge while moving around in the mo territories! Big Brother Gu, call me Xiao Mo!”

Gu Liang Dao laughed and said, “Names are small matters and not worth a mention. Brother, be careful! The mo never lack for vicious people and have a deep seeded hatred for us xiuzhe. Brother Zuo has to be careful on this journey. You also killed a marshal and your identity as a xiuzhe will now most likely be revealed. Now that you have become well known, the trip will no longer be a peaceful one.”

“Big Brother Gu is right.” Zuo Mo’s expression also became

grave.

After the fight today, his identity as a xiuzhe would most likely be unable to be concealed. The interested could be detected from the gazes of the survivors of Great Peace City. Their gazes were complex, filled with hate and gratefulness, but the most common emotion was fear.

He suddenly said, “This little brother has a matter, please, Big Brother Gu, help.”

“What is it?” Gu Liang Dao asked directly.

“These mo have some relations to this little brother. Big Brother Gu, please allow them to live.” Zuo Mo said.

Gu Liang Dao nodded without thinking. “Alright!”

“Many thanks, Big Brother Gu!” Zuo Mo said gratefully.

Gu Liang Dao shook his head and said, “Do not think of this brother as a bloodthirsty person. Fighting wars is a matter for battalions, what does it have to do with civilians? This brother has not fallen to such a low level. Also, after this Sky-Splitting Calamity, the intermingling of xiuzhe, yao, and mo will not be able to be stopped. The heavens will it. There is no need for unnecessary killing.”

A hint of shock flashed through Zuo Mo’s eyes. This Big Brother

Gu of his was a very strong person as he had expected. It wasn't that Zuo Mo hadn't met people who recognized this, but it was not easy for the great four to admit this.

Then they started chatting about other matters.

Gu Liang Dao quickly found that while Zuo Mo was young, his vision of larger events was clear. Even though he had accomplished so much at such a young age, he did not let his ego interfere.

Gu Liang Dao's judgment of the state of affairs was a keen and experienced, something that a beginner like Zuo Mo could not match. Just a few sentences would be enough to enlighten Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo finally understood why Big Brother Gu hadn't died under the pressure of the sect and had grown even more powerful.

The two were very compatible and talked through the night.

When the first thread of sunlight rose from the horizon, they seemed to wake up from a dream.

Everyone knew that this was the time of separation. Zuo Mo and the others had to go to Nether Springs Jie, and Gu Liang Dao and his group had to return back to reinforce their battle lines. They received news that there were enemies harassing their front line.

But the two sides were not picky people. They exchanged methods of contact and bid farewell.

When he saw the figures of Gu Liang Dao and the others disappear, Zuo Mo finally turned his gaze away.

The departure of Gu Liang Dao's group caused the mo survivors of Great Peace City to sigh in relief. When they heard that one of the newcomer battalions had been lead by Gu Liang Dao, they had been frightened half to death. In the eyes of many, Gu Liang Dao was a god of slaughter. They hadn't expected Gu Liang Dao to leave without even looking at them.

Many people speculated that it had been Xiao Mo Ge who had spoken on their behalf.

Their emotions were more complex. Xiao Mo Ge, was a xiuzhe and was their enemy. But if it wasn't for Xiao Mo Ge, the great majority of the people in Great Peace City would have died. Regardless of whether they admitted it aloud, they all knew this inside. Xiao Mo Ge had saved their lives.

But why was a person like this a xiuzhe?

Many people had this conflicted thought.

Zuo Mo did not care. He did not have any bias for or against the mo. He understood the hatred between the mo and the xiuzhe. He could also guess what they were feeling but he did not care.

It did not matter to him whether they felt grateful or hated him. He had done these things not for them, but to stay true to himself.

He did not pay attention to them, and ordered his subordinates to clean up the battlefield.

With Zuo Mo's personality, he naturally would not watch and allow so many of the spoils to slip by him. That wasn't Little Mo Ge's style. Due to Xiao Mo Ge's presence, no one had dared to scavenge the spoils in the night.

At this time, Princess Xia left the crowd.

Chapter 656 – Gu Liang Dao's choice

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised as he looked at that alluringly beautiful face.

“Are you not afraid of me?” Zuo Mo was puzzled. The other people looked at him with wariness and fear in their eyes, yet Princess Xia approached him as usual.

Princess Xia smiled alluringly, “Why should I be afraid of you? Will you eat me?”

Zuo Mo was left speechless.

Princess Xia's eyes moved and seemed mischievous. “I hadn't thought that you would know Gu Liang Dao! But it is fortunate for us that you know him. Otherwise, this place wouldn't even have ruins left. However, you have to be careful. It is not good for your reputation as a mo to be associated with xiuzhe. Which family are you really from? Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus is a very noble bloodline! Are you a descendant of the ancient families?”

Her words were not spoken quietly and she blinked playfully at Zuo Mo.

Listening to Princess Xia's words, many people showed expressions of relief. Princess Xia was right. How could someone that cultivated the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique be a xiuzhe?

They had never heard of a xiuzhe that was able to cultivate the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique, much less reach the completion stage of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. Thinking about it this way, everyone found the thought that Xiao Mo Ge was a xiuzhe was absurd.

All of the mo present exhaled in relief. Everything would be alright if Xiao Mo Ge was a mo. As to his relations with xiuzhe, while it was something that was frowned upon, no one cared too much.

Look at those xiuzhe, among them was the famed Gu Liang Dao!

They didn't feel that anything was wrong. Xiao Mo Ge was extraordinary, being familiar with other extraordinary people was expected. The common saying was birds of a feather, flock together. Someone that the Tiger General of Xi Xuan treated so respectfully, how could Xiao Mo Ge be a normal person?

Unconsciously, the terror in their eyes weakened and transformed into respect.

No matter where you were, people would respect the strong.

Zuo Mo's expression froze on his body. He now understood what it meant to make black into white. Princess Xia's silver tongue could make dead people become alive. Her speech was meant to help remove the suspicion people had of him. Even though it could not make everyone believe it. People such as Zhu Ke and a few

others still had suspicion in their eyes, it was enough to fool the normal people.

To them, the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was absolute proof!

As to the xiuzhe under Xiao Mo Ge's command, those were even easier to explain away. Xiao Mo Ge and Gu Liang Dao had a good relationship, it would therefore be normal to have some xiuzhe under his command. Looking at this battalion, the mo were the primary core!

Looking at Princess Xia smiling as she spoke, Zuo Mo knew that this woman had guessed his identity. However, he was still surprised that she had stepped out to help him.

Zuo Mo smiled but did not speak.

In the eyes of everyone else, his silence and expression caused them to feel even more mystery from him. Xiao Mo Ge's origins were probably extraordinary as Princess Xia had said!

Zuo Mo set up jinzhi and blocked off all sound.

"Thanks!" he said seriously.

Princess Xia smiled beautifully. "How will you thank me?"

Zuo Mo scratched his head. "Speak."

Princess Xia looked deeply at Zuo Mo as though she wanted to say something but when the words reached her mouth, it became, “Where are you preparing to go next?”

“Nether Springs Jie.” Zuo Mo did not conceal it.

“Nether Springs Jie?” Princess Xia had a shocked expression. “That place will not be easy to get to!”

“Yes.” Zuo Mo nodded.

Looking at the determination on Zuo Mo’s face, Princess Xia did not try to persuade him from his journey. She smiled and said, “Remember to visit me if you have the time, don’t forget that you still owe me a favor!”

“Yes.” Zuo Mo responded with a serious expression.

Detecting the seriousness in Zuo Mo’s tone, Princess Xia felt strangely happy. She suddenly asked, “Will you tell me your true name now?”

As expected, she had seen through him

But for some reason, Zuo Mo felt his mind relax. “Zuo Mo!”

“Zuo Mo Zuo Mo” Princess Xia murmured and then she

suddenly burst into laughter, “Xiao Mo Ge Xiao Mo Ge, you’re really a little hoodlum! Even your fake name is so stylish!”

Looking at Princess Xia arching back as she laughed, Zuo Mo’s mouth curled up.

The laughter faded. Calm and a distance separated them.

The two of them knew that after their farewells, it was unknown if or when they would meet again.

Looking at this face that could not be said to be handsome, in this moment, Princess Xia suddenly had an impulse to throw away everything and run away with him to Nether Springs Jie!

This impulse caused her determination to waver but she quickly hid the thought deep inside. She thought of the wish she had made that night and her gaze became determined.

She raised her face and smiled brightly like sunlight. “Hug me goodbye.”

Zuo Mo stilled. He opened his arms and lightly embraced this woman that was so smart and he could not understand.

“Have a peaceful journey.”

The murmur was like a breeze. She released her arms and her

smile was bright.

As one of the most popular topics in the xiuzhe world at present, Gu Liang Dao's every move attracted attention. In a short few days, the news of Gu Liang Dao's interaction with a mo called Xiao Mo Ge had spread.

The information on this Xiao Mo Ge was quickly discovered.

This Xiao Mo Ge was not an unknown mo!

However, what puzzled people was that this Xiao Mo Ge had first become famous in the yao territories. The prison-breaking battle and defeating Corps Commander Yu Heng. All those events had happened in the Ten Finger Prison. Yet the Xiao Mo Ge in these rumors was mo, and this puzzled many people.

Was this guy a yao or a mo?

Some even suspected that there were two people with the same name but as Xiao Mo Ge's almost unbelievable escapades came to light this suspicion weakened. It was very unlikely that two experts who were both called Xiao Mo Ge had appeared at the same time. And when the xiuzhe thought of the possibility there were two such talented yaomo, they were more willing to believe that it was one person.

Of all the incidents, what was most eye-catching was Xiao Mo Ge had killed Marshal Yu! When many people read this, their first response was that their eyes had seen it wrong. Then, all kinds of information corroborated the accuracy of this news and it caused a great furor.

But what was most controversial was that Gu Liang Dao had helped Xiao Mo Ge.

The rumor that the Tiger General of Xi Xuan was in cahoots with the mo spread and once it did, it caused a wave of discussion. All kinds of insider information and speculation flew about.

What was even more interesting was that Xi Xuan was silent and did not publicly clarify the situation.

Xi Xuan's attitude caused those speculations to seem to be the truth.

Was Gu Liang Dao truly in cahoots with the mo?

Furious discussion filled the world.

In a matter of days, the great hero of fell off the pedestal and was spat upon by the world.

Gu Liang Dao's face was dark. The development of the situation had surpassed his expectations. In the shadows, there seemed to be a hand moving everything. Actually, he didn't need to guess to know who was doing this. The attitude of the sect told him everything. What he hadn't expected was that the sect would be in such a hurry to act against him during a time of war.

Suddenly, he thought of what Bie Han had said.

He hadn't thought that it would come so quickly.

"Daren, should we make a public statement to clarify?" the subordinate couldn't help but speak.

"Clarify? How to would we clarify?" Gu Liang Dao said coolly.

"Xiao Mo Ge is clearly a xiuzhe"

Gu Liang Dao interrupted his subordinate. "This will make Brother Zuo's situation even more dangerous. He currently needs his identity as a mo." He had felt kinship with Zuo Mo and he was not willing to use this to clear his name. Also, he did not say it, but even if he told them, no one would believe him.

Because the people acting against him were the people from the sect.

This subordinate was panicked. "Daren, we cannot sit around and wait for them to act against us!"

At this time, a guard suddenly ran in with a terrible expression. “Daren, Elder Jin Wu Ming has come!”

The tent went completely silent. All of the commanders had terrible expressions.

“Ask Elder Jin to come in.” Gu Liang Dao’s expression was normal.

Moments later, a middle-aged person wearing golden clothing with a sharp presence walked in.

Gu Liang Dao stood up and bowed. “Greetings to Elder Jin!”

Elder Jin’s old voice was heavy but his tone was slow. “Gu Liang Dao, the sect leader orders you to return to the mountain. Your actions this time were too rash and has brought too much trouble to the sect. When you return to the sect, you will need to give a good explanation. The sect believes that you are innocent, but the damage to the sect’s reputation was too great. The sect needs you to cooperate.”

Gu Liang Dao was silent while his commanders all had angry expressions.

Elder Jin’s wizened tone became even slower. “Liang Dao, there won’t be any trouble if you just explain. If it wasn’t that the discussion was too fierce, I wouldn’t have come to get you. You

need to understand the hardships of the sect. Cooperate with the sect and eliminate the doubts we have.”

Gu Liang Dao shook his head. “Elder, your pardon, the war is a busy time and this disciple does not have the spare time to return to the sect at the moment. Elder, please return to the sect and tell the sect leader that when this war is finished, this disciple will return to the sect and ask for forgiveness.”

Elder Jin’s gaze suddenly became as sharp as a sword as he shouted angrily, “Gu Liang Dao, you dare to disobey the sect leader!”

“The reality is so, there is nothing I can do,” Gu Liang Dao said deeply.

“Good good good!” Elder Jin said three goods and then said coldly, “There is nothing I can do! If Gu Shidi knew his most beloved disciple was so disobedient, I only wonder what he thinks in the afterworld!”

A deep grief flashed across Gu Liang Dao’s eyes. He slowly stood up and looked directly at Elder Jing. “If it was not to repay Master’s grace of raising me, would I stay at Xi Xuan? I have fought countless times for the sect, almost died multiple times, and have rendered great service to the sect. I don’t owe the sect! If Master knew what the Xi Xuan he had always defended has become like this now”

Gu Liang Dao allowed the tears to fall down his face.

Elder Jing's face turned into a mix of colors as he shouted angrily. "Good good good! You have become proud due to your achievements! You dare to not listen to the orders of the sect leader. This is treason!" He turned looked around and said coldly to the commanders, "Are you all going to follow Gu Liang Dao and betray Xi Xuan?"

"What's the use in staying in such a ruthless sect?"

"We'll betray you!"

"I've long given up on this corrupt sect. This is very good, end it all!"

The commanders stood up one after the next and looked with fury and disdain at Elder Jin.

Elder Jin's old face became ashen and his extremities felt cold.

Over the next few days, Xi Xuan's Tiger General Gu Liang Dao led his battalion in leaving Xi Xuan. The world was left astounded.

Chapter 657 – Tang Battalion

It had been a month since the incident by the time Zuo Mo learned that Gu Liang Dao had left Xi Xuan. Zuo Mo was filled with guilt. From beginning to end, Gu Liang Dao had not stepped forward to defend himself. There was much speculation about Zuo Mo's identity but most of it focused on his identity as a yaomo. He believed this was the reason for Gu Liang Dao's silence.

The two had exchanged imprints. Zuo Mo thought for a moment and then wrote a letter to Gu Liang Dao thanking him for keeping the secret and asking what he could do to help.

A paper crane quickly flew back into Zuo Mo's hand.

Gu Liang Dao's letter was very short. He had just finished a battle when he wrote this letter. In the letter, Gu Liang Dao wrote that he had already sealed the chaos rift connecting to Xi Xian territory and they would no longer receive any supplies in the future. He had taken over fifteen mo jie and was planning to manage them so he could be self-sufficient. Right now, everything was good and there was no immediate worries.

Zuo Mo was relieved after reading this.

Fifteen jie, even if it was only fifteen small jie, was enough to support Gu Liang Dao's battalion. However, these fifteen jie they occupied were mo territories and the mo had a deep hatred of xiuzhe. It would not be simple for Gu Liang Dao to govern these fifteen jie.

However, Gu Liang Dao shouldn't have any problems in the short term.

Zuo Mo decided that after he went to Nether Springs Jie and returned to Cloud Sea Jie, he would set up a transportation formation to Gu Liang Dao's territories. They could then travel freely and help each other.

Zuo Mo threw away his worries about Gu Liang Dao and started to ponder his present situation.

In this past month, they had been travelling at full speed. It had to be said that the name of Xiao Mo Ge was famous in all of the mo territories. Defeating the Yu Frontier Guards, killing Marshal Yu, having a good friendship with Gu Liang Dao, and so on. This made the name of Xiao Mo Ge an intimidating one.

Zuo Mo had previously thought he should travel in a low-key manner. But there had been too many battles along the way. Seeing this, Zuo Mo decided to announce his presence, relying on the fame of the name Xiao Mo Ge to avoid trouble.

As expected, this move was immediately effective.

Those factions that previously did not know their background immediately shuddered when they learned that the incomers were Xiao Mo Ge's battalion. They even consciously restrained their own battalions. There had been a mo general who hadn't believed that Xiao Mo Ge was as strong as the rumors and wanted to test

their skill. In the end, all of his commanders had opposed him, and he had been assassinated in his bedroom that night.

Having raised his banner, Zuo Mo's path could be said to be free of any blockades.

However, Zuo Mo was not happy. While their speed had accelerated, they had exposed their movements to the public.

Where had Xiao Mo Ge reached today?

This was one of the hottest topics of the present mo world. Other problems came with this. At the beginning, they had been deeply afraid of Zuo Mo and the others. However, they quickly found that Xiao Mo Ge was not as brutal and vicious as the rumors said. As long as they did not provoke him, he would not attack. He did not have any interest in their territories.

Many people wanted to establish relations with such a strong and reasonable battalion. Even if they could not form a relationship, it would be good to curry favor. Consequently, many messengers came every day with gifts and invitations for Zuo Mo's group to be guests.

Zuo Mo didn't know whether to cry or laugh. He still accepted the gifts but he refused all invitations.

Yet what he hadn't expected was that there were large numbers of mo that came due to his reputation with hopes of entering his

battalion!

At the beginning, there hadn't been many people, but when the first group of mo who had come had seen the powerful soldiers of Vermillion Bird Camp and Sin Battalion, they had been stunned, and their desire had grown even hotter. When these people spread the mirages, it caused a great wave.

All the large families started to study these inaccurate mirages. The conclusion they reached was the same, a powerful battalion!

Defeating the Ming Bandits and defeating the Yu Frontier Guards; these two battalions had now been ranked high among the many battalions in the Hundred Savage of the Dark. Looking at these mirages, the last bit of doubt disappeared. They suddenly realized. No wonder they could defeat the Ming Bandits and the Yu Frontier Guards!

Mo always ranked themselves based on power. The strong were revered, and many mo that thought themselves more than ordinary furiously rushed over.

Xiao Mo Ge being able to kill Marshal Yu meant that Xiao Mo Ge possessed an ability to fight at a high level. Adding on the two top battalions, he had formed his own group. For those mo which came from minor families but were talented, entering Xiao Mo Ge's battalion was undoubtedly a very good path.

As more and more mo came due to his name, and a long tail of people formed behind Zuo Mo's group. They did not dare to go too

close to the battalions but they were not willing to leave. They prepared their own food and followed the battalion.

This was something novel to the mo and it stirred everyone's interest. All kinds of reports spread. Every time Xiao Mo Ge did something, the world would immediately know. This was a very popular topic at meals and during tea with lots to discuss.

All of Hundred Savage Realm was watching the spectacle and Zuo Mo felt frustrated.

“This cannot continue!”

Zuo Mo's expression was one of helplessness. The people around him were giggling. These people were all from grassroots and minor families. While they did not say it, they still felt very good about being famous.

They made faces at each other and smiled deviously.

Other than Bie Han.

Bie Han was of noble birth and had grown up in Xuan Kong Temple. He had become immune to the reverent gazes from others a long time ago. His icy face was eye-catching. However, everyone knew his personality and did not care about his icy face.

“I'm being serious.” Zuo Mo said with a serious expression, “We don't know how many spies are mixed with these people. Each of

our movements is being monitored. This is very dangerous!”

Everyone put away the mirth on their faces. They had all fought their way out of death on the battlefield and understood the danger more than the average person.

“En, very dangerous.” Gongsun Cha smiled bashfully.

Seeing Lil’ Miss Daren’s smiling face, everyone’s heart shook.

“Everyone think of a solution, what would be good?” Zuo Mo had an expression of hardship.

“Kill them all,” Bie Han said coolly.

The entire tent was silent. Everyone was frightened by Bie Han’s crisp and brisk words.

There were a few among them for whom it was the first time that they were attending a meeting: A Zha Ge, Bie Han, Miao Jun, and Tang Fei. Among them, A Zha Ge was the most cautious. He had decided to follow Gongsun Cha a while ago, but it was the first time he was seeing Zuo Mo. Miao Jun and Tang Fei also chose to remain silent. Only Bie Han had not done that.

A Zha Ge jumped in fright. Mo were fond of killing, but he had never seen someone with such disregard for life. Miao Jun’s pupils shrank. Tang Fei’s expression became furious. She was a righteous person and disliked Bie Han who behaved like a serial killer.

Before Tang Fei spoke in opposition, Zuo Mo shook his head. “It is not suitable.”

Zuo Mo was not a madman like Bie Han. While he was not soft when fighting an enemy, but he would not be able to do something like killing all these mo that came due to his reputation without a cause.

Gongsun Cha said, “Since they have come for you, then why don’t we recruit the outstanding ones. We just have to be careful and not let in spies.”

Zuo Mo thought, yes, they were coming to him, why shouldn’t he take them? He did not need to worry about the spies mixed within. Pu Yao and Wei could see with a glance those with other intentions.

His gaze swept across everyone’s faces. When his gaze landed on Miao Jun, he paused.

There was no question regarding Miao Jun’s strength. A gold battle general was a talent no matter what faction he was in. It would be waste if Zuo Mo had him sitting idle all the time. But while Miao Jun had come along, his intentions were unclear. Miao Jun had never disguised this but he did not speak the reveal the reason he followed Zuo Mo. Because of this, Zuo Mo had some hesitations about him.

When his gaze swept across Tang Fei who stood beside Miao Jun,

his eyes lit up. This little girl had a strong sense of justice, was stubborn and focused. She would not accept any flaws. Since she had agreed to Tao Xing's suggestion to follow him, she would not ever regret it. Even though she never had a good face for Zuo Mo, she would meticulously finish any orders Zuo Mo gave her. Zuo Mo trusted her.

Before this, she had the skill of a silver battle general. After this period of being taught by Miao Jun, she had started to have some of a presence of a great battle general.

Zuo Mo suddenly thought of a clever idea.

“That’s right! If that’s so, then let’s create a new battalion. Oh, let’s call it the Tangzi Battalion. Tang Fei will be the main commander, with Miao Jun as second in command.”

Everyone had surprised expressions and they turned to look at Tang Fei. This young girl with her hair in a ponytail was not eye-catching but at this time, she became the focus of the entire group. While not many had seen her skill and were curious about her, no one spoke up against Zuo Mo’s decision.

Tang Fei also was surprised but she quickly calmed down. She looked at Zuo Mo and then at Miao Jun. Technically, Miao Jun was more suitable to being the main commander than she was as Miao Jun was much more skilled.

Miao Jun smiled at her. He understood what Zuo Mo thought but this plan suited his own thoughts. While the two sides had not

explicitly said this, but in truth, Tang Fei was his student and he liked his student very much.

If this was somewhere else, Tang Fei's strength would be enough to be a main commander but he hadn't thought that Zuo Mo would have so many skilled battle generals!

Nothing had to be said about Gongsun Cha and Bie Han. The two were of the same level as Gu Liang Dao. Miao Jun could only look up to these top battle generals. It really was rare to see two top battle generals in one faction.

It was the first time Miao Jun had met A Zha Ge but he had heard of this name before. Gold battle general, one of the three great battle generals of the Stellar Rahula Clan. He hadn't thought the other would also enter Xiao Mo Ge's service.

One could not forget that Xiao Mo Ge himself was a also gold battle general!

Even those others such as Shu Long and the people under Gongsun Cha were not lacking compared to Tang Fei. It completely surpassed his imagination just how fierce the competition in this faction was.

Tang Fei was very talented but if she did not gain experience, it was hard to say what she could accomplish in the future. Right now, a political structure had taken form under Xiao Mo Ge and it would not be so easy to become of the main commanders. He understood his student very well. With her personality, since she

agreed to follow Zuo Mo, she would not regret it no matter how underutilized she was.

The other who he also taught was Shu Long. He was one of Zuo Mo's inner circle and he did not have to worry about the other's future. Only Tang Fei had been in an awkward position.

He hadn't thought that Zuo Mo would throw out such a plan. He immediately recognized that this was a one in a thousand chance for Tang Fei.

Before Tang Fei could speak, Miao Jun stood unhesitatingly. "Yes, we will not fail!"

Chapter 658 – The Black Smoke Yao's Memory Piecing Art

The establishment of the Tangzi Battalion went smoothly.

Miao Jun knew what needed to be done and clearly had experience in this area. Many people noticed this and, were curious about his past. Miao Jun's skill wasn't just theoretical, he was experienced, the kind of experiences that could not be obtained by just studying to be a battle general.

Pu Yao had specialized lie-detecting yao arts and quickly identified the spies mixed within the crowd, techniques that broadened Zuo Mo's experiences.

The Tangzi Battalion quickly formed its basic combat structure. The ones that had joined were mostly from small families and had some ability. Following Miao Jun's suggestions, Tang Fei did not recruit a large number of people but picked only the most outstanding.

Compared with the other battalions, the Tangzi Battalion could only be said to be a small battalion of about eight hundred people.

These eight hundred people were picked out from approximately a hundred thousand people.

In terms of average individual power, they were much stronger than Ceng Lian'er's Celestial Planet Guards. Xiao Mo Ge's present

reputation was much more attractive to the experts than Ceng Yi's.

What shocked Zuo Mo even more was that more than twenty general level mo had come to join him as well.

This caused Zuo Mo to feel a bout of pride. Ge is now a major figure that could recruit general levels!

There were seven battle generals among the twenty general levels and all of them were silver battle generals. This made Zuo Mo overjoyed. Right now, he did not lack for gold battle generals. Gongsun Cha, Bie Han, Miao Jun, and A Zha Ge, all of them could act by themselves. Gongsun Cha and Bie Han were top battle generals.

But in a whole battalion, other than a powerful main commander, the intermediate level commanders were also very important. Especially when the battalions grew larger, more and more outstanding intermediate level battle generals were needed. Yet Zuo Mo lacked these intermediate level battle generals.

When the additional manpower was accepted into the combat structure, Zuo Mo's power would undoubtedly go up another level.

The stringent criteria for recruitment quickly spread between people.

The people who had been watching were surprised.

Who did this guy think he was? Even those marshal levels most likely couldn't compare to him! The people who had not passed the selection started to mock and furiously slandered Xiao Mo Ge. They all thought that they had strength, and it would be easy to be selected. However, they had been eliminated and they were filled with discontent.

Xiao Mo Ge was so full of himself and so proud

Zuo Mo did not pay attention to this. Since he had given the Tang Fei and Miao Jun permission to create the battalion, he did not interfere. He would never question the employed, and never employ the questionable. Every commander's style was different, their way of fighting and their way of cultivation. The systematic teamwork that was required would be directed by Gongsun Cha.

Zuo Mo focused his time on his cultivation. He was progressing rapidly. He had benefited greatly from that hard battle against Marshal Yu. He needed a long time to digest these things. But once he did, his power would skyrocket.

Luo Li and Ceng Lian'er were also in the same state.

The purple energy inside A Gui's body was growing daily at an astounding rate. It seemed as though that battle had suddenly opened a door in A Gui's body. Purple energy flooded out and right now, there was three times more purple energy inside A Gui's body compared to before!

A Gui had become even stronger but Zuo Mo's worries increased.

This strange shen power was a double-edged sword, harming the enemy meant harming oneself. However, Zuo Mo wasn't able to do anything. He could only suppress the urgency inside and focused even more on his cultivation. Maybe when he became stronger he could find the key to resolving the purple energy inside A Gui's body.

His greatest improvement had come from the Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

He had seen every detail of the completed Ten Crow Celestial Domain. Many areas that had been unclear before were now engraved in his mind so his improvement naturally sped up. Right now, he was just one step away from the completed state of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain. Other than his comprehension of the Ten Crow Celestial Domain, there was the great degree of maturation in his mo physique.

The strange fragments of energy that had been formed from the creation and destruction of the Anti Dragon Claw's and Sun Shen Crystal's powers were the most primal power. They had strengthened Zuo Mo in all areas. Mo physique, spiritual consciousness, ling power, even his shen power, all of them had increased greatly.

This was the most wondrous power that Zuo Mo had ever seen but when he thought of it, he found that it really was lucky. Both the Sun Crystal Seed and the Anti Dragon Claw were ultimate treasures of the world. Obtaining one would mean a person had great luck. Having obtained two at once, even Zuo Mo sighed in

shock at his own luck.

The mo matrix that had formed with the Anti Dragon Claw had become dim as the Anti Dragon Claw became silent and seemed to have gone into hibernation.

Zuo Mo was slightly disappointed by the slumber of the Anti Dragon Claw. He had originally thought that he could carry this weapon around and dominate in all directions. Now his wish had gone up in smoke. However, it was good that he didn't need to carry such an enormous thing on his back. In Zuo Mo's sense of beauty, that thing was really ugly!

The Three Thousand Threads of Worry did not change and now became the strongest weapon that Zuo Mo had.

Zuo Mo felt that he really didn't have enough time. There were all types of cultivation he could work on, but each one would take up a large amount of time.

Just as Zuo Mo wanted to cut himself in half to get more work done, the black smoke yao ran over while appearing secretive.

"What is it?" Zuo Mo looked at the other's cunning face and muttered inside, did this guy do something bad again?

Then he felt slightly puzzled. Zuo Mo would feel it was normal if it was the orange-haired yao doing this. But in his mind, the black smoke yao was usually calm, steady, and well behaved!

“Boss, let me show you something.” The black smoke yao lowered his voice and looked around.

Had this guy really stolen something?

Zuo Mo felt even more puzzled. He took what the black smoke yao handed over. It was a little paper card with some words written on it. Zuo Mo looked with bewilderment at the black smoke yao and then skimmed through.

When he saw the first phrase, he was stunned where he stood.

There wasn't much content on the paper card and he quickly finished reading it. Zuo Mo finally came out of his daze. Two spots of red made their way onto his cheeks. This expression would only occur in one circumstance –Xiao Mo Ge had struck it rich!

“The stele's text?” Zuo Mo forced himself to be calm but his voice still went off-tune.

“En.” The black smoke yao lowered his volume and said carefully, “Boss, you know that I am weak. In order to stop Lin Qian and to create an opportunity for Big Orange and the others, I charged for the stele.”

“Then you remembered it?” Zuo Mo's voice was excited.

“It is not so simple.” The black smoke yao grimaced. “I have a rare skill that not many know of, I have an eidetic memory. However, I only had a cursory glance as Lin Qian reacted too quickly.”

“I recalled this event a while ago, and then I noticed I could recall some of the text on the stele. But it was all very blurry and I had to use [Memory Piecing Art] to slowly piece it together.”

“Memory piercing art?” Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. He had never heard of this yao art before.

Pu Yao suddenly spoke, “It is a type of support yao art. It can replay past events in the mind like a puzzle coming together. It has the benefit of improving memory. When one reaches a high level, they will gain an eidetic memory and can browse their memories at any time. However, this kind of yao art is easy to learn but hard to master. It doesn’t have any big uses. Only those old researchers would spend energy on things like this.”

Zuo Mo was very shocked. So there were yao arts like this.

The black smoke yao was slightly embarrassed. “My talent is average. In order to help my cultivation, I cultivated the [Memory Piecing Art]. My eidetic memory only came about after I started cultivating this.”

“But the time has been short and I only got a short glance at the stele’s text. My impression is very fuzzy but I still decided to try with the memory piecing art. This is the content that I have pieced

together using the memory piecing art. It is not very complete and I'm not sure if the content is accurate."

When he talked about this, the black smoke yao was slightly embarrassed. He had gathered his courage for a long time before he had come to find Zuo Mo. He knew that the stele text was important but what he had pieced together was incomplete, and he didn't even dare to say that it was accurate.

In cultivation methods, the difference of one character could cause a great misunderstanding. He didn't know if this thing he had was accurate and therefore have any value.

"Boss, just take a look, don't cultivate it!" When the black smoke yao finished saying this, he felt his face flush. Before Zuo Mo could speak, he had run away.

Zuo Mo laughed. This black smoke yao seemed calm usually but he was truly adorable.

His gaze landed quickly on the little card in his hand.

"There are some mistakes but the general parts seem correct." Pu Yao's voice was filled with excitement. "So that is how it is! So that is how it is!"

In comparison, Wei was much calmer. "Not bad!"

The two quickly picked out the mistakes on the paper. Of the

two, one was an old yao that was thousands of years old, the other came from an ancient tribe, and their knowledge was not something that Zuo Mo could rival.

As expected, Zuo Mo found that the places in the content where he had felt that it was rough were now much clearer.

Shi Zi Ming had not tried to shroud this in mystery.

The few phrases caused Zuo Mo to see a whole new world.

Almost unconsciously, the shen power in Zuo Mo's body started to move!

This time, there was no delay. When his thought formed, his shen power would follow.

A strange feeling formed!

His spiritual consciousness spread from the dantian in his head, while the dantian in his abdomen was unusually active. Threads of ling power spread happily from his abdomen and flowed endlessly along his channels. The power grew like branches from the main channels and innervated every inch of blood and flesh.

Ling power, spiritual consciousness, and mo physique formed a complex and gigantic system.

A phrase from the paper card flowed across Zuo Mo's mind and he suddenly had an epiphany.

He finally understood what the key to the loss of shen power was!

The origin of spiritual consciousness was the head. The power was formed from the inside, from the soul and then released. The mo physique was the exact opposite. Power originated from the physical body and the power went from the outside to the inside. Ling power was the bridge between the two. It was formed in the dantian and spread throughout the body by the channels. It permeated the blood and flesh, but also into the soul.

When this system became clear in Zuo Mo's mind, his body suddenly shook.

The three powers began circulated unconsciously. They joined together but they were also clearly divided.

As they continued to circulate, shen power formed.

Zuo Mo's body reached a state of harmony. Each power went about their own duties but they were of one mind, one existence. He felt he was stronger than he had ever been!

His body was like the universe!

Full of life, and immortal!

A strange emotion filled his mind.

It was not the strength of his power, but the harmony of his body and soul was powerful as one!

Chapter 659 – Li Xian Er

“You have worked hard these past few years!” The sect leader’s voice was heard from above, the tone was filled with gratification and affection.

The disciples looked at their little shimei standing in the hall like a goddess. Many people had expressions of love but there was also a bit of respect and fear in this love.

Compared to her flighty and mischievousness attitude in the past, the present Li Xian Er looked much more steady and even more beautiful. Once she had only been a playful little girl, now there was maturity, and a presence that was hard to describe.

Looking at the calm and steady figure in the center, many of the disciples couldn’t help but feel emotional.

Their little shimei that had been favored for so many years had grown up to become a leader!

There was a faint friendly smile on her face that caused people to feel good. When people were not paying attention, she blinked her eyes playfully at the sect leader and the sect leader returned an affectionate smile from the corner of his mouth.

He was filled with pride. His granddaughter had lived up to his hopes!

However, he quickly hid away the mirth on his lips and said in a stern voice, “I have gathered you all here today to assign missions to each of you.”

“Yes!” the disciple said in unison.

“One month ago, Heavy Wood Jie was taken over by the mo. The mo were cunning and sealed off all methods of communication so we didn’t discover this until five days ago, when they had took over three nearby jie, including Bright Jing Jie!”

The disciples were astounded, their faces full of disbelief.

They didn’t know where Heavy Wood Jie was, but every disciple knew where Bright Jing Jie was located. Bright Jing Jie was only an intermediate-sized jie but it was an important producer of Tian Huan’s jingshi; Including a special kind of jingshi called bright jingshi which was only produced in Heavy Wood Jie. Bright Jing Jie provided large amounts of both jingshi and bright jingshi for Tian Huan, an important resource jie for Tian Huan.

But the noisy hall quickly quieted down.

Tian Huan was one of the four great sect and their disciples were all disciplined. After the initial shock, they quickly recovered their calm.

The sect leader was very satisfied with the performance of the disciples.

“The importance of Bright Jing Jie to us does not need to be stated, I believe that you all know,” the sect leader said coolly. “The elders in the sect all have important missions and cannot go. So the mission will be given to you this time. Tian Man!”

“This disciple is here!” Shi Tian Man stood out.

“Do you have the confidence if this matter is handed to you?” the sect leader said.

“I will not fail,” Shi Tian Man said seriously.

“En, you can select the personnel and battalions that you want. I only have one condition, take back Bright Jing Jie in a month,” the sect leader said coolly.

“This disciple understands!” Shi Tian Man responded with a calm expression and no panic at all.

The sect leader showed a satisfied expression.

“Grandfather!” Li Xian Er shook the sect leader’s arm with a pout.

“Alright, alright! If you keep shaking, Grandfather will break

apart.” The sect leader said with a smile. His eyes were narrowed and he had a relaxed expression. “You have done well. Even your Gui Shishu praised you. Not bad, not bad!”

He said “not bad” twice which showed just how proud he was. Gui Shidi was a strict trainer who did not spare people due to their relationships. It was extremely difficult to earn praise from his mouth. He felt very proud that his granddaughter had received praises from Gui Shidi who was famed for his strictness.

“Haha, of course, look whose granddaughter I am!” Li Xian Er giggled.

The sect leader was very pleased by the flattery but he still pretended to be stern and coughed lightly. “But do not be too proud, you must know”

Seeing that her grandfather was about to start lecturing her again, Li Xian Er felt her head about to swell. She hurriedly changed the topic. “Grandfather, you summoned me back with such urgency, is there something important?”

The sect leader was distracted and the smile on his face disappeared. He showed slightly worry. “Your Xiao Rong Shixiong is not in a good situation!”

“What about Xiao Rong Shixiong?” The smile on Li Xian Er’s face disappeared and she asked urgently.

“He first suffered a loss to Mu Xi and then again to a person called Gongsun Cha. While his situation is not good, there is no danger temporarily.”

“Mu Xi of the Palace Lake Wood Clan?” Li Xian Er’s response was quick.

“Yes, I hadn’t thought that the Palace Lake Wood Clan would have such an outstanding member in their younger generation!” the sect leader said emotionally.

“Then who is Gongsun Cha?” Li Xian Er’s brow furrowed. She tilted her head and looked with an expression of curiosity. At this time, she finally looked as playful as she did in the past.

“This person is not well-known and it isn’t known where he came from but he is very strong.” The sect leader’s expression was grave. “It has been some time since the battle. Gongsun Cha is very mysterious and we only recently identified which faction he belonged to.”

“Which faction?” Li Xian Er blinked her eyes curiously. She was surprised that Mu Xi had defeated Xiao Rong Shixiong but that was within the range of normality. Palace Lake Wood Clan was one of the famed families in the yao world and had a long history of producing outstanding battle generals. But this something Cha was able to defeat Xiao Rong Shixiong as well. She was shocked.

She knew just how strong Xiao Rong Shixiong was. Among the younger disciples in the sect, only Tian Man Shixiong could rival

him.

“Xiao Mo Ge!” the sect leader said three words.

Li Xian Er’s face was puzzled. “Who is he?”

“This person is very mysterious.” The sect leader’s expression was grave. “You have just returned and there are some things you do not know. First Xiao Mo Ge and Gu Liang Dao are good friends. Just a while ago, Gu Liang Dao suddenly left Xi Xuan! The cause of this was this Xiao Mo Ge!”

“Ah!” Li Xian Er exclaimed and wasn’t able to maintain her calm. Of course she knew who Gu Liang Dao was. Xi Xuan’s Tiger General, the undoubted top battle general of the younger generation! Such a person had betrayed their sect!

If it wasn’t that the person who was telling her this was her grandfather, she would have had a hard time believing it.

The sect leader seemed to not see his granddaughter’s shock and continued. “No one can say what Xiao Mo Ge’s background is. Even now, we are uncertain about whether he is a yao or a mo. He had gone into the Ten Finger Prison and activated a prison-breaking battle. This person isn’t just strong, he is an outstanding battle general. He defeated Corps Commander Yu Heng of the Regular Corps, a gold battle general!”

Li Xian Er’s mouth was open wide. Her face that was usually

filled with smiles was full of shock.

The sect leader did not stop and continued, “Xiao Mo Ge then appeared in the mo’s Great Peace City.”

Li Xian Er recovered and hurriedly asked, “The Great Peace City with the Great Peace Mo Steles?”

“Yes.” The sect leader said sternly, “Do you know about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?”

“I know.” Li Xian ER nodded obediently. “I have read about it in the records.”

The sect leader nodded. “We have always had our people in Great Peace City because of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. That is also why we know such much about what happened at Great Peace City.”

Li Xian Er did not interrupt and listened curiously.

“Xiao Mo Ge suddenly appeared at Great Peace City. When he appeared, he made a flamboyant appearance. He caused the worldly apparition Shifting Star Sands, killed Shen Yu who had comprehended the [Peacock King Plume]. The mo physique he cultivates is the pure [Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus]. When the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion appeared, we also sent people but we hadn’t expected Kun Lun to send Lin Qian!”

“Lin Qian!” Li Xian Er jumped in fright. Lin Qian was the eldest disciple of Kun Lun, and undoubtedly the first person of the younger generation!

“Lin Qian is really powerful and managed to intimidate all of the mo. He almost managed to achieve his aim, but at the most crucial moment, Xiao Mo Ge used the Anti Dragon Claw to block his sword strike!”

“Anti Dragon Claw!” Li Xian Er felt slightly dizzy. Each of the sky mo weapons of the mo were famed. Normal xiuzhe may not know of them but how could the core disciples of a major sect be ignorant?

Even the sect leader grimaced. “This boy can be called a freak! With power of a general level, he tamed the sky mo weapon. This has never happened before in the history of the mo. Then when Great Peace City was surrounded by Hundred Savage Realm’s strongest bandits, the Ming Bandits, he defeated them. Reports said fighting was extreme and that the battalion that defeated the Ming Bandits is one that you know!”

“A battalion that I know? Which one?” Li Xian Er asked dazedly.

“Xuan Kong Temple’s Sin Battalion!”

“Sin Battalion!” Li Xian Er’s eyes were dumbstruck. Of course she knew Sin Battalion. The four great sects had exchanges and knew each other very well. The famed Sin Battalion, how could she not know. She murmured, “Isn’t the commander of Sin Battalion

someone called Bie Han”

“Yes.” The sect leader nodded. “You came back late and don’t know yet. The first time Bie Han was sent to fight, he took Sin Battalion and betrayed Xuan Kong Temple.”

Li Xian Er was completely stunned. Was this Xiao Mo Ge a specialist in getting people to leave and betray their factions? Xuan Kong Temple’s Bie Han left, Xi Xuan’s Tiger General Gu Liang Dao left, the disciples that betrayed their sects were all core disciples

What kind of power did this guy have?

A hint of curiosity suddenly rose. Once it formed, it couldn’t be erased.

Looking at his granddaughter’s wide mouth and stunned expression, the sect leader then said, “Then they encountered Marshal Yu who came with ten thousand Yu Frontier Guards. Marshal Yu wanted the Anti Dragon Claw that Xiao Mo Ge had. The two fought. Xiao Mo Ge’s group killed Marshal Yu and defeated the Yu Frontier Guards.

Li Xian Er felt that she was completely numb.

He had even killed a marshal. This person could not be described any longer as freakish

“When the battle finished, two battalions came to reinforce him. One was Gongsun Cha, the other was Gu Liang Dao.” The sect leader spoke meaningfully, “This was also the reason that Gu Liang Dao left Xi Xuan.”

Freak! A definite freak!

Li Xian Er swallowed hard. She had always felt that she was a mischievous person but, today, she discovered that she actually was very good!

This Xiao Mo Ge caused a storm of blood wherever he went. The people he met would betray their sects. Compared to him, she really was obedient and quiet!

She suddenly had an impulse to meet this person, this Xiao Mo Ge who could not settle down and always created a storm!

The sect leader glanced at his granddaughter and showed an imperceptible smile. However, he quickly resumed his solemn expression.

“This time, you have to go on behalf of Grandfather to the mo territories.”

Chapter 660 – Destiny

Finally having guidance on how to comprehend shen power, Zuo Mo's control over the shen power inside his body greatly increased.

Zuo Mo had to admire Shi Zi Ming. He was a great person indeed. Having never cultivated any power in his life but he was still able to understand the secrets of power. This kind of talent only appeared once in a thousand years!

Having found the key, Zuo Mo's shen power growth did not increase but his manipulation of shen power reached a whole new level. The power of shen techniques were far more powerful than the other three powers at the same stage. However, the shen power inside Zuo Mo was very weak and shen techniques required a lot of shen power.

The cryptic text on the golden leaf had become much easier to understand. He quickly mastered some of the shen techniques. In the past, when he had used shen techniques his three powers had to be individually moved and coordinated, Zuo Mo had found it difficult. Now when he cast a shen technique, almost as his thought had formed, the three powers would circulate together and the shen technique would form in that instant.

It seemed to flow smoothly and occur naturally.

There wasn't any blockade.

After his success, Zuo Mo's first thought was to share this method with A Gui but he didn't know if A Gui could understand this. The other person he could share this with was Ceng Lian'er but Zuo Mo hesitated. In his mind, Ceng Lian'er's importance could not compare to A Gui. However, she had never retreated from any of his battles and had even been wounded last time. Zuo Mo felt that she could be considered one of his people.

He pulled A Gui and Ceng Lian'er over before starting to talk.

A Gui's face was wooden as though she did not hear it but Ceng Lian'er's expression was overjoyed. She kept her ears open in fear she would miss a word.

Zuo Mo narrated everything he had experienced before stopping.

But A Gui still looked the same and didn't react at all. Zuo Mo sighed inside and then rubbed A Gui's head. Seeing Ceng Lian'er in a trance, he did not make a sound and left, pulling A Gui along.

Having left, Zuo Mo suddenly thought of a question and called the black smoke yao over.

Zuo Mo said with a serious expression. "The thing you gave me is very useful. Tell me what you want!"

The black smoke yao understood Zuo Mo's meaning. Zuo Mo wanted to thank him. He thought for a moment and then said calmly, "My talent is average but Big Orange's talent is very good.

Boss, teach him more!”

Seeing the black smoke yao calmly giving his chance to Big Orange, Zuo Mo was moved. He said with a smile, “Everyone here are brothers. Even if you don’t ask that, I won’t hide anything from him. This is me thanking you. If you have something you want, or some wish, as long as it is possible!”

The black smoke yao shook his head calmly. “Boss, you also say that everyone here are brothers. Since we are brothers, isn’t this something that should be done? Boss, if you go around thanking us for this and for that, aren’t you making us outsiders?”

Zuo Mo stilled at the black smoke yao’s words. The black smoke yao had a calm expression that seemed to be full of sincerity in Zuo Mo’s eyes. He couldn’t help but be moved. He nodded and said, “You are right, I’m treating you like an outsider!”

Zuo Mo decided secretly to find a set of suitable yao arts for the black smoke yao.

If he didn’t have any, then he would make one.

While Zuo Mo’s present strength had not reached marshal level, his understanding of power may not be less than that of a marshal. He knew the mysteries of shen power and had experienced even higher-level power. He had an understanding of the quality and direction of power that surpassed his strength.

“Daren, they are going to Nether Springs Jie!” a scout respectfully reported. Xiao Mo Ge’s destination wasn’t a secret and many knew.

“Nether Springs Jie” Jiang Zhe’s eyes flickered across the jie map and quickly landed on a faraway place.

His expression was calm and serene.

The scout lowered his head and didn’t dare to breath. Ever since Feng Yue Shijie had been killed, Daren had become even more silent and cold. The commanders’ fear of him grew by the day.

“You are dismissed.” Jiang Zhe waved his hand.

“Yes!” the scout released a breath and hurriedly responded respectfully before carefully retreating.

After the scout left, Jiang Zhe’s eyes did not leave the jie map. A moment later, he seemed to sigh and murmur, “Bie Han”

On the desk beside him, a paper that had crease marks had the newest orders from the sect.

Kill the traitor Bie Han!

Exterminate Sin Battalion!

He was not shocked when he received this order. Xuan Kong Temple's inner core had always been tight knit and the sect leader wouldn't tolerate betrayal. Gu Liang Dao's betrayal had shocked all of the xiuzhe world. Xi Xuan's reputation had been greatly damage. While the betrayal of Sin Battalion had not been spread far and wide like Gu Liang Dao, the higher-ups in the bigger sect all knew.

The sect definitely would not permit Bie Han to live.

In order to kill Bie Han and Sin battalion, large numbers of reinforcements were being funneled towards the mission.

The battalions that had been ordered to come surpassed any of his previous missions. Jiang Zhe felt complicated feelings. Who could have thought that the biggest action of Xuan Kong Temple in the last thousand years was to kill a traitor!

Sin Battalion and Jiangzi Batatlion, Bie Han and Jiang Zhe. Two core battalions, two young battle generals that had rivaled each other since childhood. They were about to welcome a destined battle of life and death.

Even people like Jiang Zhe who had a strong mind couldn't help but sigh.

Xiao Mo Ge. This unfamiliar name entered Jiang Zhe's vision.

Unbelievable fights, each could almost be called miraculous. Jiang Zhe was filled with curiosity towards Xiao Mo Ge. Even someone as proud as Bie Han had entered his service.

If he didn't have confidence in the abilities of the sect, he would snort at the news.

Bie Han was usually of few words, but when he fought, he was fiery, brutal and bloodthirsty. He would actually swear allegiance to someone else!

However, someone that could kill a marshal level. This strength was enough to stun people.

He shook his head and his gaze landed on another name.

Gongsun Cha.

This name that was unknown had been labeled as "extremely dangerous." His danger level was the same as "Bie Han."

He had to be careful. If this Gongsun Cha really had the same level of skill of Bie Han, then he did not have confidence in this fight.

Jiang Zhe was more willing to believe this was due to the importance the sect placed on this fight.

At the same level as Bie Han. If that was true, then it would be terrifying!

Jiang Zhe threw the stray thoughts to the back of his mind. No matter how strong his opponents were, this battle could not be avoided! He didn't just have to win, he had to make it beautiful!

Because this battle wasn't just related to the reputation of the sect, it was also needed to intimidate the stupid people that were considering shifting allegiances in the sect! Gu Liang Dao's betrayal of Xi Xuan had had major effects with the factions within the sect. Right now, Xi Xuan was divided and its people were not united.

This kind of matter could not happen to Xuan Kong Temple.

Jiang Zhe was to use reality to tell them there was only one outcome in betraying the sect

—Die without any chance of burial!

————

Lin Qian was naked as he soaked in a crystal clear pool. There were numerous complex seal scripts that criss-crossed around the border of the pool.

His expression was serene as though he was a sleeping baby.

There were eight or so sword xiu around the pool. Their faces were wizened but when their eyes moved, sharp sword-like lights would flash.

Suddenly, Lin Qian's body gave off a faint light.

The light was not blinding and was comfortable to see.

The old people around the pool shifted with excited expressions on their faces. This warm energy was not like any power they had seen before.

“Shen power! This is shen power!”

“The Heavens bless our Kun Lun!”

“Little Lin Qian is definitely the pillar of our sect!”

Lin Qian slowly opened his eyes from within the pool. The light disappeared from his cool eyes. He did not move but the water in the pool suddenly flooded towards him.

It came in layers and moved like smoke.

In a blink, Lin Qian was dressed and the water in the pool had turned into a blue robe.

“This disciple greets Sect Leader, Shishu!”

Lin Qian respectfully bowed.

“Is it shen power?” a Kun Lu elder couldn’t resist asking.

“Yes!” Lin Qian said respectfully. “But it is not complete. This disciple is just mimicking shen power from memory.”

“Try and see.” The one who spoke was the Kun Lun sect leader. His brow was straight and his eyes had been half-lidded all this time. The pair of eyes were deep, aged and seemed to see through everything.

“Yes!” Lin Qian raised his right hand. Faint blue shen power turned into a flying sword that appeared in his hand.

“It really is shen power! The power is above shen power!” an elder couldn’t help but say.

The sect leader came forward and reached out to grip the blue flying sword made from shen power.

Pia pia pia!

Countless blue lights exploded in the sect leader’s hand but the sect leader did not seem to be affected and his hand did not move.

Pia!

A sound that was louder than the ones before it. The shen power blue sword suddenly exploded!

The sect leader's hand did not move at all.

The blue energy that had exploded seemed to be imprisoned in his palm, like an invisible cage. The lights flashed but they were unable to break free.

The sect leader only took away his hand after the light faded. He said coolly, "It is more domineering than ling power and about twice as strong. However, if one wants to cultivate shen power, they will have to cultivate all three powers."

Lin Qian was floored by the sect leader's deduction. As expected of the sect leader. He saw it at a glance. Lin Qian said respectfully, "Yes!"

"All three powers?" the other elders frowned.

Kun Lun had yearned after shen power for a long time, but they had never gotten it. If it wasn't that Lin Qian had fought against Xiao Mo Ge and the others and experienced shen power, they still wouldn't know anything about it. They hadn't expected Lin Qian to have such high comprehension that he could create the initial form of shen power after one battle.

These Kun Lun elders had been at the height of their joy and thought that shen power could be taught widely. But when they heard that the sect leader say that all three powers were required, they all frowned.

In Kun Lun, there were very rarely those that could cultivate three powers together.

In other words, the great majority of disciples were not qualified to cultivate shen power. In this case, the utility of shen power would be deeply underscored.

If a new disciple started training now, they wouldn't know how long it would take until they were able to fight.

The state of affairs was so chaotic now they could not afford to wait.

The sect leader's eyes that seemed to see through everything opened slightly. He looked towards Lin Qian and changed the topic. "Tell us about the impression those people cultivating shen power gave you."

Lin Qian closed his eyes and thought back. Then he opened them. "They cultivate different shen power. Xiao Mo Ge's shen power is domineering and burning, the two women next to him have an eerie and a cold power. That middle-aged woman's shen power is lacking compared to Xiao Mo Ge's trio and is just in its infancy."

The sect leader nodded. “Go down now and rest. The elders and I will perfect the cultivation method for shen power. Come back and in a few days to try the new method.”

Lin Qian was about to leave when the sect leader suddenly called him.

“Go investigate all the records of ancient tribe descendants being killed in the last two hundred years.”

Lin Qian stilled and then quickly reacted. “Yes!”

Chapter 661

The orange-haired yao learned the yao arts that Zuo Mo taught on the first try.

The orange-haired yao laughed into the sky. His bright orange hair floated around like a ball of fire. He was very smug. “Things like yao arts cannot satisfy a genius like me!”

A Wen felt this guy was an eyesore no matter how he looked. He said disdainfully, “With just the amount of ability you have, ye can beat your teeth out with just a finger.”

The orange-haired yao was furious. “Come come come! Let us fight three hundred rounds. The first one to flee is a dog!”

A Wen glared back angrily. “I’m just afraid you are the son of a turtle!”

Bam bam bam bam!

“They started again!” Nan Yue covered her forehead and said with an expression of helplessness.

“It will be fine once you are accustomed.” The black smoke yao did not change expression.

Ming Jue Zi and Cang Ze raised their heads at the same time and

looked at each other before lowering their heads to go back, concentrating on their own cultivation.

Zuo Mo had taught them new yao arts but what was most valuable was that he had taught them about the lessons in the Great Peace Mo Steles.

Each of them had been given a copy of the text from the Great Peace Mo Stele. The great skill that Zuo Mo had displayed with all kinds of yao arts had immediately attracted their attention.

There was also a group of flower yao that listened to his lesson with them.

Only A Wen who cultivated mo skills was an aberration. The two who had progressed the most was the orange haired yao and, unexpectedly, the other was A Wen.

There was nothing to be said of the orange haired yao's improvement. While he was forgetful and easily distracted, his talent was just as unfathomable as his changes in subject.

A Wen was even weirder. Zuo Mo clearly was talking about yao arts but A Wen's mo skills were what improved.

But the two who had improved the most did not like each other. They had to fight a few times each day, especially when Zuo Mo was not present.

However, this time, Zuo Mo caught them in the act.

A Wen stood with lowered eyes in front of Zuo Mo. The orange haired yao continued to make faces at Zuo Mo. The other people had expressions of anticipation. Was Daren going to punish these two people who didn't have bottom lines?

“Hem, why are you two fighting each day?” Zuo Mo asked.

“He is jealous of my astounding talent and handsome face!” the orange haired yao said seriously.

A Wen was furious. “You! Come, let us fight three hundred rounds!”

“Do not run!” The orange haired yao's eyes lit up.

“The first to run is a son of a turtle!”

“You're the son of a turtle!”

“I'll kill you!”

Zuo Mo could only interfere and hold down the two people. However, even restrained the two still glared angrily at each other.

“I have a way for the two of you to decide who is better.” Zuo Mo

raised his hand.

“What method?”

“One of you cultivates the mo physique, the other yao arts, it is naturally you cannot compare against each other.”

“Yes, yes!” The two nodded. They disliked each other but the two were cultivating completely different things so they could not see who was better except by fighting.

“If this is the case, why don’t the two of you cultivate the same thing. Then wouldn’t it be easy to see who is better?” Zuo Mo baited.

“Haha! Boss is Boss, just as good as I am, able to think of such a good idea!” The orange haired yao laughed.

“Hmph! I want you to accept your loss!” A Wen snorted.

Zuo Mo smiled cunningly, “I have a method here that requires cultivating ling power, spiritual consciousness, and the mo physique together. However, let me tell you first off that it is very difficult to cultivate this method.”

“Is it hard, if it isn’t hard, then I cannot show my genius!” the orange haired yao said loudly.

“Hmph, the harder the better, this way, a certain someone will finally accept their defeat!” A Wen snorted coldly.

“You idiot, just wait to lick Genius Orange’s toes!” the orange haired yao raised his head proudly to gaze at the sky.

“I’ll kill you son of a turtle!” A Wen’s eyes burned with fire.

“Oh oh oh! You really have spirit! Motivation! Good good! One copy of the method for each of you.” Zuo Mo took out two jade scrolls with a smile.

Each of them took one.

Zuo Mo patted the orange haired yao’s shoulder. “Big Orange, do not fail the name of a genius!”

“Boss, don’t worry!” The orange haired yao had a proud expression. “There isn’t any method created yet that can pose a problem to Genius Orange!”

Zuo Mo walked in front of A Wen and patted A Wen’s shoulder with a smile. “A Wen, you will have to defend the reputation of Guard Camp!”

“Boss, don’t worry! I’ll kill the son of a turtle!” A Wen gritted out.

“Crude!” The orange haired yao had a disdainful expression.

“Idiot!” A Wen glared back.

“Work hard!” Zuo Mo smiled as he waved at the two and left.

“This Xiao Mo Ge’s battalion is too difficult to enter! I heard that only eight were admitted today!”

“It’s normal. Think about it, haven’t you seen that they don’t lack for people! If it wasn’t that there were too many people coming, why would they form a new battalion?”

“Ah, it really is frustrating. Did you see the factions nearby, all of them are jealous. I heard my brother say that they have sent people around to recruit people as well. Ha, even if you don’t make it, if you can pass the first round of selection, you don’t have to worry about finding your next job. If you can go through two rounds, there will be at least twenty places you can pick with good benefits!”

“Even the best cannot compare to Xiao Mo Ge’s battalion. He is so young and able, to even kill a marshal. His future is not something that these little factions can have. Maybe he can becoming king!”

“King? You are exaggerating”

Discussion of Xiao Mo Ge was everywhere in the hotel. As the hottest topic of discussion, there was new news about him everyday. Also, Xiao Mo Ge was just over twenty and had created such a string of miracles. His influence among the younger generation had reach a stunning level.

This was the age when people were most spirited and ambitious. A living role model motivated them.

No one noticed that, in the corner, the dim and muddy eyes of an old person suddenly flashed when he heard that Xiao Mo Ge had killed a marshal.

The old man was bald, his face full of wrinkles, his clothing in rags and looked very poor.

He finished drinking the poor wine before standing and walking out of the hotel.

He silently walked on the street. When the wind blew by, his figure looked desolate.

“Customer, customer, take a look! The newest mirages about the battle where Xiao Mo Ge killed Marshal Yu. Completely new mirages. Only here. Recorded by those present. You have to watch”

When the shouts of the store on the side entered the old man’s

eyes, he stopped walking.

“How much?”

“Fifteen mobei!”

“Give me one.”

“Alright!”

The old man walked to the corner and played the mirage.

The store was not lying and it was a first hand recording. However, the recorder was not very powerful and the interference from the power released during the fight had been great so the image was not very clear.

The old man watched carefully.

When he saw Zuo Mo and Marshal Yu fight, light flashed across the dull eyes. At this time, the old man was like a vicious weapon with sharp edges and filled with a dangerous presence.

But he quickly noticed his change and recovered his previous state.

But when he saw A Gui, his body shook. Especially when the

purple light in A Gui's eyes flashed from within the mirage, the old man became motionless.

Two lines of hot tears suddenly rolled from his dull eyes.

The mirage in front of him shattered into dots of light without any warning.

“A sword xiu?”

A cold voice came from above the large hall and the commanders below shivered.

“Yes!” The person who spoke was prostrated on the ground and didn't dare to move. His expression was terrified as large beads of sweat dripped from his forehead. The drops made clear sounds as they hit the floor.

The commanders looked with sympathy at him.

“A sword xiu dares to move around on my territory. Ha!” The cold voice was emotionless as though it was narrating a simple thing.

The mo that was on the ground sweated even more. The other commanders also changed expression. Anyone could hear that

Lord was angered!”

“Good, very good!”

The mo who was on the ground had an ashen face. He suddenly kowtowed furiously. Then he raised his blood-covered face and said with a trembling voice, “This subordinate is useless! I have disappointed Lord! This subordinate will pay for the crime with death and is not angry! This subordinate’s child is young. Lord, Brothers, please look after him!”

Finishing, his right hand suddenly hit his own head and his head shattered. His body fell to the floor lifelessly!

The commanders had expression of pain but no one dared to speak. It would be bad to ask for mercy at this time. Lord was brutal but he still cared about those that had been with him for along time.

As expected, the person in the hall was silent for moment before speaking. “Give a spot in the child camp this year to his son. Tell him not to shame the name of his father. Bury him with honors.”

“Yes!” The commanders acknowledged.

“I heard that sword xiu said that he did not fear any fight, yes?”

The commanders’ hearts shook and they looked at each other. They hadn’t thought that even this had reached the ears of their

lord and they immediately knew it wasn't good.

They knew Lord's temper. He always wanted to be the best. Since the words the other had said reached Lord's ears, Lord would not be able to tolerate this. If they continued to be silent, everyone was going to end up bad. They exchanged looks.

One battle general stood out and said, "This subordinate requests to fight!"

"This subordinate requests to fight!"

"This subordinate also requests to fight!"

The mo started to come out and request to fight.

"You are not allowed to use battalions. In my territory, I cannot lose face. And if you have to use battalions to deal with a single sword xiu..."

The cold voice echoed in the large hall. Everyone felt bitter inside. If they knew beforehand how the situation would devolve, then they would have already used battalions to already to kill this sword xiu. Then nothing would have happened.

But since Lord had said this, they couldn't do anything.

"I give you five days. If you have not killed that sword xiu, you

can end your own lives. You do not have to come see me.”

Everyone felt their scalp prickle. The corpse on the ground entered their view. Their expressions changed but they gritted their teeth and acknowledged. “Yes!”

Chapter 662

Leaving the hall, everyone had serious expressions.

One of the more reputable clan leaders said, “Everyone, we have no method of retreat. If we cannot complete this task, the Lord will be angry and it will be a calamity to our clans!”

The other people nodded.

“Lord is right. A sword xiu dares to be so arrogant under our eyes, if we left him alive we would have no face left!”

“You are right!”

The people all agreed.

They quickly discussed for the clans to send out the strongest experts of their clan to kill this sword xiu!

No one thought that this battle that was fated to shake the world would be started by their hands.

————

The youth looked at the person in front of him. He was startled and then shot forward to grab the other’s collar. He lowered his voice and cried, “You dared to come back! You aren’t afraid of

being killed?”

His lowered voice was filled with suppressed excitement.

The newcomer chuckled. “Since I dare to come, I am not afraid.”

If someone saw this, they would definitely scream. This person was Gu Liang Dao!

In Xi Xuan! Gu Liang Dao had sneaked back into Xi Xuan. Who could have thought of this?

The white-robed youth released him and set up a jinzhi to stop people from eavesdropping before he smiled. “I forgot that you are actually a detail-minded person and would leave yourself an escape route. You had conquered those mo jie for so long, how could you not do something? You knew that this day would come.”

Gu Liang Dao’s smile was slightly bitter.

The youth saw this and couldn’t help but sigh inside. He smiled and said, “You are pretty good now, at least you are free and don’t need to be ordered around by those young masters. Come, let’s drink some tea.”

Gu Liang Dao did not speak and drained the cup.

“Come and help me!”

Gu Liang Dao suddenly said in a muffled voice.

The youth holding the teacup suddenly stilled. His expression was unchanged as he said with a smile, “Your situation is not very good right now. While the people under you are loyal, but many of them have families over here. As time progresses, they will change. Also, you only have mo jie under your command and they are not friendly to you xiuzhe.”

Gu Liang Dao laughed and there was no fear on his face. “You are right, so you come help me. No one knows your talents better than me. It would be very boring for you to die of old age on this mountain.”

The youth suddenly smiled and rose. “Let’s go.”

Gu Liang Dao stilled.

“What? You have other things to do?” the youth asked.

“Nothing.” Gu Liang Dao instinctively answered. Then he laughed. “I spent so much time trying to think of many ways to persuade you but I didn’t even use one of them.”

The youth shrugged. “I’m just an accountant in Xi Xuan and the amount of jingshi I get every month is pitiful. I don’t have any family or relationships. At least, with you, I will get to eat meat.”

“Haha!” Gu Liang Dao laughed freely.

Their departure did not attract any attention.

For Xi Xuan, he was just an insignificant person.

Li Xian Er looked around curiously. This was the first time she was in the mo territories. The guards around her were careful and looked warily at the surroundings.

When they saw the group of mo in the distance, they became even more nervous.

A youth flew out of the troop and landed near Li Xian Er.

“Is this Tian Huan’s Miss Xian Er?” The mo youth bowed and greeted without any timidity.

“I am Li Xian Er.” Li Xian Er came forward and bowed. “Sir is?”

The mo youth’s gaze landed on Li Xian Er and immediately showed shock. He said with a smile, “This one is the son of Marshal Di. Miss Xian Er can call me Xi. Xi has come with orders from Marshal Miao to welcome Miss Xian Er.”

“Thanks, Master Xi!” Li Xian Er smiled slightly.

“Please!” Xi turned his body slightly and reached out to usher her.

On the road, the two had a good conversation. Xi was a good conversationalist, and easy to talk to. He had exceptional knowledge and it was undoubtedly a pleasure to chat with him.

Li Xian Er glanced at Xi’s guards out of the corners of her eyes and was intimidated. These mo guards had heavy killing intent around them and clearly were experienced. This Marshal Di really had considerable power.

She had been very shocked when Grandfather had told her to come see the mo. She had gaped when she learned that Tian Huan had deep relationship with the mo. She had never been so naïve to think that xiuzhe should exterminate yaomo but she had never thought that Tian Huan and the mo had such a close relationship.

Later, she learned that it wasn’t just Tian Huan. The other three great sects also had allies among the mo.

Li Xian Er suspected that there would be allies of the sects in the yao world as well.

After the initial shock, Li Xian Er quickly calmed down. It was normal when she thought about it. The four great sects had existed for thousands of years and the mo were not a unified and

monolithic group.

Her mission was to be an envoy to the mo on behalf of Tian Huan.

This was the first time that Tian Huan and Marshal Di would meet for negotiations.

The troop that welcomed them was very large. Someone of Xi's stature acting as the messenger reflected the importance that Marshal Di placed on Lian Xian Er's group. Li Xian Er looked around excitedly at the novel scenery along the way.

Xi's gaze occasionally landed on Li Xian Er's face and a hint of heat flashed across his eyes.

"This is Xiao Mo Ge's information." Ming Yue Ye's eyes were bright like stars.

Ji Li Yu carefully browsed it.

"He was able to enter the Ten Finger Prison and cultivate the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus. He should have the blood of both mo and yao. This person is of unknown background and is very powerful. His yao arts and mo skills are very outstanding; he is also a gold battle general."

Ming Yue Ye's voice was clear and pleasing to hear

“What he cultivates is shen power.”

Ji Li Yu's expression was shocked. “Shen power? Shen power actually exists?”

“He is not the only one, there are two women with him that also cultivate shen power. We suspect that he is a descendant of an ancient tribe and that he has a complete shen power inheritance.”

“Is shen power really that powerful?” Ji Li Yu didn't believe it.

“The three of them together killed a marshal,” Ming Yue Ye said lightly.

Ji Li Yu's expression moved.

Ming Yue Ye's beautiful eyes looked at her and she said, “Your mission is to get close to him.”

“Get close to him? To steal the method?” Ji LI Yu asked.

“If there is a chance.”

Ji Li Yu looked with puzzlement at Ming Yue Ye. It seemed that

the other's main target was not the method.

“I think he has a good future.” Ming Yue Ye looked into the distance.

“You think he has a good future?” Ji Li Yu's voice was puzzled. She did not understand.

“Maybe he will vie for the world!”

Ming Yue Ye's last four words exploded in Ji Li Yu's ear's like lightning. She looked with an ashen expression at Ming Yue Ye.

“For you, and also for the Ji Family, this person is a very good choice.”

Ming Yue Ye looked at her with a smile.

Ji LI Yu's face was pale and her hands and feet felt cold.

“You will thank me.”

Ming Yue Ye went close to Ji Li Yu and and whispered..

Zuo Mo and the others had encountered trouble.

There were small groups of scouts that appeared occasionally. It was clear that this was not a sign of friendliness.

Very quickly, the mo that had come to join Zuo Mo disappeared. The factions along the way who had been polite suddenly became hard to talk to. What made it even more difficult were the battalions that came to harass them.

These little battalions were not a threat but they had numbers on their side. They seriously delayed Zuo Mo's travelling speed.

"Someone is targeting us!" Bie Han said coldly.

Gongsun Cha agreed with Bie Han. "Yes, someone is manipulating the situation in secret, and they aren't average people."

An average person would not be able to command so many little factions. Xiao Mo Ge's reputation was at its highest right now, meaning the reputation of this person that could give these little factions the courage to attack them was probably even more frightening.

"Are there any clues?" Zuo Mo asked.

"I caught many scouts but these people don't know," Gongsun Cha shook his head as he said.

“Why is the other targeting us?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Don’t know.” Gongsun Cha shook his head.

“It seems that we need to start with a few factions.” Zuo Mo’s expression became icy.

The harassment seemed to be worsening. These little battalions were as bothersome as flies. If they allowed this to continue, they would have a hard time moving forward.

It was very easy to learn the origins of these scouts.

In the night, Bie Han lead Sin Battalion to destroy three local factions.

But unexpectedly, these little factions had seemed to know that there would be a reprisal. The clansmen had moved away and what was left was almost empty ground.

Zuo Mo smelled a conspiracy.

————

It was the deep of the night. Jiang Zhe’s thoughts wandered as he stared at the jie map.

He had maintained this position for a whole day.

“Daren, report. Xiao Mo Ge has encountered harassment from many groups.”

Jiang Zhe looked up. He exhaled. He understood that the sect had acted. The sect's power was really unfathomable!

In the message he sent the sect, he stated that he hoped that the sect could buy some time for him.

He needed more time to set up.

Jiang Zhe felt much more relaxed. This battle had been a huge pressure on him. He had fought against Bie Han since childhood and the two were very familiar with each other. He knew how terrifying Bie Han was. They had sparred in the sect but he had never thought there would be a day that he and Bie Han would meet on the battlefield.

There was no retreat from this battle!

He had not thought of escaping but his personality was cautious and he was even more careful against Bie Han. This was a battle that they could not lose.

No matter what, they could not lose!

Facing such astounding pressure, he was still composed. If there was enough time to prepare, he had the confidence to defeat Bie Han!

More time, meant he would be able to make more preparations.

Jiang Zhe stared at the jie map.

After fighting this battle, he would go to Cloud Sea Jie to get revenge for Feng Shijie.

Jiang Zhe said to himself.

Chapter 663

Wei Sheng opened his eyes. His mind had recovered to its best state and he had a feeling that he was at the cusp of a breakthrough.

His clothing was ragged and shredded as though he was a beggar. However, looking at him no one would feel that Wei Sheng was a beggar. He stood with his back straight, head held high, and his presence was like a sharp and oppressive such that no one could look at directly at him.

He stood up, picked up the black sword and walked barefoot out of the valley.

A group of mo had gathered outside the mountain valley. When they saw him, they shifted. Everyone had complicated stares full of terror, hate, admiration, and other various emotions. But no one was disdainful.

This was an enemy that could not be dismissed.

“Who’s next?”

Wei Sheng’s gaze was determined.

The mo shifted again. This was the fourth day. In these four days, over thirty people had died under the sword of this sword xiu. Up until now, no one had even been able to exchange three

blows. The great majority of people hadn't been able to survive the first strike before dying.

He really was terrifying!

So xiuzhe also had people that were like mo gods!

In this moment, everyone's mind stopped and a short silence appeared.

But thinking about the order they had received from their superiors, their hearts shook again.

If they could not kill him, they were all going to die!

Red rose up in these people's eyes. They were like wild beasts forced to the precipice. Someone howled, "Everyone, let's go together!"

Everyone's eyes lit up. Daren had only said they could not use battalions, but not that they couldn't fight together!

Looking at their numbers and the lonely Wei Sheng, their morale rose! With so many people attacking one person, no matter how powerful the sword xiu was, he could not kill all of them.

"Kill!"

They cheered as they charged at Wei Sheng.

Looking at the noisy mo, Wei Sheng's sword-like gaze did not shake at all. His face seemed to be carved from granite, and completely emotionless. He tightened his grip on the black sword and moved forward!

In his heart, there was only sword essence!

The black sword in his hand seemed to respond to the sword essence in his chest and shook lightly.

It was hungry and wanted to drink fresh blood!

“It probably is a mo marshal behind this,” Pu Yao said with a calm expression. He had spent a long time in the mo territories with the Corps Command in the past and was very familiar with the mo.

“Yes.” Wei also nodded.

When Pu Yao and Wei agreed on something, it meant that their conclusion was pretty reliable.

But, mo marshal!

Zuo Mo felt pressure at this answer. Any mo marshal was the ruler of an entire region. They might have defeated Marshal Yu but that didn't mean marshal's were easy to deal with. If Marshal Yu's battalions hadn't been busy and unable to come to help, if Marshal Yu had actually fought them seriously, Zuo Mo wouldn't have had a chance at all.

The power that a mo marshal possess was really too great!

Enormous battalions, vast lands, countless experts.

Each mo marshal represented a titan. The power possessed by those top marshals rivaled the four great sects.

If everything here was being manipulated by a mo marshal, then it really was great trouble!

Zuo Mo knew that Pu Yao and Wei's guess was probably correct.

With his present reputation, unless there was a mo marshal supporting them, these little factions would not dare to fight against him.

When he had clues, it was easier to investigate.

Zuo Mo and the other quickly found out which mo marshal was acting against them.

Marshal Hao, the fifth strongest mo marshal in the Hundred Savage Realm. The mo jie that Zuo Mo's group were in now was very close to the area ruled by Marshal Hao.

Marshal Hao was the most likely suspect!

After investigating, Zuo Mo had a clear understanding of Marshal Hao.

Compared to Marshal Yu, Marshal Hao could be said to be an old marshal. The number of jie he ruled was three times larger than that of Marshal Yu! He had become a marshal hundreds of years before Marshal Yu.

Just the little bit of information that they found was enough for Zuo Mo to end all thoughts of fighting the other.

However, what was puzzling was that if Marshal Hao really had enmity towards them, then they had the power to completely exterminate them. Marshal Hao had more than one hundred battalions under his command. To say of nothing else, just the sheer number would be enough to drown them.

But why did the other only send little battalions to harass them and slow down their speed.

Drag down their speed

What goal did the other have?

Zuo Mo suddenly jumped up.

Was there something waiting up ahead for them?

“Father!” a middle-aged man said respectfully. “According to your orders, Xiao Mo Ge’s speed has slowed down.”

“Not bad.” Marshal Hao had a satisfied expression. His figure was slightly short and stock and he always had a smile on his face. He looked like a normal shopkeeper. He saw the puzzlement on his son’s face and said with a smile, “You are puzzled?”

“Yes!” The middle-aged person nodded. “If we really want to slow them, we only need to invite Xiao Mo Ge’s group to be guests here. With Father’s reputation, they definitely would not refuse. That way, we won’t create bad relations with them, and we can still realize our goal. Wouldn’t that be better?”

“It is very good you can use your head.” Marshal Hao looked at his son and said, “However, you need to look further. What do you feel is a greater danger to us, Xiao Mo Ge or Xuan Kong Temple?”

“Xuan Kong Temple!” The middle-aged man said after thinking. “While they are our allies in secret, they also have the power to vie for the world and is the greater threat to us.”

“Right.” Marshal Hao smiled coolly. “While Xuan Kong Temple appears to have a good relationship with us now, there will be fighting in the future. Xiao Mo Ge has potential but he has a weak foundation. It will not be easy for him to establish himself.”

The middle-aged person was thoughtful.

Marshal Hao then said, “However, while Xiao Mo Ge doesn’t have strong support, he still has a strong group of subordinates. In this battle between Xiao Mo Ge and Xuan Kong Temple, it will be Xuan Kong Temple’s victory. However, Xiao Mo Ge has a chance to seriously injure Xuan Kong Temple. The best result for us is that Xiao Mo Ge will greatly injure Xuan Kong Temple before dying.”

The middle-aged person had an expression of realization. “So Father is using this method to fulfill Xuan Kong Temple’s request and also warn Xiao Mo Ge.”

“Haha, do not underestimate Xiao Mo Ge. Even I feel jealous of the people he has. Bie Han is a top battle general that can rival Jiang Zhe. They have the ability to make trouble for Xuan Kong Temple!” Marshal Hao smiled darkly. “If Xuan Kong Temple loses too much in this battle, then Xuan Kong Temple’s reliance on us will grow and our bargaining position improves!”

“What if Xuan Kong Temple loses?” The middle-aged man instinctively asked. But when the words left his mouth, he felt what he said was a waste of words.

How could Xuan Kong Temple lose? That wasn’t possible!

How could Xuan Kong Temple that was even stronger than themselves not be able to take down a Xiao Mo Ge's small forces? That wasn't possible.

Marshal Hao stilled upon hearing this. His expression became strange. He was silent as though he was deep in thought.

The middle-aged person regretted saying his words of garbage but suddenly heard Marshal Hao slowly speak, "If Xuan Kong Temple loses, then it will not be good for them."

The middle-aged man shook his head. "Xuan Kong Temple will not lose. Even if they do, it will not be a heavy blow to them."

"You do not understand." Marshal Hao shook his head with a serious expression. "They must win this battle and they must do it in a beautiful manner! If they truly lose, then Xuan Kong Temple will be in danger. They will have been defeated by their own traitor. The reputation and trust of their top battle general Jiang Zhe will be damaged. Xuan Kong Temple's secret humiliation will become a weakness exposed to the world. At that time, no matter how large Xuan Kong Temple is, it is just a pile of meat to lure in more wolves."

The middle-aged person gaped.

Tang Fei's mind was burdened. She had paid attention to the harassment they had recently faced and she had a strong feeling of danger. But on the surface, she maintained her calm and was even more strict in supervising Tangzi Battalion's cultivation.

The individual skill level of the members of Tangzi Battalion was outstanding and even better than the city guard she had previously led.

But their skills in tactics were terrible. It would take a long time before they could reach a satisfactory level. However, that required time and there were no shortcuts.

Without the tactics binding them together, this was just a group of rabble.

She hoped to shorten the time needed. If a battle really occurred, Tangzi Battalion that were not well trained in their tactics would become a target the enemy would focus on.

“Tang Daren, Daren is asking for you to come.”

Tang Fei's heart jumped. She knew that it was a meeting about the enemy harassment that had been occurring. She unhesitatingly went with the colonel to Zuo Mo's tent.

When Tang Fei arrived, almost all the core members in Zuo Mo's service were present.

Zuo Mo's expression was grave. He did not waste words and narrated the results of the investigation as well as his own speculations.

Everyone's expressions became serious.

Gongsun Cha was the first to speak. "If it really is Marshal Hao, then they do not have good intentions to harass us like this. They definitely want us to fight and weaken each other. Their relationship to the enemy up ahead is strange."

"Yes." Bie Han's tone was murderous and the temperature around him dropped.

Zuo Mo nodded but what he asked was another question. "More importantly, who is up ahead?"

This was the most crucial puzzle piece. If they didn't even know who the enemy was, then they didn't have any chance of victory.

Gongsun Cha stared at the jie map and said, "We are going to Nether Spring Jie. There are many that know this, and the enemy definitely knows. That means that they will only chose to attack us at a location that we have to pass through!"

Gongsun Cha's words attracted everyone's attention. Their gazes all moved to the jie map.

"On the path that we must pass, having had past interactions

with us, knowing our strength, and still daring to fight us”

Everyone’s gazes moved along the paths on the jie map following Gongsun Cha’s words.

Suddenly, everyone’s gazes stopped on one place.

Bie Han’s breathing suddenly became heavy.

Chapter 664 – Danger

“It seems that Xuan Kong Temple is determined to exterminate Xiao Mo Ge . However, they really think highly of Xiao Mo Ge!” Xue Dong said with a laugh.

Xue Dong had thick brows and large eyes. His appearance was fine and he had a bloodthirsty presence from battling for long periods of time. He had come to find Lin Qian immediately after he returned from the front lines.

While Lin Qian was the shixiong, Xue Dong was older. The two had a close relationship.

Withdrawing his consciousness from the jade scroll, Lin Qian was slightly distracted. In order to guarantee their victory this time, Xuan Kong Temple had sent out two of their fanxu xiuzhe to kill Xiao Mo Ge. Xuan Kong Temple’s action was well concealed but Kun Lun’s spy was placed high enough in their ranks that they were able to pass this on.

“What?” Xue Dong sensitively detected Lin Qian’s state.

Lin Qian came back and said with a smile, “This Xiao Mo Ge is really a extraordinary person. It is a pity he will die.”

“Oh.” Xue Dong was slightly shocked. “I’m curious to know more about this person that you think so highly of.”

“I fought against him when I went to the mo territories this time. He seems slightly unfathomable.” Lin Qian lightly described.

Xue Dong changed expression. He knew how strong Lin Qian was. When Lin Qian said something like this, it meant that their battle had ended in a stalemate.

Lin Qian’s brow creased. “This person’s origins are very strange. He seems to have both yao and mo blood. Both his yao arts and mo skills are strong and he also cultivates shen power.”

“Shen power?” Xue Dong’s eyes widened and his face was shocked.

“Yes, I only comprehended shen power because I fought against him this time.” Lin Qian thought of something and frown again. “He most likely has a complete inheritance. It would not be good if that lands in the hands of Xuan Kong Temple!”

Kun Lun wasn’t the only one that was studying shen power. Any sect that had history had ambitions about this. But in terms of who spent the most effort, it was undoubtedly the four great sects.

Xue Dong’s eyes narrowed. “Yes! We cannot have the shen power inheritance land in Xuan Kong Temple’s hand. Why don’t we send a few people as well?”

“That will not be appropriate!” Lin Qian shook his head and his expression was grave. “Xuan Kong Temple has a legitimate reason

to fight. No one can nitpick about their excuse of executing Bie Han. If we send someone, then we will be publicly dissolving our relationship with Xuan Kong Temple.”

Xue Dong also frowned. Lin Qian was right. They could not directly send people for this matter.

“We can still notify Xiao Mo Ge and have him hide.” Lin Qian felt the matter was slightly troublesome. He had never thought that Xuan Kong Temple would send two fanxu xiuzhe for Xiao Mo Ge.

Fanxu experts were strategic resources. If it was not a matter of life and death to the sect, the sect would not use them.

It seemed that Xuan Kong Temple also understood the importance of this battle for them.

“It is really troublesome this time.” Zuo Mo’s expression was very ugly. “Xuan Kong Temple really has a high impression of ge. Tsk tsk, fanxu, and two of them!”

The other commanders had terrible expressions.

Zuo Mo received a letter today that said Xuan Kong Temple had sent out two fanxu experts to assassinate him. Xuan Kong Temple clearly was wary of Zuo Mo after he killed Marshal Yu so they were even willing to use such dishonorable tactics to completely

eliminate this threat.

While no one knew who the sender was but everyone understood that this letter was probably true.

Two fanxu. This completely exposed the magnitude of Xuan Kong Temple's great power. To kill a person by sending two fanxu, only the four greats would have the resources to do this.

This was power.

Even with someone notifying him, Zuo Mo and the others had no solutions.

"How about we return to Cloud Sea Jie." Gongsun Cha looked at Zuo Mo with worry in his eyes. Two fanxu would have the ability to cut through their battalion. If they were working with battalions, their power would be even greater.

Zuo Mo grimaced. "Not enough time! I'm afraid that these two fanxu old thieving baldies are not far from us."

Bie Han was silent. He hadn't thought that the sect would actually send two fanxu to kill Zuo Mo. He had been with the sect for many years and knew that experts on fanxu level were the ultimate power for the sect.

Had Xuan Kong Temple felt that they were a threat to the existence of the temple?

He felt slightly conflicted. He desired to fight against Xuan Kong Temple but he knew that the two fanxu were a big trouble.

Zuo Mo's gaze suddenly landed on Bie Han. "How many fanxu does Xuan Kong Temple have?"

Bie Han stilled but quickly reacted. "Five, one left to travel thirty years ago and has not returned. One is still in death seclusion. One was on a mission by the sect leader ten years ago and has not return. There are only these two left."

Zuo Mo's expression eased and he said, "In other words, they can only send these two fanxu."

Thinking, Zuo Mo asked, "If I flee, will these two fanxu meet up with Jiang Zhe?"

Bie Han shook his head. "No."

Zuo Mo was very surprised at the certainty in Bie Han's answer. "Why? If they meet up with Jiang Zhe, wouldn't their chance of victory increase?"

"Fanxu can also die," Bie Han said coolly.

Zuo Mo immediately understood. Yes, while a fanxu was powerful, they could still die. If a powerful battalion did not care

about losses, they might be able to kill a fanxu xiuzhe. Xuan Kong Temple did not lack battalions, and would not risk their fanxu experts on the battlefield.

So the mission this time was an assassination.

Zuo Mo also understood why Xuan Kong Temple would send two fanxu. He had killed Marshal Yu. In the eyes of Xuan Kong Temple, he was someone that could threaten fanxu.

Xuan Kong temple could not afford to lose any fanxu.

Zuo Mo's eyes lit up. He suddenly found that there might be a chance.

Xuan Kong Temple would not know that someone would have warned him about their assassination mission.

After thinking for a long time, Zuo Mo raised his head and confidence came back to his face. "I have an idea."

Under the ground, Wei Sheng gripped the hilt of the black sword and stopped his breathing. He quickly became like a piece of rock and all signs of life faded from him.

"Damn it, we lost him again!" one person swore.

“Are we going to keep chasing?” another asked weakly with a thread of fear in his voice.

“Of course, if we don’t, we will all die!”

“But if we catch up to him, we will also die”

The group became silent.

“No, if this continues, we will all die!”

“Then what do we do?”

“Wait!”

“Wait?”

“Wait for Lord to send out a kill warrant!”

Just as he finished speaking, one person said joyfully, “Kill warrant, the Lord sent out a kill warrant!”

“This time, he’s done for!” The person speaking sighed in relief.

“Yes, he’s over.” The other people also sighed.

When the footsteps vanished, Wei Sheng emerged out of the soil and a hint of confusion flashed through his eyes.

A kill warrant?

He shook his head and didn't think about it. He found a hidden cave, set up some alarm jinzhi and entered meditation.

Ten continuous days of battle had exhausted his ling power and mind, both were on the verge of collapse. If it wasn't that his mentality was as strong as steel, he would have fallen a long time ago.

On the second day, he opened his eyes, and a hint of joy flashed across them.

He had a breakthrough!

After recuperating a few more days in the cave and his energies recovered to peak condition, he stood up. Taking out the jie map jade scroll, he found his bearing and then flew in a direction.

He didn't know what the kill warrant was. He didn't know that that kill warrant was causing a storm in the Hundred Savage Realm.

“What? They suddenly sped up?” Marshal Hao was slightly surprised. “They didn’t change their destination?”

“No,” the middle-aged man said. “It seems that they have already detected it.

Marshal Hao did not speak. He was deep in thought. A moment later, he raised his head. “It seems that Xiao Mo Ge already knows who their enemy is. Oh, have our people stop the harassment.”

“Stop the harassment?” The middle-aged person was surprised. “Isn’t that just...?”

“It’s nothing.” Marshal Hao sneered. “We aren’t Xuan Kong Temple’s subordinates, we don’t need to give them too much face. Xuan Kong Temple probably won’t have an easy time in this fight.”

The middle-aged man didn’t understand why Father would say such a thing.

“Xiao Mo Ge is really daring!” A hint of admiration flashed through Marshal Hao’s eyes.

“Why this direction?” Zuo Mo asked in confusion to Pu Yao and

Wei.

He, Ceng Lian'er, and A Gui, were furiously flying forward. In order to avoid the scouts along the way, they did not ride steeds but flew on their own.

Zuo Mo had designed an extremely daring plan.

He decided to lure the two old fanxu thieving baldies away in a huge circle. Just like how Xuan Kong Temple were not willing to put their fanxu in danger, Zuo Mo was not willing to have these two thieving baldies enter the battlefield and affect their chances of victory.

Zuo Mo was full of confidence in Bie Han and Gongsun Cha. As long as these two old thieving baldies did not attend the battle, Zuo Mo believed they would win.

If Gongsun Cha and Bie Han defeated Jiang Zhe, it would be enough to cause Xuan Kong Temple to descend into chaos.

If he could delay until that time, the two old thieving baldies would no longer have the time to chase him. They would have to go back to steady the sect and his predicament would be resolved.

The crux of this strategy was a race of time.

On his end, the longer that he could drag this out, the more beneficial it would be. The other side with Gongsun Cha and Bie

Han, the faster they defeated Jiang Zhe, the safer he would be.

If he had to face the two old fanxu thieving baldies head on, Zuo Mo definitely did not have a chance.

But if he was playing hide-and-seek, Zuo Mo did not fear it. With Pu Yao and Wei present, these two cunning people, Zuo Mo thought that the two old thieving baldies wouldn't stand a chance.

In order to lure the two old thieving baldies to take the bait, Zuo Mo had deliberately left behind a trace of shen power. Last time, the four great sects with Lin Qian as the leader had made such a big ruckus for the Great Peace Mo Stele. Zuo Mo knew that these people had an obsession with shen power.

He hadn't thought that having just stepped out of the camp, Pu Yao and Wei had Zuo Mo flying in this direction.

Zuo Mo muttered inside, there was a conspiracy!

Chapter 665 – Pu Yao And Wei's Conspiracy

For fanxu xiuzhe, sneaking into the guarded camp was slightly troublesome, but if the other was not on guard, the chance of success was very high.

The other had not been on guard.

The two entered the camp without any resistance.

A moment later, Dai Tao's expression became strange. "He's not here."

Ji Zheng did not show any expression.

Dai Tao's attire was like that of an average xiu. People would find it hard to deduce what kind of xiuzhe he was based on his attire. Ji Zheng was the exact opposite. Bald head, prayer beads, monk robes, he looked like a stereotypical dhynana xiu at first glance. The only thing that would cause people to take notice was that granite and icy face. It didn't have the harmonious air of dhyana xiu. Instead it was cold and murderous, inspiring fear in the onlooker.

Dai Tao was not from Xuan Kong Temple. He was a roaming xiu. In order to break through to fanxu, he had joined Xuan Kong Temple. Xuan Kong Temple's enormous resources and the great and famed collection of records had been of great help to him. He had successfully entered fanxu, and became one of the elders of Xuan Kong Temple.

Ji Zheng was a true disciple of Xuan Kong Temple. His parents had been disciples of Xuan Kong Temple. He had grown up from birth in the temple. Outstandingly talented, he had been one of the disciples that the sect had focused their resources in raising. He himself was a cultivation fanatic and didn't have any interest in other matters. His mind was pure, and his cultivation path could be said to have been a smooth one without facing any major obstacles.

Ji Zheng suddenly turned his head and walked into a corner.

When he stepped onto the grass, that emotionless face changed for the first time. His eyes lit up. "Shen power!"

"Shen power?" Dai Tao paused. When he walked to this place, his expression also changed to shock. "Such pure shen power! Does this boy have a complete shen power inheritance?"

"We chase him!" Ji Zheng said decisively.

Dai Tao hesitated. If they took the chance to kill Bie Han, it would be a destructive blow against the enemy. However, he quickly suppressed this thought. In comparison, Xiao Mo Ge's shen power inheritance was more attractive to him.

Shen power inheritance!

His mind heated slightly. If he was able to obtain the shen power

inheritance, maybe he could enter dasheng level!

Dasheng!

The highest level of cultivation and representing the strongest power in the world.

How many years had it been since a dasheng expert appeared!

Dai Tao was actually satisfied with having reached fanxu. However, he understood that without Xuan Kong Temple, he would not have been able to do it. Consequently, he hadn't had any thoughts about the distant dasheng stage. But this shen power inheritance that suddenly appeared now gave him a thread of hope.

Xuan Kong Temple had studied shen power for a long time. Dai Tao was one of the most powerful in the temple and had participated in the process. While Xuan Kong Temple had not produced any results up until now, shen power had been found to be a higher power than ling power.

For normal xiuzhe, this was nothing. The cultivation of ling power itself was already an endeavor vast as the ocean and endless as the sky.

But for xiuzhe like them that had almost reached the top level of the xiuzhe system, it was tempting!

The two quickly disappeared.

Multiple breaths later, a figure slowly formed from empty space near where the two had been. It was Luo Li.

Two hours later.

Xiao Mo Ge's battalions started to mobilize.

Full speed ahead!

“Now tell me why we are going in this direction!” Zuo Mo glowered at Pu Yao and Wei. “Ah-huh, ge isn't so easy to fool! You two lowly cunning, shady, and shameless people. Do not think you can do such unspeakable things behind my back!”

Zuo Mo's speech was both urgent and fast.

However, the two in front of him clearly would not be defeated by words of this degree.

“It is a good thing.” Wei smiled harmlessly.

“It is not so easy to avoid fanxu!”

Threat! Pu Yao was definitely threatening him!

However, the thick-skinned and black-hearted Xiao Mo Ge was immune to threats like this. He sneered. “Everyone’s on the same boat, what’s the use in scaring me? You guys can escape if I don’t?”

“This time, it really is a good thing.” Wei still had a friendly smile.

Zuo Mo glanced at Pu Yao. He wondered inside, this guy hadn’t argued with him today, it wasn’t normal!

“What?” Zuo Mo responded.

“Actually, in the past, we did leave behind some things.” Wei hesitated but still spoke.

Zuo Mo stilled but then his eyes flashed like jingshi. “Whoa whoa whoa! Jingshi? Oh, mobei? Or the legendary thousand year treasure hoard? You were so strong in the past, the riches you gathered ... oh oh oh ! Rich rich! Haha ...”

In the sea of consciousness, Zuo Mo danced excitedly.

“Riches ...” Wei’s expression was dazed.

“I knew he would be like this,” Pu Yao said expressionlessly.

After being calm for a moment, Pu Yao's tendons visibly bulged up. His forced expression of calm became twisted. There seemed to be an angry fire burning in his bloody pupil that increased. His teeth ground like millstones. He was clearly angry to his limit.

"It isn't riches?" Zuo Mo stopped. His face was full of disappointment as he muttered, "Not riches, that really disappoints me! Ah, you two were famous people in the past, to be poor to this point, tsk tsk"

"Shut up!" Pu Yao's anger that he had been suppressing immediately erupted as he shouted, "You idiot! Dumbass! You stupid idiot that only knows to laze about, eating and waiting to die! Such humiliation! I actually have a student like you! This is such a great humiliation! What do you understand? Ah! The world! We were fighting for the world, dominating in all directions! Our desires, wishes, how can you who only knows money money money understand"

The furious Pu Yao ignited the flames in Zuo Mo's sea of consciousness. The dark red fires filled the sky and Pu Yao was like a furious god.

Zuo Mo's face was puzzled. He looked at Pu Yao in the sky that was pointing down and swearing at him. He murmured unconsciously, "What is this"

The light words caused the flames to completely still and Pu Yao's shouts to be choked off.

Pu Yao was like a deflated ball that flew down without a sound. The fires that burned disappeared.

Pu Yao and Wei abandoned the puzzled Zuo Mo and went to whisper to each other.

Wei said calmly, “I just knew that this occasion would be like the rest”

Pu Yao’s anger roiled. “A waste of all this. To have encountered such a master without any ambition. They are really pitiful, the most pitiful in history”

Wei hit the target with one sentence. “Ambition? It isn’t the first time that he was just eating and waiting for death.”

Pu Yao was discontent. “All the things that we had done, so much preparation to leave for”

Wei said calmly, “We do not have any other choices.”

Pu Yao gritted. “The great I’m going to die of anger! No! Hmph, how can he benefit without paying a price?”

Wei looked at Pu Yao who was about to go off again and said calmly, “He probably doesn’t want this benefit.”

Pu Yao seemed to think of something and snickered. “Ha, that

isn't up to him."

Wei heard something. "What do you plan on doing?"

Pu Yao didn't answer and asked in response, "What kind of person do you think he is?"

Wei did not hesitate. "Lazy, eats and waits for death, dislikes work, greedy, thick-skinned, and black-hearted."

Pu Yao thought as he asked, "When will he ever actually put effort into doing something?"

Wei said directly, "When there is no other choice and he has to do it."

"Oh, in other words, if we want him to do something, this matter has to leave him no avenue of retreat, no choice left and he has to do it." Pu Yao concluded.

"You mean"

Pu Yao's bloody pupil flashed with an unusual light. "Hee hee... .."

Wei nodded. "Understood."

“How about it?” Pu Yao glanced at Wei.

“Do it.” Wei was brisk.

“Are you now unfamiliar with what has to be done?”

“I have to familiarize myself.”

“It really makes one’s blood boil!”

“En.”

Suddenly, Zuo Mo had a bad feeling.

Then he saw Pu Yao and Wei who had been whispering off to the side turn to look at him and grin darkly.

Zuo Mo shuddered.

Were those two planning something else?

Zuo Mo thought. The two had already turned around and did not seem to intent to pay any more attention to him. Zuo Mo suppressed the impulse to ask and left his sea of consciousness.

He would not get any answers. It would be safer to stay away from these two.

Of course, most importantly, it wasn't riches!

After hearing that it wasn't riches, Zuo Mo immediately lost interest in what Pu Yao was talking out. He was very wealthy now: Anti Dragon Claw, Three Thousand Threads of Worry, these two were top treasures. He had also been enriched after killing Marshal Yu's group.

The Black-Hearted Treasure Coins, the Blue Carp Sword, all of them were powerful mo weapons.

There were numerous materials, dozens of mo skills that were all first-tier.

So Zuo Mo didn't have any interest in the property that Pu Yao and Wei spoke of. Also, he knew that the things these two offered were not easy to take.

Right now, he only wanted to go to Nether Springs Jie, investigate his origins, and settle his scores. After doing that, he would manage his own territories, make jingshi and live a carefree existence.

Since he now had an enormous territory that was enough for people to have pretty good days, he had not failed them, Zuo Mo thought happily.

Zuo Mo quickly shrugged off the scenes of the beautiful future

and recovered his calmness.

The fight right now was directly related to their future. If they won, they would jump into the position as one of the strongest battalions in the world. No one would easily start a fight with them. They would have an open road and they would push Xuan Kong Temple down into a place where they would not be able to get back up from.

But if they lost

No, they definitely could not lose!

For Xuan Kong Temple, this was a battle they could not lose. For Zuo Mo's group, this was also a battle they could not lose!

This was a battle that they could not retreat from nor avoid!

Zuo Mo became alert and started to ponder if his plans had any weaknesses.

At this time, Zuo Mo was focusing all his effort and gave off endless spirit!

His belly full of black water was not willing to stay hidden.

He had to make some trouble for Xuan Kong Temple!

Chapter 666 – The World Stunned

“Really, what xiuzhe dares to be so arrogant? They have come to our mo territories to show off?”

“It is a sword xiu, a vicious one that has killed more than a thousand people?!”

“More than a thousand? They are just boasting, do you think that killing mo is like killing chickens?”

“You don’t understand. For an expert, it is easier to kill people than to kill chickens!”

“Che, even the strongest expert is nothing in front of a battalion.”

“True, but think about it. A sword xiu has come to our territories, if we have to mobilize a battalion to deal with just one sword xiu, tell me, isn’t it embarrassing?”

“Ah, a little bit. What about our mo experts? Have they all died? How can they let the xiuzhe show off on our land?”

“He won’t be able to do it for much longer. The kill order has been sent down. It is really a tragedy about that jie master. He had surrounded the other, yet the other had managed to flee, especially after his subordinates were mostly killed. This guy is a joke now!”

“Haha! He surrounded the other yet let the other run away? This bad? It really is embarrassing! Ha! That sword xiu better not come here, otherwise”

The mo that spoke suddenly stopped. He was looking straight ahead and stood motionless.

“What?” His partner was slightly puzzled and instinctively looked in that direction was well. He was immediately stunned.

A figure holding a sword slowly approached in the horizon.

Wei Sheng looked at the city in front of him. He gripped the black sword in his hand. There was no fear on his face. He ignored the gazes filled with hatred and enmity as he walked straight towards the city gates.

“Did you hear? That sword xiu has come here! He wants to challenge the experts of this jie in search of a defeat! Tsk tsk, look how dominant his words are, in search of a defeat!”

“Is this guy crazy!”

“Crazy? He’s very smart. He made a big fuss and will only fight with you in the open. What, you don’t dare to accept this? He has offended everyone with this action but who can swallow the anger if someone challenged them directly? If they cannot defeat this guy

in honest open combat, they won't have any face. It would be extremely shameful for anyone to do something from the shadows now. However, this sword xiu won't be able to escape now. He can only keep winning. If he loses, he will die! His courage to force such a situation is admirable!"

"Tsk tsk, this is going to attract attention. I hadn't thought that even xiuzhe would have heroes like this!"

The news that a sword xiu was challenging the mo experts spread like wildfire.

Those who heard it for the first time almost didn't dare to believe the years. The history of hatred between xiuzhe and mo could not be narrated in ten whole days. Now a sword xiu had run into the mo territories and publicly challenged mo experts.

It wasn't that xiuzhe never sneaked into the mo territories but that every person who did so would disguise themselves as mo and be careful in fear they would be discovered.

Something like a person publicly entering the mo territories along and challenging all experts had never happened before.

Mad, arrogant, doesn't have a measure of himself

All kinds of judgments, the most evil curses, they came from the mouths of people. Everyone was waiting to mock him and see how the mo experts would tear this horrid sword xiu into pieces!

In the first match, the sword xiu won!

The mo watching were slightly shocked.

In the second match, the sword xiu won!

The mo almost didn't believe their eyes.

In The third match. The sword xiu won!

The mo started to quiet.

Ten matches with no defeats. Wei Sheng stood on the stage and gazing down proudly as he gripped his sword. The mo that were below the stage had ashen faces. It was completely silent. No mo had the bravery to get onto the stage.

Wei Sheng became famous!

On the second day, the result of this battle spread into every corner of the Hundred Savage Realm as though it had wings.

Hundred Savage Realm was in a furor.

In the history of the mo, they had never appeared so disheveled.

Facing the gazes of enmity in the surroundings, Wei Sheng's sword heart was unaffected. He knew that this was the start. The further he went, the stronger the experts would be.

However, he had finally escaped the endless pursuit of enemies. He had thought for a long time before deciding on his plan of action, publicly exposing himself in such an attention-catching manner. Wei Sheng was not cunning but he was not a stupid person. He knew that his arrogant actions would infuriate the mo but this was also his goal.

When all gazes of the Hundred Savage Realm gathered on him, those methods in the dark could not be used. The mo would not accept that. There was only one way that would not cause them to lose face, defeating him opening and fairly.

The more influence this matter had, the safer he was. But at the same time, his opponents would become stronger and he would be in more danger.

However, he did not fear it at all. In his view, the stronger the opponent, the more it could refine his sword essence.

He walked step by step towards Nether Springs Jie, and refined his sword essence.

No matter how far he walked, it was like he always had his back against a precipice.

A situation with no hope!

When Wei Sheng used this kind of decisiveness to challenge all of the mo territories!

How could the world not be stunned?

Zuo Mo, A Gui, and Ceng Lian'er were carefully hiding.

Pu Yao really was skilled in committing devious acts. He had given over several methods to hide and conceal their tracks. Along the way, he had occasionally pointed out to Zuo Mo what they needed to pay attention to. Pu Yao's great experience was completely shown. Zuo Mo suspected that this guy had frequently done things that could not be seen in the light of day.

Zuo Mo and the others constantly changed directions and would purposefully leave behind some marks to confuse their pursuers along the way.

Dai Tao and Ji Zheng were to be pitied for the hardship they encountered. The two had high cultivation but they were not skilled in this field. Dai Tao was a roaming xiu to start but his luck had been good and he had entered an outer sect of Xuan Kong Temple very early on. He usually taught sect disciples. Ji Zheng's experience in this area was almost zero. The number of times he had stepped outside of the gates of Xuan Kong Temple could be

counted on the fingers. His experience with the world was almost nothing.

After Zuo Mo had led them in circles for three days, the two finally understood that cultivation strength could not solve all problems.

The two immediately sent a message back to the sect but the two had not discovered that Zuo Mo knew of their presence. Zuo Mo's actions seemed very suspect but could also mean that he had some secret aim. If there wasn't a secret goal, why would Zuo Mo leave the battalion at this time.

The news that the two of them had come was a well kept secret. Not many knew. In their minds, there was no possibility of this matter having leaked.

When Xuan Kong Temple received the information, they quickly acted.

A middle-aged person that was short and of a lowly appearance stood respectfully in front of the two and didn't dare to even breathe. Behind the middle-aged person were five young disciples. However, these young disciple were slightly excited. These two in front of them were of ancestor level in Xuan Kong Temple. If they served the two well, the elder was happy and might bestow them something that would be enough for them to live off for their entire life.

This kind of chance was something that could not be found by

chance!

“What are you called? Are you skilled in tracking?” Dai Tao asked.

“This one is called Hui Bao, and knows some tracking spells.” The middle-aged man answered nervously.

Dai Tao saw Hui Bao’s nervousness and nodded. “Do you know the mission this time?”

“This one does not know, the sect only said for this one to attend to the instructions of the two elders,” Hui Bao carefully answered.

“En, we are pursuing a great criminal of the sect. However, this person is extremely cunning. Your mission is to find him,” Dai Tao said.

“Yes!” Hui Bao hurried to acknowledge.

“This place has tracks he left behind. Start here.” Finishing, Dao Tai went to the side and closed his eyes to rest.

Hui Bao laid on the ground. He sniffed and then closed his eyes. His right hand suddenly lit up. The light quickly scanned the ground. He took a handful of powder from his Hundred Treasures Pouch. Moments later, the powder disappeared into the air and three pairs of faint footprints appeared on the previously blank ground.

Dai Tao was slightly surprised but he did not interrupt. Hui Bao who had been extremely subservient before seemed to be a completely different person now with a calm expression and confidence.

Hui Bao carefully inspected the footprints and concluded after a few moments, “There are three people, one is male, the other two are female.”

Dai Tao thought a moment, and the intelligence dossier the sect had given them before they came to mind. He quickly deduced who the other two women were.

Xiao Mo Ge had two women with him, one with an ugly appearance and one that was beautiful. The ugly one was of mysterious origins but the beautiful one was the daughter of a little jie master in a remote part of the territories.

Dai Tao nodded. This Hui Bao had some skill as expected.

“Do you know which direction then went in?” Dai Tao couldn’t resist asking.

“Daren, please wait for a moment.” Hui Bao beckoned at a disciple. The disciple hurried forward and handed over a beast service card.

This beast service card was just half the size of a palm and

engraved with a small beast.

Moments later, a strange beast appeared, a fluffy furred puppy. What was most attention-catching was its pair of glass like eyes were unusually bright.

Dai Tao's eyes lit up. "Is it a Glass Eyed Canine?"

Glass eyed Caines were just fourth-grade ling beast but it was not easy to raise them. What was most unique about the glass eyed canines were that its eyes were extremely powerful and it could see many things that normal people could not. It was also highly intelligent and liked by hunters. Dai Tao had seen it mentioned before in a record and so recognized it with a glance.

"Daren is wise!" Hui Bao hurriedly flattered.

The glass eyed canine just out of Hui Bao's arms. The glass-like eyes suddenly lit up. It looked around and then suddenly shot in one direction.

"Daren, that direction!" Hui Bao hurriedly shouted. He then chased after the glass eyed canine.

Dai Tao was overjoyed and followed tightly after.

Ji Zheng followed expressionlessly but his movements were not slow.

The two only thought of one thing at this moment, obtaining the shen power inheritance!

Even though they did not communicate, both of them decided that they couldn't have the shen power inheritance land in other people's hands.

At this time, something suddenly happened.

Chapter 667 – Nasty

The glass eyed canine running ahead of them suddenly wailed. He faltered and tumbled on the ground.

Hui Bao was shocked and hurried next to the glass eyed canine.

The glass eyed canine was laying lifelessly on the ground. Hui Bao's face immediately turned white and a word flashed through his mind, trap!

The other had set up traps along the road!

Hui Bao immediately felt this was troublesome. People would rarely set up traps when they were trying to escape. Only those experienced, cunning, and malicious experts would be so careful and so nasty.

Expert!

Hui Bao did not make a sound but he straightened. Fighting spirit emanated from his short and low body.

While his status in the temple was not high, he was still very proud of his skills. In these years, he had never failed before.

“What is it?” Dai Tao looked at the glass eyed canine and asked.

“The other has set a trap,” Hui Bao said gravely. A hint of pain flashed through his eyes. It was not easy to raise a glass eyed canine and this was his only one.

“A trap?” Dai Tao was shocked. “Do they know that someone is following them?”

“I’m not sure!” Hui Bao shook his head. “The power of a trap like this is not high. They are mostly used against ling beasts. Experienced experts usually will set up traps like this behind them just in case. If they were actually prepared for pursuers, the trap would be more powerful.”

Dai Tao understood. What Hui Bao said was rational.

But what he didn’t know was that Zuo Mo knew that it would be fanxu xiuzhe that were chasing him. What traps could be effective against fanxu? He gave up on those unrealistic ideas and targeted the ling beasts that would appear. This was also Pu Yao’s suggestion.

Hui Bao’s expression was serious as he beckoned to another disciple, “Give me the [Ten Thousand Lure Disk].”

The disciple carefully presented a disk to Hui Bao. The disk was completely black and had been carved from an unknown black stone. It was covered in strange seal scripts.

Hui Bao took the disk, bit his finger and drew a seal script on the

disk. His expression was stern as he chanted.

The motionlessly needle on the disk slowly started to move. Moments later, it stopped and pointed in a direction.

A direction that was the complete opposite of the one before!

As expected of an expert!

Hui Bao's eyes became even brighter.

Xiao Mo Ge and Jiang Zhe, the famed battle general of Xuan Kong Temple, were going to fight to the death!

Such explosive news created a great wave in the Hundred Savage Realm in a flash.

While Jiang Zhe was not as powerful as Gu Liang Dao, he had been the first battle general to defeat and conquer a mo jie. Xiao Mo Ge's fame had skyrocketed up in this past while, defeating the Ming Bandits and the Yu Frontier Guards. He also had a glorious record.

This was truly a match of the strong against the strong.

After the Sky-Splitting Calamity, the xiuzhe camp had successively achieved victories with many battle generals. On the other hand, the mo had been unable to muster an appropriate response. The major factions of mo maintained their silence. They naturally had their own considerations, but for the mo people, they felt shamed. But they could not argue against the truth.

The battle between Xiao Mo Ge and Jiang Zhe immediately attracted the eyes of all of the Hundred Savage Realm.

Xiao Mo Ge's reputation had grown and he was clearly the representative of the new generation of battle generals. However, in the eyes of the public, he still lacked a major victory!

Defeating the Ming Bandits and Marshal Yu was enough to make a splash in the mo territories. But a victory against those outsider was even more important in the eyes of the mo people.

A long sequence of defeats and retreats caused the mo people to have a longing desire for victory!

Almost all of the Hundred Savage of the Dark was hoping that Xiao Mo Ge could defeat Jiang Zhe.

Victory, only victory would count!

The gaze of the Hundred Savage of the Dark gathered on Xiao Mo Ge's battalion.

When the news spread, the route that Xiao Mo Ge's battalion took immediately became free of obstacles. The major factions along the route moved out of the way. They even enthusiastically offered all kinds of help: free supplies, resources to recruit more soldiers

This battle was exaggerated to the point that it became, in many people's eyes, a battle of life and death that could decide the fates of mo and xiuzhe.

After the repeated losses, the desire of the mo toward victory started to burn under the influence of the spark that Zuo Mo threw out.

Mo innately liked to fight. Their desire to fight was something that xiuzhe found hard to understand.

Many mo warriors rushed in from all directions in hope that they could participate in this battle. The number was tens of times greater than the previous wave that had come.

Multiple mo marshals publicly expressed their support of Xiao Mo Ge. Intelligence of all kinds flowed and gathered on Gongsun Cha and Bie Han's hands. At the same time, Jiang Zhe who had wanted to focus on preparing for the battle found that the number of scouts in the surroundings had suddenly increased and small-scale skirmishes also increased.

The mo in his surroundings had seen the chance to make things difficult for Xuan Kong Temple. We cannot defeat you, but we

could harass you and not give Jiang Zhe the chance to prepare in peace.

Many little factions teamed up and went to harass Jiang Zhe's forces. Many people started to talk about how the xiuzhe had hunted yaomo in Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie. They called on the mo to hunt xiu. Some mo even called on yao to ally together to fight Xuan Kong Temple. The Hundred Savage of the Dark was extremely busy.

The affair turned into a wildfire in a flash.

The pressure of Xuan Kong Temple increased greatly.

Zuo Mo, A Gui, and Ceng Lian'er were walking on the street. They had completely changed their appearances and no one could recognize them on the street.

The mirage of Xiao Mo Ge and Marshal Yu's fight had spread through the entire Hundred Savage of the Dark, and it would be trouble if they were recognized.

But at this time, Zuo Mo was feeling smug.

As the mastermind behind this string of events, he naturally felt smug about the situation. He had been the one to spread the news about so-called fight between Xiao Mo Ge and Jiang Zhe.

But he hadn't thought that the mo would react so fiercely and the response was beyond his expectations.

His original intention was to make things difficult for Xuan Kong Temple.

The present situation was very beneficial for Gongsun Cha and the others. They now had popular support, the advantage of home territory. This fight attracted the attention of all mo. No one would dare to act against them in fear of the world's anger.

Just how much support Xiao Mo Ge had could be seen by Marshal Hao's public action, he had been the first to publicly support Xiao Mo Ge!

Even more detailed and accurate jie maps, guides that were willing to fight, those were all advantageous to Gongsun Cha. The mo jie occupied by Jiang Zhe's forces would also rebel when they heard the news. While all this could not overwhelm Jiang Zhe, it would take up a bit of his strength.

An advantage was built up slowly like this.

At this time, no one doubted Xiao Mo Ge's identity. Was it a joke? How could a xiuzhe fight against Jiang Zhe?

Of course he is a mo, a pure male mo, only they would have this daring!

What? He knows yao arts? Yao?

You dare to fight for Xiao ye with us?

You don't want to live?

Hearing this, Zuo Mo smiled. He asked Pu Yao, "Would those two old thieving baldies have lost our trail?"

Thinking about what he had set up along the way, even he felt uncertain. Nasty, too nasty!

Pu Yao's endless tricks really broadened his knowledge.

He was now worried that the two old thieving baldies had lost his trail and would return to make trouble for Gongsun Cha and the others. That would not good. One of the key points of this battle was that he would be able to keep the two old thieving baldies occupied.

"Do not underestimate Xuan Kong Temple." Pu Yao snorted at Zuo Mo's words.

—————

Hui Bao's face was covered in dust and had a terrible expression.

Up until now, he had lost six ling beasts! The number of ling beasts he lost in the past five years was not as many as what he lost in this one day. The other's moves were not mainstream measures. There were some primitive and nasty setups that he could not guard against and he had continuously fallen for.

If he wasn't experienced and unusually sensitive, he would have lost the trail a long time ago.

But even so, he didn't have any confidence.

The other definitely was more experienced than he was. Even more importantly, the other was nastier and more cunning than he was! The other had used uncanny traps, one interlocking with another, and every time, it was different.

If the other's targets were people, he would have died long ago.

In dealing with traps, what people fought with was not just technique but mental strength. Hui Bao knew that he had completely lost on that level.

The only confidence he had was the two elders beside him. The two elders definitely would not watch as he was killed.

Dai Tao's expression was also unwell. He saw Hui Bao's disheveled state. He had actually been pushed into such a panic by a junior. He was not in a good mood. On the other hand, Ji Zheng

had been expressionless from beginning to end as though he was not affected by the incidents at all.

Hui Bao suddenly exhaled. His gaze landed on the distant city.

“It’s here?” Dai Tao turned to ask Hui Bao.

“Yes! Daren!” Hui bao said respectfully. “They are inside this city. But”

“But what?”

“There are many people in the city and it is hard to pinpoint them... ..” Hui Bao trailed off.

“There is no need for such trouble.” Dai Tao smiled. Finishing, he looked towards Ji Zheng. “Please, Shixiong, force them out.”

Ji Zheng nodded expressionlessly and suddenly flew into the sky.

He looked down at the sky from the sky. People were as small as ants.

Ji Zheng raised a palm upright and shouted clearly, “Muh!”

In this moment, the air within hundreds of li suddenly froze. A terrifying presence pressed down towards the city below.

The entire city seemed to freeze in that moment. People instinctively looked towards the figure in the sky. Terror uncontrollably possessed every corner of their body. Their hands and feet felt cold and their minds were blank.

A dhyana light swept the entire city like a wave.

When the dhyana light lit up, Zuo Mo's expression suddenly changed.

Damn it!

He hadn't expected the other would not care at all and challenge the entire city!

The dhyana light gave him a feeling of extreme danger.

Chapter 668 – Ji Zheng

The dhyana light was soundless and serene like a ripple in the water.

Detecting danger, Zuo Mo shouted, “Scatter!”

Finishing, he shot up and hurriedly flew out of the city. Ceng Lian’er understood and immediately flew in another direction.

Zuo Mo turned around and found A Gui following tightly behind him. He suddenly panicked. “A Gui, we need to run in different directions!”

A Gui did not seem to hear and continued to follow him closely.

Zuo Mo felt both moved and panicked. If they split up, the two would chase after him. A Gui and Ceng Lian’er would then have a chance to escape. But he hadn’t thought that A Gui would be so stubborn that she would not listen to his words. That caused his plan to fail completely.

He then saw a smear of red out of the corner of his eye. It was Ceng Lian’er coming back.

Ceng Lian’er was coming back!

Motherf***er!

Zuo Mo was both panicked and angry. These people that did not listen to direction! He felt slightly moved by their loyalty. Zuo Mo was not surprised that A Gui had followed him but Zuo Mo was very surprised that Ceng Lian'er had also turned around. He was the enemy's target. Ceng Lian'er had given up her best chance to escape and chose to fight alongside them. This required great courage.

“All in!”

At this time, any other words were extraneous.

Zuo Mo's spirits rose to a peak. He suddenly grabbed his legs and turned into a ball. He somersaulted in the air and his legs suddenly kicked into the air.

Bam!

It was as though he had pushed against a tangible but invisible block in the air. The wind gusted past him and the sound was explosive and clear.

A thread of pain suddenly appeared on Zuo Mo's face. Even though his mo physique was stronger now, it could not endure such a high-speed change in momentum.

He had pushed off with enormous force. Using this enormous power, Zuo Mo's body shot out in the opposite direction at an even

faster speed to head towards Ji Zheng!

His gaze was tightly locked onto Ji Zheng's eye-catching shiny bald head.

He disliked thieving baldies the most!

Zuo Mo threw away all stray thoughts. Golden light flashed across his body and shen power rippled.

A Gui's body eerily disappeared and then she suddenly appeared in the air next to Zuo Mo.

Ceng Lian'er was like a red gust of smoke. She wavered uncertainly and faint after images formed.

The three's target was Ji Zheng!

It had been a brief moment from the time they had made the decision to run away to the decision to turn back and attack.

In the eyes of Dai Tao and the others, Zuo Mo and the others running away was the normal response. They did not find it strange but when the three suddenly switched to a counter-attack, they were caught off guard.

Xiuzhe of fanxu level were of high status in any sect. They either roamed the world in search of rare and precious things, or they

were in seclusion in search of a higher level. If a situation was not forced to the very end, the sect would not rely on such great power, much less in a top sect like Xuan Kong Temple that had so many experts.

It had been decades since the two had fought.

Due to this, they were unprepared for the trio's escape turning suddenly into an attack.

If this was a usual time, facing such a great difference in power, this bit of unpreparedness would not be of any effect.

The two fanxu's minds were not affected by this. Their minds had been hardened and their confidence in their power had been engraved into their bones.

They were overjoyed rather than shocked. If Zuo Mo and the others chose to flee, they could only choose to chase Zuo Mo and the risk the other two escaping. Now the three had decided to stay. In the eyes of these two, it was like moths heading for the flame, seeking death!

Ji Zheng snorted coldly. His upraised hand moved towards his other hand, his palms pressed together in a prayer position.

His expression was solemn as he chanted.

A golden lotus blossomed under his feet. Countless petals fell. A

peaceful and serene presence that could permeate people's minds formed and an imperceptible murmur of chanting disturbed people's concentration.

Zuo Mo felt his rippling shen power suddenly stop. Without being conscious of it, his fighting spirit weakened.

He immediately felt fear. The old thieving baldy wasn't simple to have a weapon that could subdue people without a fight!

If this was in the past, Zuo Mo would have been greatly affected by the disturbance of the dhyana chanting. But ever since he comprehended the stele text,, his control over his shen power was much greater even if it had not grown by much.

Zuo Mo protected his mind. The pure and burning shen power furiously circulated through his body. When the flower petals that fell came near him, they would explode into fragments!

At the same time, the Soul Setting Divine Light that was sleeping in Zuo Mo's body suddenly spun. Zuo Mo immediately felt his body lighten and his mind relax.

He hadn't thought that the Soul Setting Divine Light would have such a use!

Zuo Mo was overjoyed and his spirits rose!

That bald head in his field of view grew closer. Zuo Mo couldn't

help but howl. His arms reached outwards as though to embrace the shiny head. Countless golden lights flashed in the air and flooded towards his hands.

In this moment, a thick and vast golden pillar suddenly formed in Zuo Mo's curved arms at an astounding speed.

On the golden pillar, there were golden crows that seemed to be alive as they cawed and flapped their wings.

Hiss!

A streak of crimson shot up along the golden pillar.

[Golden Crow Battering Ram]!

At the same time, a cool crescent moon formed behind Ceng Lian'er's body. Compared to the small crescent of before, the moon was much broader this time.

The crescent moon pointed directly at Ji Zheng as though it was a blade.

“Moon, moon, strike!”

The purple light in A Gui's eyes grew and her body eerily disappeared into the air.

Ji Zheng's expression changed slightly. The attacks of the three surpassed his expectations. His dhyana heart that was still like that of a deep well detected danger and ripples formed.

But the disturbed dhyana heart immediately calmed.

Ji Zheng looked down as he chanted!

Blinding golden light emanated from his body. In a flash, he was like those intimidating buddhas covered in golden paint.

[Great Authority Vajrapani Dhyana Body]!

At the same time, the sutra characters on his kasaya seemed to come alive. Sounds of countless people chanting came from the kasaya and gathered into a vast ocean of dhyana chanting. Golden characters flooded out of Ji Zheng's body and formed a sea of characters!

Xuan Kong Temple's eighth-grade talisman [Sutra Sea Kasaya]!

Zuo Mo felt his vision blur. The sutra characters around Ji Zheng changed constantly.

But Zuo Mo was experienced in battle. While he was shocked, he was not panicked. The [Golden Crow Battering Ram] did not change direction and headed powerfully towards that golden sea!

Ceng Lian'er immediately understood Zuo Mo's intentions. She controlled the moon crescent to follow behind the Golden Crow Battering Ram and struck!

When the Golden Crow Battering Ram hit the sea of sutra characters, the burning red flow along the pillar suddenly exploded. Everywhere it passed, the sutra characters started to burn as though they were made of paper.

And having overcome the resistance, the Golden Crow Battering Ram smashed down!

Dong!

A deep sound exploded in people's minds. In the hundreds of li, everyone's minds shook. Those that were weaker felt restless and wanted to throw up.

Zuo Mo's Golden Crow Battering Ram was like a great and heavy object that smashed through this sea of sutra characters!

At this time, Ji Zheng suddenly raised his head and opened his eyes. It was like a Buddha opening his eyes, without joy nor sorrow, the aura of authority as great as the ocean. His hands moved apart and slowly slapped towards the Golden Crown Battering Ram coming towards him.

The unstoppable Golden Crow Battering Ram was stopped by this seemingly normal movement!

The palm that seemed to be smelted from golden liquid stopped that enormous Golden Crow Battering Ram completely.

This all happened in a flash. Dai Tao hadn't thought that the trio's attacks would all be focused on Ji Zheng. But he did not panic. He had absolute confidence in Ji Zheng's strength. Ji Zheng Shixiong usually was secluded and only thought of dhynana cultivation. Outsiders would not know but as another fanxu of Xuan Kong temple, Dai Tao knew Ji Zheng Shixiong's strength better than other people.

Ji Zheng Shixiong was stronger than he was!

Ji Zheng Shixiong that was raised in Xuan Kong Temple had a sturdier foundation from when he began cultivating. His accumulation at each level was much better. When this reached fanxu, this advantage became evident.

Dai Tao always held some admiration about this.

Looking at Xiao Mo Ge's group concentrating their attacks on Ji Zheng Shixiong, he was not panicked and smiled coldly inside. They were seeking their own deaths!

"Shen power! Is only so!" A thread of disappointment flashed across Ji Zheng's eyes.

This Golden Crow Battering Ram was powerful but it was far

from the power that he thought it would have. Was the power of shen power only so much?

If that was the case, then this shen power did not live up to its reputation

Just as this thought formed in Ji Zheng's mind, his eyes suddenly flickered. A cool light flashed along the Golden Crow Battering Ram and suddenly struck right in front of him.

The light had been following tightly behind the Golden Crow Battering Ram and was hidden from view, concealed by the blinding golden light.

Ji Zheng's dhyana heart was steady and when his thoughts shifted, he was able to respond.

A handful of grey mist suddenly flew out of the beads hanging on his chest. When the cool moon light struck the grey mist, it suddenly stilled. Among the grey mist, the cool crescent moon essence was left motionless.

Eighth-grade talisman [Mortal Thought Bead]!

This string of beads was forged from the common thoughts that he had excised from his mind through cultivation of his dhyana heart. It was connected to his mind and had great abilities. When he sat and chanted everyday over decades, he would stroke them to prove his heart.

Dai Tao looked interestedly at the fight between the two sides and showed no intentions of joining in. Up until now, Ji Zheng Shixiong was at ease and the enemy had not managed to truly threaten him.

Ji Zheng Shixiong was usually proud. He was at the peak of his interest in fighting. If Dai Tao joined in, it would displease Ji Zheng.

Suddenly, the motionless Golden Crow Battering Ram started to shatter.

Black crows suddenly flapped their wings and flew out of the Golden Crow Battering Ram.

These completely black crows had wisps of flame on their toes. Their eyes were dark red, and there were three thin golden feathers on their foreheads that trembled slightly.

Their wings spread and their dark red eyes were locked onto Ji Zheng.

For some reason Ji Zheng suddenly felt slightly anxious.

His attention was completely absorbed by these black crows and did not notice the strange dance like movements that Zuo Mo was making at this time.

From his vantage point Dai Tao could see the strange movements Zuo Mo was making. His arms were dancing like snakes, his body moving in a strange rhythm. These movements seemed senseless, but for some unknown reason, Dai Tao felt a chill rise from his feet.

His expression changed and he blurted out.

“Shixiong, careful!”

Chapter 669 – Shen Technique!

Shen technique!

A term that was so ancient that people had almost forgot it. A term that had suddenly come into Dai Tao's mind. His face immediately turned pale white.

The black crows' dark red eyes flashed with eerie light. They seemed to be looking down from on high, their expressions indifferent as though they were gazing at ants.

The moment Dai Tao met the eyes of the black crows, his mind turned completely blank.

A desolate, cold, and vast presence came at him. His mind was actually stolen for a moment.

Zuo Mo's expression was focused and his eyes completely void of emotion. This was the first time he was using a shen technique and it took all of the shen power in his body.

From the beginning, he knew that the Ten Crow Celestial Domain would not be an actual threat to fanxu xiuzhe.

He was counting on the shen technique.

The shen techniques that had been lost by the passage of time

had astounding power. Compared to the complex and exquisite methods of the three major systems at this time, shen techniques could be called simple. But this word 'simple' only applied to Zuo Mo now that he had finally set foot into the doorway to shen power. Before he had comprehended the Great Peace Mo Stele, he had never successfully completed a shen technique.

But after comprehending it, the manipulation of shen power came naturally.

The ancient shen techniques were simple and ancient but held great power. Even in this era where cultivation was so developed, it was enough for the top xiuzhe to feel jealousy.

The power of shen techniques originated from shen power.

Zuo Mo had two shen power inheritances. One was the Greenvine Tribe's inheritance that Qing Lin had given him. The other was the Sun Tribe's shen power inheritance. Zuo Mo had studied the shen power inheritance of the Sun Tribe.

The Ten Crow Celestial Domain and the sun shen power could be used together. After the fight against Marshal Yu, Zuo Mo had spent a lot of effort to merge shen power into the transformations of his Ten Crow Celestial Domain.

With his present amount of shen power, he could not use shen power to fight a full battle like the totems in the ancient era.

Even using the most elementary shen techniques, the shen power inside him would be quickly used up.

For the present Zuo Mo, the shen techniques were his trump card!

Ji Zheng hadn't thought that Zuo Mo would use a killing move immediately.

Because when one looked at the situation, Ji Zheng was the one at a disadvantage. However, after the fight against Marshal Yu, Zuo Mo understood the great gap between him and fanxu or marshals.

If it hadn't been for the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed acting up during that fight, he definitely did not qualify to fight against Marshal Yu. He had advanced greatly in the period of time since, but there was still a large gap between him and a fanxu, much less fanxu like Ji Zheng who had been at this level for so many years.

Zuo Mo had judged his own abilities correctly from the start.

His strategy was effective!

Shen technique, [Crow Eye]!

The legends said in the ancient Sun Tribe, what they liked to raise the most were black fire crows with red eyes. These fire

crows were vicious and wary, and when they flew, it was like an arrow. Their wings would cut the air causing a high pitched and piercing sound. The sound acted as an alarm for the tribe.

The ten black crows in the air suddenly spread their wings and the light in their dark red eyes brightened. An extremely dissonant sound pierced the eardrums and penetrated people's heads.

Under the strange piercing sound, the ling power around him uncontrollably froze for a moment!

Ji Zheng's expression on that golden face finally changed.

After entering fanxu, the ling power inside his body had become one with him and he had rid himself of all mortal thoughts. His dhyana heart was clear and open without any distractions. He had almost reached the limit of dhyana cultivation. Even if he was swarmed by ten thousand ghosts and had to enter the cycle of rebirth, the ling power inside his body would not separate at all from his physical body and mind.

In such a case, how could his ling power go out of control?

While Ji Zheng's mind was stunned, the ten black crows in the air suddenly flapped their wings and dove down at Ji Zheng.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Balls of dark red flames suddenly appeared from their toes and

quickly covered their bodies. The three slender golden feathers on their foreheads dropped off and floated around them.

The ten dark red streams of light were like ten arrowheads pointing directly at Ji Zheng.

Shen technique!

Ji Zheng's pupils suddenly contracted. When he realized what this was, the ten flows of dark red light almost reached him!

The eerie dark red of the black crows' eyes captured people's minds and caused a chill to run through their minds.

A feeling of danger that almost consumed him caused every thread of ling power in Ji Zheng's body to respond unconsciously.

The power of a fanxu finally was shown at the moment of death!

The [Mortal Thought Beads] that had been hanging from Ji Zheng's neck exploded. Grey mist fell down towards the ten dark red streams of fire.

At this moment of life and death, Ji Zheng did not hesitate to sacrifice the treasure he had forged through many decades!

When the first flowing fire black crow blurred, into the grey mist, it seemed to land in a bog and its speed quickly decreased.

Pew pew pew!

The ten crows all entered the grey mist.

When the grey mist came into contact with the flames around the crows, it was like adding cold water to boiling oil and exploded!

Pia pia pia!

The force from the rattle and pops, like that of fireworks, rushed towards people so quickly they couldn't breathe.

The grey mist immediately disappeared.

Ji Zheng's expression was grave but without any pain. His eyes were bright as his hands moved. In a moment, he went from the angrily glaring vajrapani to a venerable one holding a flower!

His brow was gentle, his smile as warm as the spring wind. The murderousness immediately dissipated.

The lotus flower in his hand was tender and beautiful.

Petals fell off the flower and floated towards those fast-approaching black crows.

But these seemingly slow flower petals managed to stop these black crows.

At this time, the cool moon essence that had been motionless, as if it had been waiting, broke free of the heavily damaged grey mist without any warning and shot at Ji Zheng.

This came in a flash!

The slowly revolving sea of sutra characters around Ji Zheng suddenly formed a wave of sutra characters that stopped this cool moon essence.

Almost at the same time, a light flashed through Ceng Lian'er's eyes.

Under the crescent moon, her long sleeves danced!

Pia, the moon essence that had been stopped by the sutra characters suddenly exploded!

The cool moon essence started from within the sutra character sea and spread at a rapid rate!

In a moment, the sutra character sea was covered in frost!

[Moon Frost Essence]!

Shen technique!

Another shen technique!

Ji Zheng's heart jumped and his expression changed again.

How was it possible?

How was it possible!

When Zuo Mo had cast his shen technique, Ji Zheng had been shocked but was able to face it calmly. But when he discovered that Ceng Lian'er could also use shen techniques, he was completely stunned.

How was it possible!

While the four great sects were still trying to recover shen power, there were two people here that were able to use shen techniques!

What he didn't know was that Ceng Lian'er's shen power inheritance was more complete than Zuo Mo's. After restoring the most important part, Ceng Lian'er's Moon Shen power inheritance was complete.

She also had cultivated shen techniques!

His mind became unfocused, Ji Zheng showed a weakness!

The frost was like a poison that infected the sutra characters. All of the sutra characters were destroyed and became countless cool moon energies.

The [Sutra Sea Kasaya] that Ji Zheng wore also dimmed. It became as grey as withered leaves and slowly crumbled.

In an instant, two eighth-grade treasures were lost but Ji Zheng could not attend to them.

At this crucial moment, a five colored treasure wheel appeared and managed to stop the moon frost. On the treasure wheel, five colors cycled endlessly as it stopped the frost essence. This was Dai Tao coming to the rescue in time.

Eighth-grade talisman [Five Element Manifestation Wheel]!

This talisman had been originally crafted when Dai Tao had still been a roaming xiu. After he entered Xuan Kong Temple, he studied the sutras and reforged it.

The treasure wheels had five colors that belonged to the five elements. There was a different venerable one within each of the elements.

The Five Element Manifestation Wheel stopped the frost essence. The five elements circulated and dissipated the power of the moon

frost.

Ji Zheng relaxed slightly. If they could endure the enemy's attack, they could take back the initiative! He had never expected that they could cultivate shen techniques. Caught off guard, he had been unprepared. But now, countless records flashed across his mind.

Shen techniques were dominant but they also require great expenditure of shen power. The other would not have the endurance.

Wait

An eerie shadow suddenly flashed across Ji Zheng's mind. He was alarmed. There was one other person

Not good!

Suddenly, a strange power silently entered his body from his back!

Ji Zheng's expression changed!

Dai Tao's expression also changed!

A Gui appeared behind Ji Zheng like a ghost. Purple energy was visible on her right palm as she pressed it to his back.

From the beginning when A Gui had disappeared, she had not appeared until now. Only appearing to deliver a fatal attack.

Ji Zheng's body shook and the golden color on his face faded at a visible rate.

At this time, the flower petals stopping the black crow burned up and turned to ash.

There were three black crows left!

Red light flashed through the three black crows. They turned into three streams of light that accurately hit Ji Zheng who had lost the protection of the sutra sea.

Ji Zheng's body abruptly started to burn. No one noticed that the nine slender golden feathers around the black crows entered Ji Zheng's body like needles.

“Shixiong!” Dai Tao frantically shouted.

After the successful attack, Zuo Mo did not linger and shouted, “Run!”

Before he finished, a hand appeared behind his neck. A Gui had appeared like a ghost behind him and grabbed his neck.

He felt his eyes blur and then found someone beside him. Ceng Lian'er was grabbed by the neck like he was by A Gui's other hand.

Ceng Lian'er's face was slightly pale. Using that shen technique had taken all of her power.

The two smiled at each other.

Detecting the sincerity in Zuo Mo's smile, an emotion that was not there in the past, Ceng Lian'er felt happier.

Boom!

An intimidating ling power vibration came from behind them.

Shocked, Zuo Mo turned to look back.

A faint Buddha figure that was hundreds of zhang tall appeared where they had been.

The authoritative Buddha glittered with golden light. A vast ling power vibration caused Zuo Mo's expression to change drastically!

That Buddha figure stared at Zuo Mo with an indifferent gaze.

Zuo Mo felt his heart seize. Suddenly, A Gui increased in speed. The purple energy flashed and Zuo Mo finally felt the pressure

decrease.

Ji Zheng was covered by the Buddha figure. The golden feathers that had entered his body were forced out and turned to powder. The Buddha's figure also disappeared. Ji Zheng's complexion was pale. Looking at the rock that had shattered into multiple pieces and lost all light, after having been unaffected by losing so many other talismans, he finally showed pain for the first time.

The ultimate treasure of Xuan Kong Temple, Buddha Relic, had saved his life.

He suddenly raised his head and said to Dai Tao, "Do not give chase."

Dai Tao was shocked. While Ji Zheng Shixiong was injured, the enemy had no power to fight back. Even if he was alone, he could capture the three.

Ji Zheng said coolly, "The shen power that last woman cultivates is famed."

Chapter 670 – Twenty Six Years Ago

A Gui was extremely fast.

But what surprised Zuo Mo was that the two old thieving bandits did not chase after them. The last attack by the Buddha manifestation had scared Little Mo Ge to the point his little heart stopped beating. It had also killed the little bit of hope that he felt.

If they managed to kill one, then escaping would be much easier.

Even when Zuo Mo thought of it now, their attacks had been flawless. No matter if it was individual performance or their teamwork, it was the best they could do. But that cold-faced old thieving baldy was so powerful it almost surpassed the imagination and he was even harder to deal with than Marshal Yu.

The three of them were much stronger than when they had fought Marshal Yu. He and Ceng Lian'er had both used a shen technique, and A Gui's ambush had been wondrous. But even so, the three of them working together could not finish off the cold-faced old thieving baldy.

The old thieving baldy's great talismans were much more powerful than Marshal Yu's.

The great wealth of Xuan Kong Temple could be seen.

Zuo Mo had become used to seeing the dominance that came with

incontestable power. But this battle reminded Zuo Mo of the importance of talismans.

Thinking about the endless chase that would be coming, Zuo Mo decided. Wasn't it just competing with riches? While we aren't as wealthy as Xuan Kong Temple, we are not poor!

He started to search his ring.

Zuo Mo had to say after digging around that he did have a lot of good things.

The broken arrow from the Archer Tribe, the fragments of Eastern Water Tribe's treasure, Heaven Summoning Bell, the Nether Ghost Core of the Nether Ghost Tribe, the golden leaf, the Jade Hook Tree, the Yinyang Null Polarity Bead, the Corpse Sea Bamboo, the tears of the Mist People, the Black-heart Treasure Coins, the Green Carp Tongue Sword

Zuo Mo's confidence increased and he immediately felt his spine straighten.

The spring wind blew, the battle drums beat, who's afraid of who's talismans?

Having found a safe place, A Gui stopped fleeing. Zuo Mo carefully set up jinzhi and hid their traces. The three began meditating to recover their energy. Four hours later, Zuo Mo was the first to recover. His right hand could constantly provide shen

power. At this time, the small amount of shen power it provided greatly increased his recovery speed.

After a while, A Gui and Ceng Lian'er also opened their eyes.

Zuo Mo took out all kinds of materials, talismans, and mo weapons, and arranged them in rows.

“See what can be used, pick what you want.”

Ceng Lian'er's exquisite face showed shock. The ground was covered in materials, talismans, and mo weapons that all gave off different lights. It dazzled the eyes. The cave's walls reflected rainbow light.

A Gui grabbed the Nether Ghost Core and the Corpse Sea Bamboo. Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. He hadn't thought that A Gui would pick these two. Even Qing Lin hadn't known how to use the Nether Ghost Core. The Corpse Sea Bamboo was an extremely dark talisman.

Ceng Lian'er was not polite and picked the Green Carp Tongue Sword and some blood thunder beads. The blood thunder beads had been taken from Wu Yu's personal items and there were sixteen beads.

Unlike the xiuzhe who would usually possess all kinds of talismans, mo would usually only have one or two mo weapons. But when Zuo Mo saw the blood thunder beads, his eyes lit up. He

reached out a hand. “Give me a blood thunder bead.”

Ceng Lian'er handed a blood thunder bead as he requested.

The blood thunder bead was about the size of a thumb, the colour of wine-red, its surface reflective but the bead was translucent. A line of silver slowly curving over the surface of the bead as though it was alive and gave people a feeling of extreme evilness.

Feeling the blood thunder bead in his hand, Zuo Mo managed to discern the general method to make these beads. In the extremely yin blood pools, plant thunder plasma, after five years, blood thunder beads would be produced. It was not easy to obtain blood thunder beads and they were extremely valuable. General level mo would do almost anything to obtain a few to use as life saving measures.

Some of the content from the [Yin Fire Bead Chapter] floated into Zuo Mo's mind. His thoughts shifted, his hand flipped, and a thread of fire appeared in the middle of his palm.

The Sun Shen Fire immediately wrapped around the blood thunder bead.

Zuo Mo's hands moved and all kinds of spells flowed into the fire.

Moments later, the new blood thunder bead flew into Zuo Mo's hand. The new bead was slightly smaller than before, the silver line was even brighter, and there were dots of gold energy on the

bead.

“Let’s call this bead the Gold Star Silver Thread Bead.” Zuo Mo threw the bead over to Ceng Lian’er and then focused on reforging the other fifteen blood thunder beads.

The [Yin Fire Bead Chapter] was a method that Zuo Mo had gotten from Pu Yao a long time ago, and was extremely familiar with the contents. As a xiuzhe, he was skilled in forging, after his time in the Ten Finger Prison, he became skilled in yao arts. His pure Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was enough for him to dominate in body cultivation. He was also skilled in mo matrices. Without realizing it, Zuo Mo could be said to be “learned in the methods of all three territories.”

Even though his strength could not enter the ranks in the three fields, Zuo Mo could definitely be called a freak in terms of how many different things he learned.

What Zuo Mo did wouldn’t be permitted in large sects. People had limited energy and time, so if what they learned was varied and unfocused, it would be hard to accomplish anything in the future. Due to this, after sect disciples went through the initial recruitment tests, the sect would send experienced elders to give them suggestions which area to focus on. From then on, the disciple would focus on only one field.

How could Zuo Mo learn so many tricks? The two old spirits each wanted to pull him into their own camps.

If he hadn't stumbled on to shen power, Zuo Mo would truly have been lost in the heterogeneous mix of skills. The three major systems were each unto themselves, with thousands of methods, and each with their own wonders.

But Zuo Mo managed to obtain the shen power inheritance. He comprehended the shen power. The three powers started to merge and he ended up with new shen power! A new system formed like this.

This caused Zuo Mo to look at the heterogeneous mix of content from a higher level and merge them into a single system.

So when Zuo Mo saw the blood thunder bead, he thought of the [Yin Fire Bead Chapter]. If this was any other person, they would have probably ponder for a long time about how to use yao forging methods to forge mo beads. But Zuo Mo didn't hesitate at all. He felt this was natural and there were no obstacles.

From very early on, his understanding of cultivation had been diverted far from the orthodox.

The [Yin Fire Bead Chapter] naturally had its own uniqueness in order to have been famed for a time. The yin fire beads that Zuo Mo had forged before had become something he kept up his sleeve. But under Zuo Mo's present understanding and unorthodox methods, this spell that had passed from thousands of years ago was completely transformed.

If the great mind that created the [Yin Fire Bead Chapter] knew

that his spell was changed into something strange like this, he would probably cry from under the ground and climb back up.

For someone that only thought of practical benefits like Zuo Mo, tradition was nothing.

As long as the [Gold Star Silver Thread Bead] was powerful enough, then it was enough!

After forging the fifteen [Gold Star Silver Thread Bead], Zuo Mo looked towards the talismans and mo weapons covering the ground. A Gui and Ceng Lian'er had both picked a few things but what should he pick?

The broken arrow of the Archer Tribe? That was a good item. The Archer Tribe had been a powerful tribe that was able to threaten the dominant Sun Tribe. This broken arrow wasn't ordinary,

The golden leaf also had methods of using shen power to make items but after pondering it for a moment, Zuo Mo gave up. The reason was simple, he did not have enough shen power.

With his pitifully small amount of shen power, it was delusion to think he could melt and reforge a treasure like the broken arrow.

Another item with the same problem was the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. While Zuo Mo had pulled it into his body and they could be said to have listen to his orders, but Zuo Mo could

not do a thing at the moment. Ever since the Anti Dragon Claw became a bracelet, the Three Thousand Threads of Worry seemed to have entered a deep sleep. No matter how Zuo Mo called to it, there was no response.

Little Mo Ge cried inside. After fighting for thousands of years, did you fall in love?

The Jade Hook Wood was a sixth-grade item and it required just a bit of nurturing before it could turn into the Celestial Green Jade Hook Wood. If this was a normal time, sixth-grade was definitely a good item, but it would not be enough to face fanxu. The Yinyang Null Polarity Bead's drawback was that the user would die after using it. It was something to use to die along with the enemy.

After looking around, Zuo Mo's gaze finally ended on the Black-hearted Treasure Coins.

The Black-heart Treasure Coins, one of the one hundred and eight earth mo weapons. They could become their own domain where yin and yang were reversed, and the five elements were mixed.

For any other person, it was a top mo weapon!

But for Zuo Mo who had the Anti Dragon Claw and the Sun Crystal Seed, he was not satisfied with the power of the Black-heart Treasure Coins.

But what if he reforge it?

When this thought appeared, it could not be erased. In this moment, Zuo Mo made a decision, do it! At most, this ‘subpar’ weapon would be ruined! The rich Little Mo Ge folded his legs and started to fiddle.

Xuan Kong temple.

The sect leader’s harmonious face was dark. The entire hall had a suffocating atmosphere. The elders looked at each other and knew that something bad had probably happened.

“Everyone should already know about the fight with Xiao Mo Ge,” the sect leader slowly drawled.

The elders were silent and nodded. Some with nimbler minds felt their hearts jump. Had Jiang Zhe lost?

“This upcoming battle is not insignificant. We have asked Elder Ji Zheng and Elder Dai Tao to go into the mo territories to bring back Xiao Mo Ge’s head.”

When these words were spoken, the elders were shocked. They hadn’t thought that the sect would be so heavy in their action. Two fanxu elders, this battle was as good as finished!

After the shock, all of them showed joy.

The sect leader's expression returned to normal. Seeing the joy on the people's faces, he said coolly, "Elder Ji Zheng was injured fighting with Xiao Mo Ge."

The words were like lightning on a clear day. The entire place was silent and everyone was stunned.

Elder Ji Zheng was wounded?

"Does everyone still remember the events of twenty six years ago?" Suddenly, the sect leader seemed to speak of something completely unrelated.

"Twenty six years ago"

Suddenly, multiple elders changed expression.

"The one that wounded Elder Ji Zheng was the little girl from back then," the sect leader said indifferently.

This stirred memories for many people, and even more changed expression.

"Has she achieved" an elder couldn't help but ask with slight terror on his face.

“She wounded Elder Ji Zheng,” the sect leader said coolly.

The elders became silent again and the terror on their faces increased.

“Elder, no matter if it is this fight, or against the little girl, we cannot lose.” The sect leader’s half-lidded eyes brightened and that harmonious and kind face became twisted. “What slipped from our hands in the past, this time, we have to take it back!”

Everyone thought of the past events. Their terrified faces suddenly became excited.

“No matter what we have to do, we cannot lose this time! We cannot give anyone else a chance!” The sect leader stood up with heat in his eyes.

“Victory or defeat, it will all be decided in this one move!”

The elders had excited expressions, their gazes burning and greedy. They stood and responded in unison, “By the sect leader’s orders!”

All of Xuan Kong Temple was filled with killing intent.

Chapter 671 – Creation Of The Talisman

Bie Han's eyes were dry and burned like fire.

They had sprinted for ten days at top speed!

Not drinking and eating during this time, and not resting for more than four hours a day, his body was pushed to its limits but his mind was unbelievably excited.

Zuo Mo's actions had been very successful. The mo had continued to join them in the hopes of participating in this battle against the xiuzhe. But those that were most useful to Gongsun Cha and Bie Han were those mo that were familiar with Cold Mountain Jie. They had lived in the area for a long time and were familiar with the terrain like the back of their hands.

Especially the guide with him right now, someone who had told them of this secret and hidden path.

This path traversed caverns hidden deep within the earth, ten li below the surface. There were countless caverns that spanned tens of thousands of li and were interconnected like spiderwebs. They were filled with dark and cold energy, earth fire, beasts, and were extremely dangerous. If someone unfamiliar with the tunnels ventured into them, then they would most likely become lost and die in there.

But their risk was worth it. Hidden deep within the caverns was a chaos rift unknown to the majority of people, one that led to an

underground cavern in Cold Mountain Jie.

Bie Han and Gongsun Cha both understood the value of this hidden path. They had deep admiration for what Zuo Mo had done. What had originally seemed to just be propaganda and was carried out without any technique had increased the chance of their victory.

Cold Mountain Jie was the mo jie that Jiang Zhe had first conquered and right now functioned as the central forward base for Xuan Kong Temple's invasion. There were large amounts of supplies stored there but most importantly was the chaos rift that led to Xuan Kong Temple.

Gongye Xiao Rong's fortunes had immediately changed when Mu Xi closed the chaos rift that lead to Xuan Kong Temple, leaving Gongye Xiao Rong a homeless dog.

The chaos rift was of the utmost importance!

Especially when one was attacking deep into the mo territories. If the chaos rift was lost, it meant losing their path home.

Compared to Gongye Xiao Rong's prideful actions, Jiang Zhe was more cautious. How could he ignore such an important place? He had set up layers of seal formations at the jie rivers of Cold Mountain Jie and made Cold Mountain Jie impenetrable.

Before this revelation, Gongsun Cha and Bie Han had never

considered of attacking Cold Mountain Jie.

With the small amount of forces they had, the best choice was to search for openings as they moved. Trying to attack such a well-fortified position was the same as seeking death.

Gongye Xiao Rong had had so many people but facing Ma Fan who only defended and did not strike out from his base, Gongye Xiao Rong couldn't do a thing and left in defeat. Any battalion wouldn't have any good ways to deal with a fort that was sealed off and had complete defensive seal formations.

Presented with such a good chance, if they could not grab it, then Gongsun Cha was not Gongsun Cha, and Bie Han was not Bie Han!

Originally, the two had planned for Bie Han to attract Jiang Zhe's attention while Gongsun Cha sneaked to Cold Mountain Jie but after discussion, they decided that this fatal blow would be delivered by Bie Han. One reason was because of the hate between Bie Han and Xuan Kong Temple, another was that Bie Han knew more about the battle generals of Xuan Kong Temple than Gongsun Cha.

Bie Han knew how strong Jiang Zhe was. He warned Gongsun Cha that they could not change how fast they were travelling. Jiang Zhe was extremely perceptive. If Gongsun Cha delayed the movement of the troops, Jiang Zhe would definitely detect it.

Gongsun Cha kept a steady pace as Bie Han suggested.

On Bie Han's side, they moved at full speed.

Even Bie Han felt exhausted down to his bones after advancing at a forced march for so long. But when he thought of the hardship he had endured under Xuan Kong Temple over the years, and the state of the wooden and unresponsive Sin Battalion members, his exhausted body was revitalized and the thoughts supported him to keep advancing.

"It's this cavern!" the guide said joyfully. He was extremely excited. He felt his entire body was tremble at the thought of being able to participate in this battle and deal the decisive blow.

"Go!" Bie Han spat out with a heated expression.

The guide looked with respect at Bie Han. In order to not attract any attention, they did not use mo steeds. After marching for a few days, his endurance had all been used up. Sin Battalion had carried him for the rest of the trip.

This battalion was like mo puppets. They did not know exhaustion, too scary!

But when he thought of the battle that was coming, he couldn't help but feel his spirits rise.

He led Bie Han's Sin Battalion through winding twists and turns as they quickly disappeared into the rift in the valley.

Slicing through the air!

Any mo that saw Xiao Mo Ge's Battalion would think these four words. The organized battle formation and the almost tangible killing energy left deep impressions on people.

Especially when this battalion was moving at full speed, the hums and shrills when they moved caused people's scalps to prickle.

When this terrifying battalion started to accelerate, the flood of sound immediately informed people that this battle that was watched by the world would start at any moment.

No faction along the way delayed them. They were silently watching and waiting for this battle to begin.

Jiang Zhe looked at the information the scout had sent and sighed lightly. "They have come so fast!"

In Jiang Zhe's view, this was because Bie Han had detected their intentions to delay them. Advancing at full speed was to not allow Jiang Zhe enough time to prepare. But Jiang Zhe was not nervous. He had already finished his preparations.

These additional preparations were just to increase their chance of victory against Bie Han.

But in a battle against someone like Bie Han, there were too many uncontrollable factors. These preparations might not be used. He was only repairing the opening in their defences. They had taken over many of the mo jie and Bie Han had many targets to choose from.

He knew that his fellow disciples that were guarding the other jie were not Bie Han's match. Of the entire defense line, only he could stop Bie Han.

That was also his strategy. He would face Bie Han and leave Gongsun Cha to the others of his sect. If he could stop Bie Han, the others could work together to take down Gongsun Cha and then turn around to surround Sin Battalion.

Jiang Zhe knew of Bie Han's temper. Bie Han definitely would not give up a chance to face him!

Suddenly, a golden paper crane flew into his hand.

Jiang Zhe's heart jumped. The golden paper crane represented the most urgent order of the sect. Had something happened in the sect?

He opened the paper crane and read the lines inside. His brow furrowed.

When he saw the name of Ji Zhen [Shishuzu](#), Jiang Zhe's surprise

could not be suppressed and it was as though a tsunami formed inside of him! Two fanxu experts, and now another batch of experts were about to enter Cold Mountain Jie!

师叔祖: ancestral shishu, most likely of several generations

What had happened?

But Jiang Zhe also had a bad feeling. For any sect, it was dangerous for all of their elite forces to leave the sect and not leave anyone for defence.

While he did not believe that anyone would dare to act against the sect, but he innately resisted a risky action like this that did not leave any room to spare.

But he was not the sect leader!

He smiled helplessly and tried to explain to himself, if it isn't an extremely important matter, the sect leader would not be so impulsive!

But

Zuo Mo's expression was solemn. The Black Heart Treasure Coins in his hand were completely transformed. The Black Heart Treasure Coins had square openings that seemed to be filled with

blood. It would be more accurate to call them the Red-Heart Treasure Coins now.

The seven Red Heart Treasure Coins were scattered on a turtle shell.

Originally, Zuo Mo had not thought of this turtle shell that had been thrown into a corner of his ring. When he had been reforging the Black Heart Treasure Coins, he had felt that the talisman's abilities were wondrous but they lacked the power to deal a fatal blow.

Zuo Mo looked down on the Black Heart Treasure Coin for this weakness. Since he was going to reforge it, he naturally had to take the chance this so he searched for suitable materials in the ring.

When his gaze landed on this turtle shell, his eyes lit up.

The turtle shell gave off extremely weak shen power vibrations. This was something Zuo Mo had previously had a hard time detecting but now Zuo Mo immediately detected the extraordinary nature of the turtle shell. The thread of shen power was extremely weak but it was pure.

After thinking for a while, he remembered that he had gotten this turtle shell when he had been looting the Sun Shen Temple. He hurriedly went to the gold leaf to search for the origins of this turtle shell and was given a fright. This was the turtle shell that the Sun Crystal Tribe used for divination during ceremonies. It had been the turtle shell of the Sea Turtle Tribe's totem. After the

Sun Tribe had destroyed the Sea Turtle Tribe and their totem, this turtle shell had been given to the shen temple. .

The only damage on it were scorch marks caused by the shen fire of the sacrificial altar. Even though tens of thousands of years had passed, this turtle shell was otherwise undamaged. The Sea Turtle Tribe cultivated water-type shen power and after being forged in shen fire for countless years, the sun shen power had permeated every bit of it.

Water and fire had merged together in an unique fashion.

If he could have seen this strange method of fire and water together, Zuo Mo's [Li Water Sword Scripture] would have advanced several grades!

Each treasure coin was now blue with red on the inside, each textured with the pattern of the turtle shell. They dotted the turtle shell. The scorch marks on the turtle shell had disappeared and the shell itself had become as white as jade without any flaw.

Inside the turtle shell was a shallow puddle of crystal clear water that was like a mirror.

The tears of the mist people had been used here.

What was most unique was that there was a ring of sparks around each turtle coin. They were a miniaturized version of the Reversed Stellar Revolution.

Each of the turtle coins had a ring of sparks that revolved prettily on the surface of the turtle shell.

This was the first top tier talisman that Zuo Mo had gained!

It was not suitable to categorize this talisman using the normal grade ranking system. With the earth mo weapon as the starting point, the holy relict of an ancient tribe as the foundation, with yao arts used as adornment, with the mist people's tears as the lake, and forged using the forging methods of the xiuzhe. A talisman like this surpassed everything that Zuo Mo knew.

The moment that the talisman took form, Zuo Mo felt joyed.

At this time, black cloud gathered over head and lightning flashed.

Lightning struck down and the mountain above Zuo Mo's head turned to powder.

Another bolt of lightning came at Zuo Mo. A turtle coin suddenly flew from the water to the top of Zuo Mo's head. A suction force suddenly came from the red square hole.

The lightning immediately entered the square hole.

The turtle coin did not move at all, as though the lightning had

just been an illusion.

The black clouds overhead seemed to be infuriated. Lightning roared and came down towards the turtle coin above Zuo Mo's head.

As the thunder roared, the tortoiseshell patterns on the turtle shell slowly turned silver.

They were absorbing the lightning!

Chapter 672 – Return And Kill

Ji Zheng opened his eyes. His pale face had finally recovered some colour. The power of the lingdan circulated in his body. He had not wasted these few days of rest. However, he knew that the injury would not heal in this little time. The destructive ability of the shen techniques surpassed his imagination. Even when he thought of it now, he felt a thread of fear. If it wasn't for the Buddha Relic, it was very likely he would have died.

Shen power, as expected of shen power!

The events of the past suddenly floated into his mind. He couldn't help but sigh lightly.

But his dhyana heart was strong and knew of the importance of this information to the sect so the stray thoughts disappeared.

He turned and asked Hui Bao, “Can we catch them?”

Hui Bao said cautiously, “This one will try!”

The fight from ten days ago had frightened him half to death. He had not thought the fanxu level shishizu would be wounded. The power of the enemy was this unimaginable. He did not understand why such a powerful expert would still spend time and effort on learning unorthodox skills like concealment and fleeing.

Ji Zheng knew that Hui Bao did not have a full grasp of the

situation and did not lecture him. He nodded. “Try your best.”

After the elders of the sect came, even if Xiao Mo Ge could run to the ends of the world, they would have ways of finding him.

At this time, the black clouds that were gathering in the distance disturbed them.

“Someone is forging talismans?” Dai Tao looked at the inky black clouds in the distance and the dancing lightning with shock. Such a powerful presence meant that this talisman would be extraordinary.

Ji Zheng raised his head to look. “It’s them!”

Having fought against Zuo Mo, Ji Zheng immediately detected that familiar presence.

The direction where the black clouds were gathering was the same as where Xiao Mo Ge and the others had fled.

“This guy is so daring!” Dai Tao showed anger. He hadn’t thought that Xiao Mo Ge hadn’t just stayed rather than fled, and even had the gall to forge talismans near them!

So daring!

So daring!

Dai Tao was so angry he was trembling. It was the first time he had seen someone so arrogant. He didn't even try to flee when being chased by two fanxu and was publicly forging talismans nearby.

Talismans?

Under the pressure of absolute power, even the top talismans were of no use, much less talismans that were forged in a hurry. In his eyes, this was Xiao Mo Ge underestimating them!

Dai Tao turned to look at Ji Zheng.

Ji Zheng could see the Dai Tao's fury. His face was still as unaffected as granite. "Let's go see."

Dai Tao flew off first without another word.

Ji Zheng did not speak and followed closely behind. The two were wary of the trio but not afraid. In their view, Xiao Mo Ge and his group were able to wound Ji Zheng was just because the two of them had been careless.

If they were serious, Xiao Mo Ge's group wouldn't have had any chance at all!

Dai Tao held a low opinion of Ji Zheng requesting more support

from the sect. He did not think that Xiao Mo Ge could escape from their hands. Ji Zheng was wounded but Dai Tao who thought that he had seen what Xiao Mo Ge's group could do, he did not fear them.

If it wasn't that this was a great matter

Dai Tao actually did not want to attract too much attention. He was in fanxu but he wasn't from Xuan Kong Temple. The people in the sect could have their own thoughts about him. But, Xiao Mo Ge's dismissive attitude completely infuriated him.

————

If Little Mo Ge knew Dai Tao's thoughts, he would feel he was unjustly blamed.

When the last bolt of lightning entered the turtle coin, the clouds in the sky dissipated. The blue sky was clear and was left without any of the killing energy from just moments ago.

The turtle coin flew back into the pond. The seven turtle coins floated and moved on the surface of the water, creating sparks.

Having seen the shocking forging process, Ceng Lian'er looked curiously at the turtle coin talisman in Zuo Mo's hand and asked, "What talisman is this?"

Zuo Mo remembered that he hadn't given it a name. After some

thought, he decided. “Oh, it’s called the Little Mo Treasure Cup!”

He did not have to expend any effort to give such a simple and descriptive name. It could also satisfy his little sense of pride.

Ceng Lian’er’s surprise and anticipation was completely destroyed by this name.

Neither Zuo Mo or Ceng Lian’er would think of how much amazement [Xiao Mo Treasure Cup] would cause the world. Few people would ever learn of this name, its true name of [Little Mo Treasure Cup.]

The cheerful Zuo Mo did not know that the name he had just given the talisman would be changed by people in the future.

At this time, he was filled with joy and confidence. While he had not tested the power of the Little Mo Treasure Cup, he knew it would be extraordinary. However, the feeling of being connected to Little Mo Treasure Cup caused him to think of Lil’ Pagoda and lowered his mood.

But he quickly sorted out his emotions.

“Let’s go back and kill them!” Zuo Mo raised his head and said something frightening.

A Gui naturally would not object but unexpectedly, Ceng Lian’er did not object.

The cunning and clever Little Mo Ge naturally would not seek his own death. He had his own plans. While he had not seen the result of the battle that day, seeing that the enemy had not made a move these past few days, Zuo Mo immediately realized that Ji Zheng was wounded, and it was not a light injury.

Otherwise, they would not have remained silent in these last ten days.

Ji Zheng's injury caused Zuo Mo's thoughts to become active. The three of them had recovered, and a powerful talisman had been forged. It could be called their strongest moment. The enemy was at their weakest and this was a good chance.

While the result of the battle ten days ago was caused by the other underestimating them, it also showed that the three of them had a chance.

Zuo Mo knew as time went on and Ji Zheng's wounds healed their situation would turn for the worse!

If they retaliated now, while it was risky, there was also an opportunity!

A Gui would listen to Zuo Mo and Ceng Lian'er did not object so the three turned back towards Ji Zheng to kill.

But after they had flown out only a short distance, they saw Dai

Tao's group.

Dai Tao's eyes were keen. When he saw the trio, he first froze and then became furious. If he had felt that Xiao Mo Ge had dismissed them by forging talismans rather than fleeing, then Dai Tao was so angry he could only smile as he saw Xiao Mo Ge had returned!

When had fanxu xiuzhe been underestimated so?

Without a another word, he sped up and shot towards the trio. He was going to make the three understand the anger of a fanxu could burn anything!

The Five Element Manifestation Wheel came out!

“Xuan Kong Temple is still like this. They would make a fuss over any little matter.” Xue Dong's tone was slightly mocking. In this time, Xuan Kong Temple had attracted the gaze of the entire xiuzhe world. The battle between Xiao Mo Ge and Jiang Zhe was also watched in the xiuzhe world.

However, what Xue Dong was talking about was not that.

Kun Lun's spies were high in the ranks and Xuan Kong Temple did not intend to conceal the matter so Kun Lun had received the information quickly.

“I know a bit about this.” Lin Qian felt slightly heavy. He had previously reviewed the cases of ancient tribe descendants being exterminated in the last few hundred years, and knew more than Xue Dong.

Xue Dong turned in curiosity. Lin Qian was about to speak when a disciple sudden came in. “Eldest Shixiong, the sect leader is looking for you!”

Xue Dong immediately understood that the matter was not as simple as he thought.

Lin Qian nodded at Xue Dong before leaving with this disciple

When he stepped into the large hall, Lin Qian stopped breathing. Inside the large hall, almost all the sect elders were present. Even the elders that had not shown themselves for many years were in attendance.

It was the first time Lin Qian had seen a scene like this in his lifetime.

The gazes of the elders landed on Lin Qian’s person as he entered. Many elders gave small smiles of acknowledgement. Lin Qian was humble, talented, and well-liked by the elders. Everyone understood the next sect leader would definitely be Lin Qian.

These elders had great status, but their descendants and disciples

would need to rely on Lin Qian's care. No one was willing to be at odds with Lin Qian.

The sect leader seemed to know that Lin Qian had arrived though his eyes were closed. His strong eyebrows twitched and he opened his eyes. He said slowly, "Everyone knows the situation. I have called everyone here to discuss Kun Lun sect's stance on this issue."

The sect leader's authority in Kun Lun was unquestionable.

In front of the sect leader, those rebellious elders didn't dare to breathe loudly.

Moments later, an elder started the discussion, "In the past, our reputation was left in disgrace and we didn't obtain a thing. Our development of shen power has been pretty good and if we spend some more time, we will definitely learn some mysteries of shen power"

An elder objected at this time, "Shen power has developed but it is not something we can complete in a day. Right now, we are searching blindly and only have limited examples. If we can obtain"

The two were like sparks that were thrown into a barrel of dynamite. The hall descended into noise.

The sect leader kept his eyes down and half-lidded. He allowed

everyone to argue as though he had fallen asleep.

Gradually, the camps between the crowd became clear. The majority of elders supported interfering in Xuan Kong Temple's affair.

Seeing the clear attitudes, they closed their mouths. The hall became silent again.

Only after the group finished did the sect leader seem to wake up and open his eyes. He said coolly, "Since you have reached a consensus, then do this. However, we cannot copy Xuan Kong Temple. We will only send one fanxu elder, and five yuanying elders. It would be good to bring along more disciples. If young people do not get experience, they cannot become accomplished."

"By the sect leader's order!' The elders bowed.

The way the sect leader handled the discussion and made a decision today had broadened Lin Qian's vision. The sect leader had only said two sentences today but no one was able to object.

Lin Qian seemed to understand.

After the meeting ended, the sect leader did not find Lin Qian for a private discussion. It looked like a minor meeting but Lin Qian had learned a lot. A sect leader needed to unite the benefits of the majority and not use his status to force others.

Having just walked out, Lin Qian saw a person hurry over.

Lin Qian stopped walking. The incomer was the vice hall master Zhong Bao of Listening Wind Hall. He definitely had news. Listening Wind Hall was the intelligence division of Kun Lun. It held a reputation and status in the xiuzhe world as one of the best intelligence groups. The number of tentacles it had in all areas of the three territories far surpassed people's imaginations.

“What is it?” Lin Qian asked.

Zhong Bao respectfully reported, “It is about Wei Sheng.”

“Wei Sheng!” Lin Qian's eyes flickered. A figure that was as determined and steely as a sword appeared in his mind. His eyes brightened!

Chapter 673 – Do Not Touch

Ceng Lian'er was the first to act against the quick Five Element Manifestation Wheel.

With one toss, she threw out three Gold Star Silver Thread Beads!

The thumb-sized Golden Star Silver Thread Beads transformed into balls of blood when they left her hand. The sticky blood twisted as it flew through the air and a strong tang of blood immediately filled the area. Inside the each ball of blood, there was blood coloured lightning that floated and flickered and little golden flame lotuses.

Dai Tai snorted coldly and his eyes became more murderous.

In his eyes, he wouldn't need any power to deal with a few Blood Thunder Beads.

Dhyana spells were the natural bane of blood type mo skills. While Dai Tao was not a traditionally trained Xuan Kong Temple disciple, but he had been with the temple very long and almost all the temple records in the were available to him. How could he not know dhyana spells?

He chanted solemnly as his hands moved to activate a dhyana spell.

The shadowy figure of a buddha flew out of the Five Element Manifestation Wheel and took form. She was dressed in white robes, a red mole between her brows, and held a willow branch, as she descended her feet landed on a white lotus. She smiled and lifted the willow branch in her hand. Several drops of dew from the willow branch flew into a ball of blood.

The blood ball roiled violently like a furious wild beast and continued flying forward.

Dai Tao was slightly shocked. It had not been defeated?

The white buddha raised the willow branch in her hand again. Several more drops of dew flowed along the tender branch and shot off towards the balls of blood.

Boom-oom-oom!

The balls of blood hadn't dissolved like Dai Tao had expected, instead the three balls of blood in the air exploded!

Caught off guard, Dai Tao was immediately swallowed by the bloody mist.

Boom boom boom!

The lightning balls that floated inside the wave of blood flew towards Dai Tao like sharks that had smelled blood. The lightning balls exploded in the air and formed an electrical net that went to

envelope him. Those nondescript little golden flames were masked by the blinding light of the lightning.

The fast beating of thunder in the blood mist sounded like fireworks.

Dai Tao was left extremely disheveled.

But lightning of this degree was unable to harm him. But the sheer amount of plasma lightning had surprised him. He hurriedly moved, the Five Element Manifestation Wheel and released a light that covered him. While the lightning caused the light shield to shake, it was unable to cause him actual harm.

Such an embarrassment!

Dai Tao's face was flushed red. A fanxu was forced to such a degree by a general level, such a humiliation! And the other hadn't even used shen power!

The angry Dai Tao directed the white-robed Buddha to deflect the lightning.

Counter-attack! He had to retaliate!

He decided that he would not hold back and immediately use a killing move, not giving them any chance at all!

Yet Dai Tao did not notice those hidden little lotus flowers of flame until the flowers of fire had actually burned through the light shield cast by the Five Element Manifestation Wheel!

Dai Tao's expression froze on his face.

How was it possible?

The Five Element Manifestation Wheel was an eighth-grade talisman! What kind of fire was this?

Gritting his teeth, the Five Element Manifestation Wheel above Dai Tao's head moved again. A dignified figure of a buddha appeared, this time they were sitting on a red lotus. The red lotus Buddha pointed, and all of the gold flames flew towards the red lotus under him like birds returning to the nest.

In a blink, the red lotus was covered in the gold flames.

Such a malicious flame!

Dai Tao immediately discovered that these gold flames were difficult to absorb. His red lotus buddha had the ability to absorb all kinds of fire but this time, it was unable to absorb the gold flames.

Was this shen fire?

When the thought appeared in his mind, his pupils contracted. These silent gold flames should be shen fire!

Dai Tao felt as though he was going to go crazy soon!

The two buddhas summoned by the Five Element Manifestation Wheel were unable to defeat the other's blood thunder beads.

The enemy was more difficult to handle than he had imagined. Dai Tao calmed down after encountering such a hindrance. It seemed that Ji Zheng Shixiong's injury had not been an accident. These three were stronger than he had expected. If he was careless, he might actually lose.

He held his hand up into the air.

The Five Element Manifestation Wheel slowly spun and under the five colored light, the flames and lightning lights suddenly stilled. The five colored light flowed, the flames and lightning immediately divided, one into two, two into four

They became smaller and smaller until they shattered and disappeared.

Zuo Mo had not hoped that he could defeat Dai Tao with three Gold Star Silver Thread Beads. While Dai Tao was still feeling troubled by the Sun Shen Fire, the second wave of attack by the trio arrived!

The second to attack was A Gui. Purple energy flashed through her eyes and she slammed her hand towards Dai Tao.

At this time, the five colored light of the Five Element Manifestation Wheel was covering Dai Tao.

The five colored lights moved constantly. A Gui's blow which never had never missed was deflected and brushed against the five colored pillar of light. It shot off and entered the ground below Dai Tao, silently creating a ten zhang hole.

Dai Tao's expression was calm but he was astounded inside. While A Gui's blow had been deflected, his Five Element Manifestation Realm still shook.

At this time, he did not dare to be careless. His Five Element Manifestation Wheel was being pushed to its limits. Within the five colored pillar of light, five buddhas of different colors gradually appeared and slowly moved with the pillar of light.

The trio felt a strong suction force come from the Five Element Manifestation Wheel. A sticky power was furiously pulling them towards the five colored light.

The air seemed to become solidified and the three seemed to be trapped in a bog.

When a fanxu xiuzhe attacked at full power, the trio immediately felt the pressure increase, pressure that came from all directions

and was unable to be blocked.

That time they had fought Ji Zheng, Ji Zheng had been the reactive party the entire time and was suppressed by the three. Ji Zheng's attention had been focused on how to resolve the three's attacks.

But Dai Tao had rapidly calmed down from his rage and attacked at full power, the three immediately felt the difference.

Terrifying pressure came from all directions and caused them to feel it was inescapable.

Absolute power!

Zuo Mo quickly reacted and knew that this could not continue. The power in the air around them was increasing. If they did not act, in the end, just the twisting power in the air would tear them to pieces!

Taking a deep breath, Zuo Mo brought out the Little Mo Treasure Cup.

His expression was solemn and when he was about to attempt to activate it, the shen power inside his body suddenly flooded uncontrollably into the Little Mo Treasure Cup. Zuo Mo's mind went blank from surprise.

Ding!

A turtle coin on the shell suddenly became bright.

It jumped off the water's surface, turned into a silver light, and flew towards Dai Tao's figure inside the five colored pillar of light.

“Good attack!” Dai Tao's hairs suddenly stood on end. Without even thinking, he shouted and channeled the ling power in his body to its limits.

The Five Element Manifestation Wheel above his head suddenly accelerated in its rotation. The space within ten li of this place started to twist!

The buddhas within the pillar were all chanting, each took up different positions and expressions: glaring angrily, smiling, dignified, or solemn

Numerous bright sutra characters floated on the surface of the pillar of light.

The silver light was like a silver arrow.

The silver arrow did not seem to be affected by the twisting of space. In the moment it touched the surface of the pillar, all of the sutra characters turned bright. The five buddhas acted at the same time and singing rang out over the land!

Yet this silver light seemed to have shot into glass.

Cling!

The clear sound was unusually dissonant when heard with the buddhist song.

The song suddenly stopped.

The silver light that entered the pillar seemed to have entered sticky glue and drastically slowed down.

Dai Tao finally saw that this silver light was a treasure coin that was round on the outside, and square on the inside, covered in silver etchings.

Sparks would come out of the treasure coin and then extinguish within the pillar of light.

Strange!

Dai Tao's expression changed. The sparks were being destroyed but the pillar of light from the Five Element Manifestation Wheel was also dimming. At this time, the clear water inside the cup that Zuo Mo held shook slightly and it rippled.

As the ripple travelled through the air it caused the five colored pillar of light rippled as though it was water. The buddhas within

the pillar of light wavered and showed signs of instability.

Dai Tao's heart jumped!

In an instant, the ripples had caused their positions to be reversed.

What kind of talisman was this?

A hint of terror flashed through Dai Tao's eyes.

Ji Zheng who had been at the back changed expression. Not good!

If terror rose in Dai Tao's mind it would disrupt his dhyana heart, and would create a weakness in the pillar of light. Ji Zheng had not thought that the power of these three would have increased so much in just ten days. He finally realized that they had still underestimated the three!

Ji Zheng disregarded the wounds on his body. A gold colour rose on his face. His fingers flickered and pointed towards the turtle coin in the pillar of light.

Boom!

This minute action caused a great thunderous sound!

[Dhyana Sound Thunder Finger]!

Yet the moment a weakness appeared in Dai Tao's mind, the turtle coin in the pillar of light disappeared.

Dai Tao's right arm suddenly exploded.

The bright lightning immediately covered Dai Tao.

Almost at the same time that the terrifying power brushed against Dai Tao's body it had collided with a nearby mountain peak. The little mountain exploded.

Zuo Mo woke up from his stupor. The shen power inside his body had all been wrung out. He suddenly thought of an object and shoved a Sun seed into his mouth. Immediately, the pure and burning shen power turned into a flow into his body.

Zuo Mo was overjoyed. The Sun Fruit seed was as powerful as expected!

He was about to activate the Little Mo Treasure Cup when his expression changed drastically and he shouted, "Run!"

The three were in sync and before he finished shouting, A Gui and Ceng Lian'er had retreated dozens of zhang.

"I will kill you! I will kill you!"

Dai Tao shouted madly. What came from behind them was a tsunami of terrifying ling power vibrations!

Rocks and rivers floated up into the air, leaving gravity and ground behind.

Zuo Mo sprinted as he glanced back. Dai Tai's entire body was burnt black and gave off black smoke. His hair was loose and his right shoulder was a mangled mess of blood and flesh. But at this time, Dai Tai's eyes were full of murderousness!

He raised his left hand. Astounding ling power continued to gather towards his left hand!

The terrifying ling power vibrations were like a wall of wind. The terrifying power that induced hopelessness continued to gather.

Zuo Mo's scalp felt numb .He hated that he didn't have two more legs. All the power he had, including his shen power, was used to flee for his life!

A Gui and Ceng Lian'er also recognized the danger and furiously flew forward!

Zuo Mo flew so hard that his tendons bulged and his face was twisted.

The behind of a fanxu should not be touched! Should not be touched!

Chapter 674 – Wei Sheng's Sword Oath

“Shidi!” Ji Zheng’s shout was like spring thunder. He used a secret Xuan Kong Temple technique, [Nirvana Shout]. Ji Zheng had seen something was not right. Dai Tao was not originally from Xuan Kong Temple and his foundation was much weaker compared to Ji Zheng. His dhyana heart was not as stable, and if Ji Zheng had allowed him to lose control any further, his mind would be damaged. It would definitely cause a permanent weakness and he would have greater difficulty progressing in his cultivation in the future.

The enraged Dai Tao’s figure suddenly stilled. His bloodshot eyes recovered some clarity.

Moments later, Dai Tao became completely calm and the blood in his eyes retreated.

“Many thanks, Shixiong!” Dai Tao said gratefully. If he had fallen to his mental demon then, then it would cause great trouble in the future.

Ji Zheng shook his head. “We are of the same sect, there’s no need to be polite.”

His gaze turned in the direction the three had disappeared into. His tone was unprecedentedly grave. “These three are powerful and each of them is almost comparable to a fanxu. They work together well, are cunning, and also have a great treasure. They will not be easy to deal with.”

Dai Tao felt fear. “That talisman Xiao Mo Ge had was very powerful! My Five Element Manifestation Wheel could not stop it at all!”

That turtle coin had passed through his body, disappeared into the distance, and returned to the treasure cup.

Dai Tao was an unlucky one. With his history as a roaming xiu, his Five Element Manifestation Wheel was based in the five elements. If he had encountered another talisman, it would definitely not have been this unfavorable. The seven turtle coins had been made using the Black-heart Treasure Coins, which already had the ability to reverse yinyang and the five elements and was a bane of the Five Element Manifestation Wheel, a natural counter.

Ji Zheng nodded. “It really is a great treasure.”

Dai Tao grimaced. “Our boat upturned in shallow water this time. We have been pushed so far by these three younger ones.”

Ji Zheng did not feel anything and said solemnly, “It is just the strength of shen power. I have gained some understanding of shen power after fighting these few days.”

Dai Tao paused and then he pondered it. He said, “After Shixiong mentioned this, I feel that shen power is not as incomprehensible as before but I still lacks understanding about several key parts. If we can solve them, then it will naturally come.”

Dai Tao's tone was slightly excited. The fight these past days had allowed him to experience the power of shen power. It was stronger than ling power.

Those that could enter fanxu were all extremely intelligent. The four great sects had studied shen power for thousands of years, and they had accumulated far more than what normal sect disciples could imagine.

After fighting with Zuo Mo several times, both had begun to grasp a few things.

Their low morale suddenly rose. If they could comprehend shen power, any price was worth it. They had spent a long time at the fanxu level and every bit of progression was difficult. If they could comprehend shen power, their strength would skyrocket.

There was nothing more attractive than this.

"But we are both wounded and our power is hampered." Ji Zheng's tone was calm.

Dai Tao gritted, "Those three are too cunning! However, after all the sect elders arrive, they won't be able to escape!"

"There may not be enough time." A hint of worry flashed across Ji Zheng's eyes.

“Why does Shixiong say this?” Dai Tao stilled.

“The effects of that past incident was significant and the other three sects will not ignore this incident,” Ji Zheng said gravely. “I’m afraid that their people have already started to move.”

“Then” Dai Tao was astounded. If the other three also came in, the situation would immediately become complex.

“We cannot wait for the sect elders,” Ji Zheng said decisively. “Even if our cultivations will be affected, we cannot let these three escape.”

Dai Tao thought for a moment and then suddenly said, “I have an idea.”

Seeing Ji Zheng turn to look at him, Dai Tao said, “These three are troublesome, but if we are careful, they will not be able to injure us.”

Dai Tao’s words were right. Ji Zheng did not speak and waited for his next words.

“What we want is just the method of shen power cultivation. If that’s the case, then why don’t we spar with them?” Dai Tao said what he thought.

“Spar?” Ji Zheng stilled.

“Every day we challenge them to battle, do not aim to win or lose. Using fighting to comprehend shen power and comprehend it before the other sects arrive. That way, even if our sect is not the winner in the end, we will already understand the mysteries of shen power.” Dai Tao had an excited expression.

When he thought about comprehending shen power, his heart burned hotter.

Ji Zheng was silent for a moment before raising his head. “Good!”

Dai Tao’s suggestion was plausible.

The two were both people that were extremely confident in themselves. They were confident they could comprehend shen power.

The two exchanged a look and chased in the direction that Zuo Mo and the others had disappeared in.

Almost all the people of the mo territories were interested in the xui-zhe-mo battle that was about to occur. The attention that Wei Sheng received was reduced compared to before.

However, Wei Sheng seemed to not have heard the news. He still cultivated diligently everyday and in his spare time, he would continue to challenge mo experts.

While the mo did not like Wei Sheng and everyone wanted a mo expert to tear him to pieces, he was not harassed in any way.

Wei Sheng used his sword to win the respect of mo.

In the eyes of mo, only a honest victory would be a victory against such a honorable and respected opponent.

Many businesses even came forward. They were willing to provide Wei Sheng with the best rooms and the best food. Every place that Wei Sheng stayed would quickly become famous. This was all about mobei!

If Little Mo Ge was here, he would definitely take the chance to make it rich. Was it so easy to win Eldest Shixiong's patronage? There should be a few auctions so that he could wring out every last mobei!

Of course, Wei Sheng did not have such entrepreneurial abilities. In truth, if it was not for the convenience, he would have rather stayed in the empty and vast mountain valleys.

The evening came. There was a challenge in three days. His opponent was a famed expert in this jie.

Wei Sheng was meditating with his legs folded up in the lotus position, the black sword by his side. There was no joy or sorrow on his face. He almost never relaxed. Almost every drip and drop of time was used on his cultivation as though he was a diligent dhyana xiu.

Suddenly, Wei Sheng opened his eyes in the dark.

“Since you have come, why hide?” Wei Sheng said coolly.

“As expected of Brother Wei Sheng that even Eldest Shixiong praises!” A figure appeared in a ripple from the space in front of Wei Sheng.

The newcomer was a woman dressed in silk and feathers. Her eyes were bright, her teeth white but Wei Sheng’s gaze landed on a little row of swords at her waist.

Wei Sheng’s gaze focused. “Kun Lun!”

The female bowed. “Kun Lun’s Da Ling Feng greets Brother Wei Sheng! Brother Wei Sheng is peerless in courage and this female admires you for entering the mo territories and winning.”

Wei Sheng’s expression became normal. “Why has Miss Da come to see me?”

There was a small smile on Da Ling Feng’s face. “Your sect is related to the fall of Bright Wave Jie. Brother Wei, please come

with me to explain the misunderstanding.”

Bright Wave Jie had fallen!

Wei Sheng’s heart shook but after all the fighting in this recent while, his sword heart had become even stronger. There was no expression on his face. “Oh, you should speak to the sect leader regarding matters of the sect. Why did Miss Da come so far to ask Wei?”

When he said this, Wei Sheng realized, his eyes lit up and became as sharp as a sword. He looked directly at Da Ling Feng, “Are the sect leader and the shishu no longer present?”

Da Ling Feng shook her head. “This female does not know of that. Brother Wei will naturally know when you return to the sect with me.”

Wei Sheng was not as cunning as Zuo Mo but he was not stupid. He was not sure about Wu Kong Sword Sect but in a few seconds, he had completely understood why Da Ling Feng was here. There was only one possibility when Kun Lun would come to the mo territories to “invite” him back!

The sect had split from Kun Lun!

Thinking about what Da Ling Feng had just said, Bright Wave Jie had fallen, was it

Sect Leader, Shibo, Shishu they most likely

Wei Sheng's body shook. A wave of sorrow and grief rose. His eyes immediately turned red.

What did their sect have to do with the fall of Bright Wave Jie? These words gave off a thick scent of conspiracy. Kun Lun's enmity was evident! Wei Sheng understood that Da Ling Feng had not come to "invite" him but capture him.

Wei Sheng slowly stood. His reddened eyes stared at Da Ling Feng. His voice was hoarse as he said, emphasizing each word.

"If my sect's elders met misfortune because of Kun Lun then I, Wei Sheng, swear by the sword to destroy Kun Lun!"

The great sorrow mixed with hatred hit Da Ling Feng's mind like a hammer. Da Ling Feng's presence was stolen, her face paled, and she reflexively took a step back.

But she immediately reacted and raged, "Wei Sheng, you dare! Dare to slight my Kun Lun! It seems that you have been secretly colluding with the yao!"

Colluding with the yaomo!

That was Kun Lun's excuse

Wei Sheng's sorrow increased.

Da Ling Feng's eyes were dismissive as she said proudly, "My Kun Lun is a righteous and good sect, is it one that a lowly fighter like you can slander? Hmph! Don't think that because you can show off in the mo territories that you can challenge my Kun Lun. Today, I will let you see why my Kun Lun"

Da Ling Feng's words suddenly stopped.

Because the edge of Wei Sheng's sword was against her throat.

While she was speaking, Wei Sheng's void sword essence had permeated the entire room. Every inch of space was under the control of his void sword essence.

Da Ling Feng's body was paralyzed and her face was ashen. There was only one thought in her mind.

He actually attacked her!

He dared to actually attack!

He dared to attack Kun Lun!

The iciness and brutality of the black sword caused her hairs to stand on end and fear to move.

“I usually do not like to fight women.” Wei Sheng’s deep voice echoed in the room.

Da Ling Feng relaxed slightly. A hand suddenly removed the row of little swords at her waist.

“For people like you to use the sword, it is a humiliation to the sword.”

The bone-aching coldness at her neck disappeared. Da Ling Feng relaxed. Before she could speak, an extremely thin sword essence burrowed into her body. This sword essence was extremely strange. Once it entered her body, it disappeared.

Her face suddenly turned white. Her ling power seemed to have suddenly disappeared.

Her mind blanked.

Her cultivation had been destroyed!

“Return and tell Lin Qian that I will come find him.”

In the darkness, Da Ling Feng could not see Wei Sheng’s face but every one of Wei Sheng’s words were clear on her mind as though they were carved by his sword.

Da Ling Feng stumbled into the darkness.

In the room, Wei Sheng gripped the black sword until his fingers turned white.

The tears could not be suppressed and continued to flow.

Chapter 675 – “Disheveled”

Zuo Mo felt it was strange.

The two old thieving baldies kept coming to challenge, no, they were fanxu experts, you could not use the term challenge for fights with little fish like Zuo Mo.

The two old thieving baldies became glue and would not let them rest. They would fight three to five rounds every day, it was as though Zuo Mo owed them mo bei.

Zuo Mo did not know what these two old thieving baldies intended but this was also to his own aims. His goal was to lure the two old thieving baldies away to create opportunities for Gongsun Cha and Bie Han. Zuo Mo had been worried that these two would not fall for it and return to help Jiang Zhe.

Since they wanted to fight, then he would oblige!

The more he fought, the stranger Zuo Mo felt. He found free time and went into the sea of consciousness to as Pu Yao.

“They want to use you to comprehend shen power.” With how cunning Pu Yao was, he saw the two’s intentions with a glance.

Zuo Mo finally realized and then laughed darkly.

Little Mo Ge didn't just know shen power. Of the trio, only A Gui was limited to shen power. Zuo Mo and Ceng Lian'er both knew mo skills, and if this was any other time, they would not dare to use mo skills to face the two fanxu thieving baldies. However, at present, the enemy was wounded and their power was reduced. They could manage it.

For a greedy person like Little Mo that would wring out benefits even when there weren't any. Little Mo Ge wouldn't be Little Mo Ge If he didn't take advantage of those that came to him!

Heavenly, where would he go to find two fanxu to spar with him for free!

If he pass on such a good opportunity, he would be struck by lightning!

Therefore, Ji Zheng and Dai Tao quickly found that the number of times Xiao Mo Ge came to challenge them increased.

The two were overjoyed. Of the trio, Xiao Mo Ge's shen power was the strongest and the purest. Fight? The two accepted happily.

But they quickly detected something was wrong.

Both Ceng Lian'er and Xiao Mo Ge did not use shen power no matter what happened. It would have been okay if that was just it. Those that were in fanxu did not lack patience.

The two quickly changed their strategy and started to drag out the fights.

After you finish are using your mo skills, I don't believe you won't use shen power!

Consequently, a tragedy occurred.

After fighting for an hour, and seeing Xiao Mo Ge's Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus showed signs of fatigue, the two were slightly tired but they were filled with joy.

Boy! You're done! Shen power, let it out!

Then Little Mo Ge showed them two rows of his snowy white teeth.

Yao arts!

From little yao arts to [Little Thousand Leaf Hands] to the [Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art]. He seemed to fire off fireworks that dazzled the duo. He even brought out his half-learned [South Sky Arrow Art] and [Grey Scar Art] for a spin.

The two suddenly seemed to remember that the sect's dossier on Xiao Mo Ge had said this guy knew some yao arts.

However, was this really considered only knowing some?

The two were unprepared. Zuo Mo took advantage of this rare moment and he outperformed himself. He continued for several hours until he used almost all the yao arts he knew before he stopped.

Even though the two were fanxu, they had started to pant!

Dai Tao wiped the sweat off his forehead and said breathily, “Keep him here, we cannot let him escape, otherwise, all that effort would be for nothing!”

Ji Zheng’s breathing was heavy. He was intending to nod when Xiao Mo Ge unexpectedly charged again.

The two forced themselves to be alert and was filled with anticipation!

Shen power!

Was it about to start?

Zuo Mo threw out a handful of yin fire beads and then it was followed by a dozen [Sky Glass Wave], then sound type spells that came like the rain.

The two were completely stunned!

Then Xiao Mo Ge drew a flying sword from somewhere and started to perform sword scriptures. Holy, there was also sword essence!

Ji Zheng and Dai Tao were completely stupefied. Their eyes were dazed and unfocused.

They could understand him knowing yao arts. In the minds of xiuzhe, yao and mo were one and the same. It was not strange for a mo to know yao arts. But when did mo know xiuzhe spells? From dhyana xiu to seal xiu to sword xiu, and even more exaggerated, sword essence!

A pure sword essence!

Are you a spy from Kun Lun?

At the start, Zuo Mo had been slightly rusty and clumsy. It had been too long since he used a flying sword. But he quickly familiarized himself and the, now, unfamiliar sword scriptures he had used floated into his mind.

With Zuo Mo's present knowledge and experience, of course it was different when he thought of these spells again.

The power of [Li Water Sword Scripture] skyrocketed. On a high, Zuo Mo forgot himself. At the start, he still followed the moves, and then he started to move as he pleased.

[Li Water Sword Scripture] was just a third-grade sword scripture, and no matter what, it could not threaten fanxu. But as Zuo Mo swung as he wished, it surpassed the limits of [Li Water Sword Scripture]. His sword essence changed and became even deeper.

Yet no matter how Zuo Mo transformed, his cultivation of sword scriptures was too shallow and he could not advance and comprehend much in a day. The pressure he could put on the duo was limited.

He could not pose a real danger to Ji Zheng and Dai Tao, but they also could not threaten Zuo Mo.

The two felt this was a torture. They almost counted the seconds as they forced themselves to endure.

As the power of Zuo Mo's spells weakened, and his ling power showed clear signs of being drained, the two almost cried from joy.

Without needed to talk, the two went forward in preparing to keep Xiao Mo Ge here. If you don't use shen power, what do you use?

Little Mo Ge showed his snowy-white teeth in a grin again. At the same time, he threw a Sun seed into his mouth!

A rush of shen power circulated in his body. The shen power quickly turned into the three powers!

Before, it would take Zuo Mo time to turn shen power into the three powers but as his understanding of shen power had increased, this process became so brief it was almost instant.

His three powers became full again!

Little Mo Ge attacked again.

Again!

————

Li Xian Er finished looking at the paper crane that the sect had sent and great waves formed inside.

Much of the content on the paper cranes was astounding. Li Xian Er could be said to have experienced much but the contents of the paper crane still brought her great shock. At the end of the message, Grandfather had used a very stern tone to tell her to take the people with her. She alone was responsible for catching Xiao Mo Ge and his group, at any cost.

She had enough people. In order to protect her on this trip, Grandfather had selected elite guards. While there were no fanxu, there were many yuanying.

She knew the importance of this matter to Tian Huan so she

immediately made a decision.

“You have to leave?” Xi was extremely shocked. He did not disguise the strong reluctance on his face.

“Yes, because of a very important matter. My apologies! Please bid farewell to Marshal Di on my behalf, I thank Marshal Di’s for his great hospitality these recent days.” Li Xian Er’s expression was sincere. “Also, thank you to, Big Brother Xi, without Big Brother Xi taking this little sister to play, this little sister would have been unable to see much of the scenery. Big Brother Xi, if you have spare time in the future, remember to come visit Tian Huan and this little sister will also have a chance to enjoy being the guide.”

Xi was disappointed but he quickly recovered. A warm smile came back to his face. “I will definitely visit in the future. Sister Xian Er, are you returning to Tian Huan?”

Li Xian Er shook her head. “This matter is in the mo territories.”

Xi’s eyes lit up. “Oh, mo territories? Then this brother has to take responsibility! The present mo territories are chaotic and unsafe. Sister Xian Er, give this one a chance to enjoy acting as protector!”

Xi’s tone was half serious and half joking.

Li Xian Er pondered this and then said with a wide smile, “Then

this little sister will thank Big Brother Xi. As long as it doesn't disrupt Big Brother Xi's work!"

"I don't have any work!" Xi smiled and said.

Seeing Li Xian Er was in a hurry, Xi did not dither. He reported this to Marshal Di. Marshal Di did not stop him and picked several experts to go along which caused Xi great joy.

"Idiot!" Lin Qian showed rare anger. His expression was dark. The disciples in the surroundings did not dare to breathe.

"Why did you act on your own rather than wait for orders from the sect?" Lin Qian's tone was murderous and his eyes as sharp as a sword. "And using such a stupid method! Do you not have brains? You startled him, stupid!"

The disciples trembled, especially the disciple that was responsible for the matters in the mo territories now had an ashen face. It was the first time they had seen Eldest Shixiong so angry. Eldest Shixiong was usually gentlemanly and warm to others, and almost never spoke heavily. This time, he was extremely angry!

Da Ling Feng's face was ashen white, her eyes filled with terror and hopelessness.

She had originally wanted to return the sect to cry and ask for

help. But who knew that when she returned, Eldest Shixiong gave her a scolding. She looked dazedly at the eldest shixiong she revered and couldn't believe her eyes.

Lin Qian was unaffected by the terror and hopelessness in Da Ling Feng's eyes. He said coldly, "Tell me everything that happened and do not hide anything."

Da Ling Feng trembled and narrated everything, even the message that Wei Sheng had told her to tell Lin Qian. Lin Qian asked about a few details but she was unable to answer them.

After hearing this, Lin Qian did not speak and reached out to touch Da Ling Feng's wrist.

Moments later, he stood and ordered, "Send her to Han Shigu and ask Han Shigu to see if there are any solutions."

At this time, Da Ling Feng who was on the verge of a breakdown started to cry. The disciples in the surroundings all were sad.

Two disciples carried Da Ling Feng away. Lin Qian looked around and said loudly, "I know that some of you think I was unsympathetic but listen well. We must treat the orders of the sect with the utmost attention. I will pursue anyone that disobeys orders and acts on their own!"

The disciples all shook. "Yes!"

After the disciples left, Xue Dong couldn't help but shake his head. "Stupid to the utmost! Extremely stupid! This group is used to being arrogant. I hadn't thought that they would also be the same when they went out into the world. Did she think that she was in Kun Lun Realm!"

Lin Qian grimaced. "It has been peaceful for too long. It is expected that the sect has become proud."

"That's true." Xue Dong clearly had no interest to discuss this matter deeply. He then asked, "You seem to be very wary of that Wei Sheng!"

"Not very, extremely wary!" Lin Qian corrected seriously.

Xue Dong was slightly surprised. "I really am interested in seeing this person you respect so much. Xiao Mo Ge and Wei Sheng, two strong people have appeared. This world is more and more interesting!"

Lin Qian's expression was grave. "Wei Sheng cannot be left alive!"

Xue Dong jumped in fright and asked in surprise. "You don't have to exaggerate!"

"I have a feeling that if Wei Sheng does not die, he will become a great threat to our Kun Lun." Lin Qian's eyes were murderous as he said, "I do not want to leave loose ends."

Xue Dong tsked. “It is a pity that there will be one less thing that I want to see. Because of you people, this world is becoming less interesting.”

“Being bored is better than losing your life.” Lin Qian glanced at Xue Dong and said.

Chapter 676 – Cunning Killing Move

Gongsun Cha looked at the battalion in the distance and smiled like usual. Beside him, the gazes of the other commanders were not as friendly and their expressions were murderous.

Jiang Zhe!

This name had become famed in the world. If this was any other person, they would be nervous and intimidated as though it was a great enemy. But Gongsun Cha did not feel very much. The only thought that Gongsun Cha could connect to Jiang Zhe was Feng Yue's battalion, that Xuan Kong battalion they had killed many battles ago.

In his eyes, Xuan Kong Temple had been their enemy since long ago. The difference of facing Feng Yue or Jiang Zhe was not large. In any case, they were people he had to defeat. Even though he knew that the enemy would be hard to defeat, he was not nervous.

Unlike other battle generals his journey of growth was marred in blood and death, a cruel history of battle!

Little Miss who had created a path of survival with slaughter had a steel will under that bashful appearance.

There was only excitement.

That excitement of being able to find an equal to fight with rippled

through his body.

In this fight, what kind of surprise will his opponent give him?

In the eyes that were as clear as that of a neighbor's boy, a eerie light that was called insanity flashed.

The defense line that Jiang Zhe had set up was almost perfect. While some places appeared rush, the entire defensive line had been established. Even the incomplete parts looked more like traps than openings. They did not affect the overall state at all.

Of course, absolute perfection did not really exist in the world.

Both Jiang Zhe and Gongsun Cha knew this.

Gongsun Cha knew his advantages and disadvantages. They had low manpower but their mobility was high. Vermillion Bird Camp's equipment had always been the best of all those under Zuo Mo's command.

Jiang Zhe had more people and a secure defense line, but the defense line was vast. This meant that their forces were spread thin and that Gongsun Cha had many places to target for an attack.

Jiang Zhe was strong but the battle generals under him were likely less capable. How well they could follow Jiang Zhe's plan was something that had to be tested.

Also, Jiang Zhe had a great disadvantage. They were fighting on enemy territory. The unfamiliar environment and the rebellious mo were all factors that were enough to be fatal.

The hidden road to Cold Mountain Jie was just example of this!

Gongsun Cha did not object to using the same advantage twice.

He did not hurry to attack but started to search for guides that were familiar with the local terrain.

————

Jiang Zhe listened to the reports from his subordinates with an unchanging expression.

Ever since the enemy had orchestrated the wave of attacks from the shadows, Jiang Zhe knew that this fight would be harder than he had imagined. The mastermind had caught their greatest weakness, and it was a weakness that could not be avoided.

If there was ten more years, this weakness would not exist.

But there was no maybes in war.

He did not agree with the enmity Xuan Kong Temple held towards the mo but he did not have any power to speak against

this. While he had status in the sect, his status was not enough for him to influence the decision of the sect on a question like this.

What he could do was fulfill his duties.

“Send the order down, every battalion has to hold their position and not act without orders.” Jiang Zhe ordered without hesitation.

Regardless of whether if the other was purposefully misleading them or if things were really as they appeared, Jiang Zhe would not change because he had confidence in the defense line he had set up.

When Jiang Zhe had been setting up the defense line, many of Xuan Kong Temple had opposed it. It was hard for them to accept acting defensively. What did the great Xuan Kong Temple acting defensively against a little Mo faction? While they had Bie Han and Sin Battalion, Jiang Zhe and the Jiangzi Battalion should still be stronger.

But Jiang Zhe still persisted in setting up a defense line.

Fortunately, Jiang Zhe had a reputation and status that was unrivaled here on the frontline. No one would disobey his orders. While they did not understand, all of the battalions had complied with Jiang Zhe's orders to the letter.

Gongsun Cha publicly recruiting guides did not cause them any shock and panic.

When planning this defense line, they had gone over the plans repeatedly any areas that could be problematic had been reinforced. They didn't miss any hidden places.

They believed that this defense line did not have any weakness.

This battle that attracted the attention of all did not begin with a fierce collision like people had expected and was slightly silent.

————

Zuo Mo repeatedly teased the two fanxu experts. He was low, cunning, shameless and not polite in the slightest.

After a few times, Ji Zheng and Dai Tao realized that the other had detected their intentions.

The two discussed and then still continued to follow the three. But they had given up on their thoughts of comprehending shen power through battle and were waiting for the reinforcements from the sect.

Once the sect experts arrived, they would be enough to capture these three damned people at once!

The two decided that if the trio landed in their hands, they would retaliate for this humiliation by giving these three the internal

injuries. The same ones that they had almost suffered these past days, especially that thrice-damned Xiao Mo Ge!

They did not focus on sparring and started to slack off on responding to Zuo Mo's teasing.

Yet what they didn't know was that Zuo Mo had already started to scheme against them.

Fanxu were terrifying but two injured fanxu, in the eyes of a toad like Zuo Mo, were swans with broken wings. After teasing them repeatedly, he had gotten a general understanding of the two.

Toads that did not want to eat swans were not good toads. A toad that would pass on a swan with broken wings was not a toad but an idiot.

Zuo Mo had been scheming inside all this time.

If they could kill one, the other one would definitely flee. The danger would be resolved and Zuo Mo was moved just thinking about the riches one fanxu would have.

Zuo Mo's teasing was also intentional. He was like an experienced hunter repeating his actions that were not dangerous to numb the other.

His plan had been successful up until now. Ji Zheng and Dai Tao

were clearly not as wary as they had been.

Just like usual, Zuo Mo started his daily teasing.

The one that responded to fight was Ji Zheng. However, he was not motivated as he had been a few days ago. Because he had been acting as a sparring partner in these recent days, his injuries had been suppressed but he hadn't recovered.

Ji Zheng was just going along. As long as Xiao Mo Ge did not use shen power, the other three powers were not of any danger to him.

Would Xiao Mo Ge use shen power?

No!

He had given up a long time ago.

Once they fought, Ji Zheng's mind shook. His dull eyes suddenly lit up. Shen power!

Having been tormented greatly, Ji Zheng almost cried from joy!

The heavens had eyes!

Overjoyed, Ji Zheng focused. He did not keep anything back. Changing from his slacking attitude, he attacked first.

Shen power as expected!

Xiao Mo Ge seemed to be fighting at full power and brimmed with shen power.

Ji Zheng did not feel fear and was overjoyed. He only paid attention to Xiao Mo Ge's powerful talisman. If Xiao Mo Ge would take out that powerful talisman, he would immediately move far away.

He was wary of Zuo Mo's Little Mo Treasure Cup. Without the little Mo Treasure Cup, Xiao Mo Ge was just a tiger without claws and not a threat.

The fighting was intense.

One side had fanxu cultivation. He was wounded but his movements were still imbued with power. The other side had domineering shen power. While his cultivation was lower, but with the wondrously powerful shen power, he was evenly matched to Ji Zheng.

Dai Tao was both shocked and happy.

He was shocked that Xiao Mo Ge had changed what he usually did. Was there something else going on? He was joyed because if Xiao Mo Ge used shen power, then their previous plans could possibly succeed!

But before he could think, an eerie figure flashed. Dai Tao was startled and got on his guard.

A Gui!

Dai Tao could recognize danger. This ugly woman had a strange shen power and was also a target of the sect. Dai Tao's mind moved. If he could capture her

Xiao Mo Ge had a powerful talisman. Dai Tao did not feel he had any hopes of capturing him. This woman had a strange shen power, but she did not show any powerful talismans. Dai Tao felt that he had some chance of success!

His thoughts moving, he unhesitatingly moved towards her.

The two immediately fell into a fierce fight.

A Gui's shen power was eerie and hard to predict. Unfamiliar with this, Dai Tao almost suffered a great loss in the first clash but using the Five Element Manifestation Wheel, he quickly steadied himself. As he became familiar with this strange shen power, the power of the Five Element Manifestation Wheel started to show.

He started to gain the advantage.

At the beginning, Dai Tao kept a part of his attention focused on

Ceng Lian'er but as the battle progressed, he had to focus all his attention on facing A Gui. Otherwise, if he was the least bit careless, danger could appear.

While A Gui's shen power was strange, he could still gain understanding from it.

Ji Zheng had completely forgotten himself in the fight. After anticipating for so many days, he finally saw value in battle. The excitement and joy he felt could be imagined. His desire towards shen power caused him to focus.

He didn't even detect that A Gui and Dai Tao were fighting.

His attention was focused on each of Zuo Mo's blows.

Every collision with shen power would increase his understanding. How long has it been since he had a feeling of a new comprehension since he had stepped into fanxu?

He didn't remember!

But this beautiful feeling was so intoxicating that he did not want to stop and he forgot himself in the ecstasy.

He wanted this battle to never end.

Yet at this time, a feeling of extreme danger suddenly rose. In

this moment, all the hairs on his body stood at end!

A streak of silver light flew to his nose. He wasn't able to react at all.

He could clearly feel the intimidating presence of that silver light. It was like a pin had pierced his nose and created pain!

The silver light filled his vision!

An extremely thin wound appeared on Ji Zheng's forehead.

And then exploding lightning covered his entire head.

Nearby, Ceng Lian'er held the Little Mo Treasure Cup. Her face was ashen, her body wavering, her shen power used up.

Chapter 677 – Seeds Of Conspiracy

[Shui Yue](#) was nervous.

Shui Yue – Mo from the Water Moon Family. First appearing in chapter 559, he receives a blood summons from Wei. He is an experienced hunter, but has lived an impoverished life.

He had hunted beasts for a living since his youth and his mind had been trained, but at this moment, his heart could not help but beat furiously.

He was many times as stronger than before but this did not give him any assurances because what he faced was authority, intangible but powerful!

“Who are you?” The guard looked warily at him. The fingers of the other guard were spread. If Shui Yue showed any enmity, he would be killed immediately on the spot.

Shui Yue’s experience was completely displayed. His furiously beating heart slowed. His expression appeared calm and reassured. He reached out a hand. “I come from Silver Catalpa Cavern, this is the token, please report my arrival.”

The guard examined Shui Yue with a suspicious glance. The guard did not feel any untruth from Shui Yue’s calm and delicate appearance. He took the token and inspected it. When he felt there was no danger, he nodded at Shui Yue. “Wait here.”

Finishing, he turned and entered the hall.

Shui Yue was extremely nervous. He knew that the so-called token was just faked and had been made from a piece of silver thread wood. While Daren's plan was intricate and detailed, there were too many places that were fantastical.

Shui Yue did not doubt Daren. The blood summons could explain everything. He himself was one of the fantastical parts, specifically it was the vast power in his body and the sea of knowledge in his mind. The knowledge was vast and varied, including many ancient secrets. However, what it contained the most of were techniques used to interact with people.

This was the wealth that the ancestors had left.

The blood summon represented an enormous plan. This plan was so great that even he, having grown in power and knowledge, needed to spend a large amount of time to understand it.

When he read the plan from beginning to end, he was completely won over by this daring and unorthodox plan.

Large numbers of techniques used for scheming had been shoved into his mind. But compared to the plan laid out in front of him those great tales of conspiracies were not worth a mention.

A grandmaster schemer!

This was definitely a plan made by a great schemer!

This enormity of the plan exposed the great ambitions of the daren that he served. He suddenly recalled how his grandfather had always liked to mention things like “the past glory of the family.” Maybe Grandfather’s wish could be realized.

This thought flashed through Shui Yue’s mind.

An innately calm person, Shui Yue started to examine this plan in more detail. The more he studied, the more he felt that the great schemer in the shadows was unfathomable. He found that many parts of the plan were related to the knowledge that was provided to him. That grandmaster schemer clearly had considered every aspect.

He repeatedly pondered every detail and memorized the entire plan. He speculated on all the accidents that could occur and how he should respond.

Closing his eyes, Shui Yue tried to erase the nervousness inside. He told himself that with his present strength, even if a problem occurred, he could fight his way out.

When he opened his eyes again, his eyes were once again completely calm.

A while later, the guard jogged back with an expression that was more respectful. “Please come in, Daren is waiting in the main hall

for you!”

The main hall meant the greatest of receptions.

Shui Yue politely nodded in acknowledgement and followed the guard towards the main hall.

It seemed that this mo general did have a connection to the Silver Catalpa Cavern. Otherwise, he would not be so nervous. The Silver Catalpa Calver was an ancient inheritance ground. As time passed, there were very few that knew of it.

Shui Yue had secretly investigated this mo general but the information he had gathered was not clear. But in the plan, the mo skill the mo general practiced and even his daily habits were listed in detail.

Shui Yue increasingly felt the great power of the daren behind him. If he did not have great power, how could he do all this?

“Investigate this person.” Hard at work, Wei threw a name over to Pu Yao.

Unusually Pu Yao did not protest. He took a glance and turned to enter the Ten Finger Prison.

Entering the Ten Finger Prison, Pu Yao familiarly entered the tenth prison with a few hops. The core of the Ten Finger Prison, the restricted lands of the elders!

This was an area that was restricted to elders. The elders that were scattered across the major yao jie would come here to regularly meet and discuss all kinds of problems. The orders that decided the fate of all yao would frequently be made here and then be sent to the major yao jie.

Pu Yao seemed to not see the numerous and varied jinzhi; he floated past them like a wisp of smoke.

He quickly entered a black restricted area.

The black restricted area was covered with terrifying jinzhi.

This was the location of the intelligence division, the Shadow Pavilion, that was under the direct command of the Council of Elders. There was an astounding amount of intelligence gathered here. Every day, the Shadow Pavilion members that were scattered all over would send the intelligence they thought was valuable to this place. The intelligence would then be filtered, categorized, and archived.

Pu Yao strolled through the corridors as though he was wandering through his own backyard.

He quickly sneaked into a storage. After taking a few glances, he

quickly found the intelligence he needed.

The Dark Pavilion had eyes everywhere. The intelligence here was not limited to the yao but contained dossiers on the mo and xiuzhe. Any person famous from the three races would have a file here.

Without wasting any effort, Pu Yao found the intelligence he needed and disappeared.

Returning to the sea of consciousness, he gave the intelligence he obtained to Wei.

The two then had a heated discussion.

“This is too dangerous”

“But if we place our bets right, the profit would be unimaginable”

Shui Yue’s speculation about the mastermind was generally correct but his only mistake was that the daring plan was not made by one but two grandmaster schemers.

[Fei Lei](#) travelled over mountains and water. His face was weathered. There were more than one hundred young people

behind him dressed in worn clothing.

Fei Lei – First appears in chapter 560, he leaves his home to respond to the Wei's blood summons. He is described as an older uncle-like figure, he is teaching children in a village when he receives the blood summons.

In comparison of the others, his mission was much simpler. He received a list with some clans and their general living location.

The mission the blood summon had given him was very simple. He was to find these clans and convince them to join him and form a battalion. The battalion's name would be the King's Horn!

The name of this battalion caused Fei Lei's heart to beat wildly. Was the daren who sent the blood summons a king?

The King's Horn!

Fei Lei was not as clever as Shui Yue but he was a reliable person. The inheritance he received included no skills and knowledge on battle generals. He also had experience in training battalions and this was why Pu Yao and Wei had given him this mission.

He went searching based on the list and the surprise he felt increased.

He didn't know how the daren behind him had found these clans. These clans all had terrible living conditions. Some of the clans only had twenty to thirty people left. After coming into contact

with them, Fei Lei was even more astonished. All of these clans possessed a long history and had been great once upon a time.

Fei Lei knew what this meant.

Noble bloodlines!

While these clans mostly had declined due to losing their mo skill inheritances, the blood that flowed within them had not changed. If they could find their mo skill inheritances, they could once again step onto the world's stage.

Thinking about this. Fei Lei's heart moved again because the blood summons had also given him countless mo skills inheritances!

The King's Horn!

Fei Lei's turned towards the young people that were dressed in varied attired, some looked like beggars. He suddenly felt great anticipation.

Under their dirty and young appearances, the awakening of the noble bloodlines

The King's Horn would blow away the dust of time, and the past glory of their bloodlines would come once again!

“What? You’re crazy!” [Youqing Lie](#)’s rebellious face was full of fury as he pointed at Pu Yao’s nose and cursed. “Ye just got out of the jail, and you want ye to go back? Ye tells you, ye won’t do it!”

Youqin Lie – The sole surviving member of the Youqin Family. First appearing in chapter 565, he responds to Pu Yao’s summons. He is described as having an irregular blue crystal on his forehead, eyes long and narrow, and fiery red hair. He escapes a yao prison, A Bei Ge Jail, with Pu’s technique and decides to repay Pu.

Just as he finished speaking, Youqing Lie’s body suddenly tightened and he was unable to move.

Youqing Lie strained his neck upwards and continued to curse loudly, “If you have skill, kill ye! Don’t think ye will go back to the jail!”

“Kill you?” An eerie light flashed across Pu Yao’s bloody pupil. His thin blade-like lips curved slightly. “How can I let you off so easily? You know, I have many ways that to make you unable to live and unable to die.”

Youqing Lie stopped talking.

He knew this.

He had inherited all kinds of eerie yao arts related to stealth, concealment, and assassination. Among these yao arts were many

torture methods that could make people beg for death. Even he could do them now.

Pu Yao looked down at him coldly. “Your personality is really not suited to moving in the dark. It is a pity that you are the only yao left so the benefits fall to you. That’s fine with me, but if you ruin my plan, I will take back what I have given you -with interest.”

Pu Yao’s icy words caused Youqing Lie to tremble. He knew what the interest was—his life.

Having received the inheritance, he knew just how cruel and ruthless the people that moved in the darkness were.

“What’s the benefit in going to a crappy place like jail?” Youqing Lie’s throat felt dry. He retreated.

“You have to change your way of thinking.” Pu Yao’s bloody pupil was bottomless. He said in a slightly mocking tone, “For a commander of the dark, jail is where talented individuals gather. There are conmen, schemers, butchers, swindlers, cheats, each full of talent!”

“Those are bad people!” Youqing Lie couldn’t help but say.

“Are you a good person? You were also in jail. It is not important if they are good or bad. What is most important is that they are all enemies of the Council of Elders.” Pu Yao tone was cold. “You better familiarize yourself with the rules of darkness as soon as

possible. What I need is a commander of the darkness. If you cannot do it, I will switch to someone else. As regretful as the lost time would be, I lack patience.”

“You want me to recruit them?” Youqing Lie was not stupid and quickly reacted.

“Recruit? Haha!” Pu Yao seemed to have heard something humorous and laughed loudly.

“What’s there to laugh at?” Youqing Lie was angry and embarrassed.

“Those people cannot be recruited.” Pu Yao’s bloody pupil narrowed and he looked at Youqing Lie. He said meaningfully, “This is a test for you, good luck!”

Finishing, Youqing Lie felt his vision turn dark and he was forcibly ejected from the Ten Finger Prison.

He just wanted to curse aloud when the door was suddenly kicked open. A group of people rushed in and forced him to the floor.

“Stay still! You have been captured!”

In Zuo Mo’s sea of consciousness, Pu Yao’s expression was displeased. He murmured to himself, “Calling yourself ye in front of me, you don’t want to live!”

He couldn't help but think of another person that frequently did this but he was one who he could not do anything against. His displeasure increased. He immediately decided to increase the tasks related to Youqing Lie's mission.

Chapter 678 – Nether Decay Reincarnation Lotus

Both Ji Zheng and Dai Tao hadn't thought that Zuo Mo would secretly give the Little Mo Treasure Cup to Ceng Lian'er. While the Little Mo Treasure Cup did not have as astounding of power in Ceng Lian'er's hands as it did in Zuo Mo's, it was still enough to deliver a fatal blow when Ji Zheng had let his guard down.

If the news of this spread, Little Mo Treasure Cup would be elevated into the top level of talismans in the world after this fight!

The shock that Ji Zheng's death gave Xuan Kong Temple was peerless.

When they received the news, the elders of Xuan Kong Temple were still on their way. They almost collectively lost the power of speech. Almost none of them believed that this was true.

A fanxu elder could die?

Many elders had blank expressions when they heard the news. In their minds, Elder Ji Zheng was like a god! Many more elders started to waver. While the enemy was only three people, this mission had become more dangerous than it had been in the past!

Of course, the one that had suffered the greatest blow was Dai Tao. He had lost all courage, turned and ran from the scene. This was an instinctive response. It could be seen from this how strong

the terror he felt was.

Ji Zheng's death surpassed Xuan Kong Temple's expectations and caused the Xuan Kong temple elders to not know what to do.

This was the first fanxu xiuzhe's death in nearly twenty years.

Coincidentally, the most recent death of a marshal in twenty years in the mo territories had also been caused by Zuo Mo. This was also a Xuan Kong Temple elder of the four great sects.

New of Ji Zheng's death quickly spread to all the sects through all kinds of avenues and created a great wave.

Some of the sects that had been yearning to join the fray quickly changed tactics and recalled the experts they had sent towards the mo territories. While the loss of a fanxu expert to a large sect like Xuan Kong Temple was painful, it would not lead to their immediate collapse. But for sects outside the four great sects, this kind of loss was enough to wound them to the bone.

And reality proved that fanxu were not as powerful as people had imagined. They could also be killed!

The fanxu experts that had lived in luxury for a long time needed time to adjust to the chaotic world.

The name of Xiao Mo Ge once again entered people's ears. However, this time, the name contained intimidation it did not

have before.

Killing a marshal might be a lucky circumstance, but if he killed a fanxu as well then no one would doubt his strength.

For Zuo Mo, this risk had been a successful gamble!

He had won!

The gains this time were plentiful as he had expected. Ji Zheng was wealthy. While he did not have many talismans, there were rare materials that had Zuo Mo's eyes lighting up!

Seventeen [Incense Fire](#) Ling Wish Beads!

香火 or “fragrant fire” has multiple meanings. One refers to the worship of the Buddha/deity by believers, and the second meaning is the incense and candles used during rituals.

The Incense Fire Ling Wish Beads were forged using a special method unique to dhyana xiu sects. The beads were formed by the power of incense fire. These seventeen ling wish beads were translucent and pure. He didn't know how many years worth of incense had they had been treated with. Only a great sect like Xuan Kong Temple could produce such high level Incense Fire Ling Wish Beads.

The power of incense fire was similar to wish power. However, the beads were not used for cultivation. It was actually an extremely rare dhyana material.

Based on the number of beads, Zuo Mo speculated that Ji Zheng had wanted to obtain eighteen to make a bracelet. If this bracelet could be completed, it would be a top tier talisman. Zuo Mo did not understand the Incense Fire Ling Wish Bead well. Each of the Incense Fire Ling Wish Beads were given in tribute by the sects under Xuan Kong Temple. Each bead had experienced five hundred years of incense fire. The quality was high and rare. It was only because Ji Zheng had been waiting on the last one that he hadn't forged his talisman and his plans ended up benefitting Zuo Mo.

However, the forging of Incense Fire Ling Wish Beads required special methods that Zuo Mo was not suited to using. Zuo Mo decided to leave them to Zong Ru, who had wish power and making it more appropriate for him to forge these. It would be even better than talismans using ling power.

The next treasure was more wondrous. There seemed to be a crimson red lotus growing on top of a rotating black piece of wood.

“Nether's Rotten Reincarnation Lotus!” Pu Yao's exclamation sounded in Zuo Mo's mind.

Hearing Pu Yao's shout, Zuo Mo became alert. Something that Pu Yao would exclaim about would not be an average treasure. He hurried to ask, “What lotus?”

“This is the Nether's Rotten Reincarnation Lotus!” Pu Yao repeated. His gaze was tightly locked on the tender lotus fire and his tone was filled with shock and wonder. “The rumors say that

there are organisms that grow in the Ten Thousand Wasteland in the deepest reaches of the Nether Realm. The Reincarnation Lotus is the most valuable material grown in the region. It uses the most corrosive poison as nutrients, and it gives birth to the purest and most miraculous thing.”

Zuo Mo felt tempted hearing about it. “Then what is the use in such a thing?”

Pu Yao smirked coldly and said, “The best use for dhyana xiu is to preserve their mind during reincarnation. That old thieving baldy definitely planned to use it like that.”

“Reincarnation!” Zuo Mo sighed. He was slightly disappointed. It meant that this could not be used now.

“You do not know the wonders of reincarnation. If someone knows that you possess such an object, your life is over. All those decrepit antiques will come make trouble for you. You can use it to trade for any talisman you want. You can have them do anything you want. Of course, they can also just kill you and steal the treasure.”

Zuo Mo jumped in fright, “It is that powerful?”

So this is that valuable! His mind started to move. He was considering what treasure he could trade with this.

Pu Yao then said, “It is not just for reincarnation. This is a rare

object that xiuzhe, yao, and mo can all use. Also”

Zuo Mo looked at Pu Yao that seemed reluctant to speak. “And what?”

“And it has a wondrous effect.” Pu Yao glanced at Zuo Mo. “It can nurture the soul. It is the tiny bit of vitality that forms in a place of extreme death and corrosion. Nothing can compare to its effects on nurturing the soul!”

“Nurturing the soul?” Zuo Mo immediately stilled.

“Yes.” Pu Yao closed his mouth.

A smile slowly started to form on the corner of Zuo Mo’s mouth and continue to grow. He was like a child that received his most beloved wish. “Then this is something A Gui can use?”

“Yes.” Pu Yao said in a certain tone. “While it is the first time I have seen this and I am not entirely sure what its effect are, it is something that will be of great help to A Gui.”

“Great! Great!” Zuo Mo suddenly became excited. He suddenly thought of a problem and hurriedly asked, “Is there anything special method used to consume it?”

“Just eat it,” Pu Yao said.

Zuo Mo licked his lips. Suddenly, he felt nervous. He turned his face to look at A Gui. At this time, he was not in the mood to inspect his other gains. Those treasures that were worth ten thousand jingshi were not things that could hold his gaze at the moment.

A Gui looked silently at him. Like usual, those wooden and grey pupils did not avoid Zuo Mo's gaze.

Zuo Mo suddenly felt pain in his heart.

That fragmented scene and this calm and wooden face flashed through his mind.

He suddenly understood.

He wasn't just doing this for an answer.

With his left hand, he grabbed A Gui's hand tightly. He plucked the reincarnation lotus and moved it next to A Gui's lips.

The reincarnation lotus turned into a green energy and burrowed into A Gui's mouth.

Within his hand, A Gui's hand shook.

————

Luo Da was slightly nervous. Xiao Mo Ge's battalion had suddenly disappeared. Thinking to how Xiao Mo Ge's battalion had been publicly searching for guides previously, a thought uncontrollably rose in Luo Da's mind.

Had they truly found a secret path?

Originally, it was not his responsibility to worry about such matters. With Jiang Zhe Daren in command of the entire situation, he just had to listen to orders. But the region in which Xiao Mo Ge's battalions had disappeared was very close to the defense line that he was in charge of.

How could he not have his heart in the air?

He had already sent the information to Jiang Zhe Daren, but up until now, Jiang Zhe Daren had just ordered him to continue to maintain his position.

Out of caution, he sent out several groups of scouts. But the scouts seemed to disappear and not one had returned.

Without any scouts and left ignorant of the situation outside, Luo Dai's worry increased.

Other than battles of coincidence caused by outside factors, there would rarely be final battles where the main battalions on both

sides would battle when a conflict first started. The two sides would test each other and it would usually start with groups of scouts.

The fighting between battalion elites was much crueler and intense.

Jiang Zhe did not hesitate in sending out large numbers of scouts. He needed intelligence, he needed to know Bie Han's movements.

It had been too long since he fought against Bie Han. He did not know what kind of changes Bie Han had gone through in this time. However, there was something else. The importance he placed on Bie Han surpassed anyone else.

Those elders in the sect all said that Bie Han was dangerous, but no one understood how terrifying Bie Han actually was, only Jiang Zhe did!

He also knew of Bie Han's hate for Xuan Kong Temple.

The two had competed from a young age and were evenly matched. However, Jiang Zhe had been allowed to take sole command of a battalion ever since the age of ten. Later on, he was allowed to form his own battalion, the Jiangze Battalion.

On the other side, Bie Han was forced to copy sutras in the desolate mountain valley. It was supposed to wear away his

viciousness. In a break with convention the sect leader had allowed him to take command of Sin Battalion, but it was only after Bie Han had publicly fought him to a stalemate. In the eyes of other disciples, command of Sin Battalion was a punishment.

Sin Battalion was famous but no disciple was willing to be isolated so, to interact all day with a group of silent and unresponsive puppets.

Later, as Bie Han's identity as a mo was made public, Jiang Zhe finally understood why the sect leader and others treated Bie Han so poorly. But he also knew that Bie Han's hate of Xuan Kong Temple reached deep into his bones.

Jiang Zhe decided that no matter what, he had to kill Bie Han in this fight.

He could not sit by and watch as a person as dangerous as Bie Han become the greatest threat to Xuan Kong Temple!

Five hundred elite scouts appeared on front of Jiang Zhe. They formed ten little teams.

Jiang Zhe only had one order for them. Hunt the other's scouts and kill them at any price.

He knew that not many of these five hundred would come back alive. Their expressions were calm and at ease. They did not feel any fear about the upcoming dangerous battles.

They were truly elite.

The fight between scouts meant that this battle that was fated to cause a great number of casualties had formally started!

Chapter 679 – A Gui!

Time seemed to suddenly slow. In Zuo Mo's eyes, the streak of light that was the Nether Decay Reincarnation Lotus was extremely slow. Bam bam bam, the sound of his heartbeat echoed in his ears.

Zuo Mo had never been as nervous as this. He watched A Gui closely.

Suddenly, A Gui gave off purple light. The dark and strange shen power suddenly exploded.

Zuo Mo's body shook and he reflexively grabbed A Gui's hand. His shen power shook and deflected A Gui's shen power. This movement was instinctive and did not come from his mind.

The bright purple light entered Zuo Mo's eyes and the scene in front of him changed.

In an endless void.

A young girl was sitting silently in the void. Seven purple chains covered her body, each with the thickness of an arm, and extended into the void.

The young girl was dressed in a white and ethereal robe. There was no pain in her expression as she sat silently.

Zuo Mo's mind shook as he recognized her, A Gui!

While it was the first time he saw that beautiful and unblemished face, Zuo Mo still recognized A Gui at a glance.

The black waterfall of hair fell to her shoulders, and her trimmed bangs gave her a hint of handsomeness. A delicate and beautiful face, long eyelashes, her face was slightly pale but there was no sorrow or pain. She sat silently and only her pursed lips made people feel her concentration and determination.

Zuo Mo seemed to be struck by lightning!

That fragmented scene in his mind resurfaced, a figure sprinting while carrying him on her back immediately became clear.

The panicked breathing of the young female and her rushed steps filled Zuo Mo's mind.

A Gui!

This was A Gui!

"A Gui! A Gui!" Zuo Mo shouted with all his strength.

The young female under the purple chains did not respond at all.

“It is useless,” Wei said.

“Wei! What is this? What is this?” Zuo Mo in his panic had found a life-saver and hurriedly asked Wei for help.

A rare sorrowful expression came onto Wei’s face. “This is the Undying Shen Punishment.”

“Undying Shen Punishment?” Zuo Mo’s body shook. For some reason, his heart hurt fiercely.

“The cruelest shen punishment.” Wei’s tone was sorrowful. “The mind and soul of the punished becomes the source of shen power and creates undying shen power. The undying shen power will continue to corrode the body of the one being punished and cause their vitality to fade. In turn, the damaged body will create more shen power the more it is injured, making it even stronger. It is a cruel punishment as the undying shen power will tear the soul of the one punished from their body, and imprison it in the unconscious void. There, all six senses are sealed, there is no light, no sound, no smell, nothing. The soul will be left to endure in the unconscious void, isolation is the greatest punishment.”

Zuo Mo’s mind rang out. He suddenly thought of the coldness and emptiness of the shen power inside A Gui’s body. His body uncontrollably trembled, his limbs cold. Enormous pain twisted his heart.

Undying Shen Punishment

His voice was trembling, the fury and hate in his voice was unable to be disguised. “Who who was the mother***er! Who dares to punish A Gui!”

At the end of the shouting, his voice was a shriek. His anger exploded. The blood in his body ignited, and the burning pain tore at every inch of his skin.

“It is herself.” Wei sighed lightly.

It was as though a basin of cold water was poured over Zuo Mo’s head. He froze where he was.

“There are no flames of hate on her body. If she was unwilling, the endless void would create flames of hate. The flames of hate will not damage her soul but would cause her to feel endless pain.” Wei looked at the young girl sitting silently in the middle of the chains and said with a sigh, “The seven purple chains are the undying shen power.”

It was herself it was herself

Zuo Mo couldn’t hear anything else. His mind was filled with these three words.

The shadows of the forest, those two bare feet running in the mud, the trembling young shoulders of the girl, the determined and harsh breathing, the panicked shouts

Tears took over Zuo Mo's vision.

Bie Han silently returned to the cave.

Cold Mountain Jie was heavily guarded but because it was the rear, Bie Han had found an opening.

No one had thought that Bie Han would sneak into such a heavily guarded Cold Mountain Jie. Due to that, the messenger seals of Cold Mountain Jie were not the special ciphered seals used at the front lines, but the messenger seals that were commonly used inside Xuan Kong Temple.

Bie Han easily disguised himself as a Xuan Kong Temple disciple without any effort and sneaked in. Familiar with the setup of Xuan Kong Temple, Bie Han quickly found the intelligence he needed.

But the arrival of the elder corps disrupted all of his setup.

The members of the elder corps were all yuanying and above, and almost all of them were at the peak of yuanying. They might not understand how to work together like a battalion, but their combined strength was enough to destroy Sin Battalion several times over.

Fortunately, he learned that the elder corps had other matters to deal with and were just passing through.

But out of consideration for safety, Bie Han carefully retreated back to the cavern deep in the ground. He didn't even dare to venture out to scout for information for fear of being discovered.

His disguises in front of those elders amounted to nothing.

His furious fighting spirit cooled. Bie Han and his Sin Battalion waited for the arrival of spring like hibernating snakes.

Cold Mountain Jie!

The elders had received news that Elder Ji Zheng had died stopped their journey at Cold Mountain Jie. Ji Zheng's death was a fatal blow to their morale.

What to do now became the biggest problem for Xuan Kong Temple.

Worry filled the faces of the elders. The present situation of Xuan Kong Temple was not good.

Of the four great sects, the one worst off was undoubtedly Xi Xuan. Gu Liang Dao's betrayal had a larger effect on Xi Xuan than their upper ranks had predicted. The situation had quickly become uncontrollable. Outsiders could only speculate about Gu Liang

Dao, but among the Xi Xuan disciples, everyone knew what the situation was. This had also caused the great majority of disciples to feel demotivated. Even a disciple who had won such great merit for the sect was treated this way, how could their hearts not feel cold?

It was appropriate to describe Xi Xuan as being abandoned by all close to it now.

But the second worse off was undoubtedly Xuan Kong Temple. Bie Han was not as famous as Xi Xuan's Gu Liang Dao, but his escape still caused people's hearts to move. But because there was still the outstanding Jiang Zhe, people's hearts were moved but nothing else did. But now Ji Zheng's death was a heavy blow to Xuan Kong Temple. The worth of a fanxu expert could not be calculated in jingshi.

Xuan Kong Temple was on a dangerous cliff. If Jiang Zhe won this battle, they might be able to overcome this obstacle, but if Jiang Zhe lost

The elders did not dare to imagine what would happen.

The grim situation caused the elders of Xuan Kong Temple to form two camps. One side thought that the elders should help Jiang Zhe first achieve victory, as a loss would shake the very foundation of Xuan Kong Temple. The other camp wanted to kill Xiao Mo Ge.

The ones that were in support of killing Xiao Mo Ge had very

good reasons to do so. They thought that, by killing Xiao Mo Ge, it would get revenge for Elder Ji Zheng and also reestablish Xuan Kong Temple's authority. The shen power inheritance that they would obtain would allow Xuan Kong Temple an opportunity to develop again.

Most importantly, they were ahead of the other three sects in this mission and the probability of success was very high. They could accept some losses.

If they passed on such a good opportunity, it would not appear again.

They were full of confidence in Jiang Zhe. Jiang Zhe was going to fight a defensive battle and he had the advantage of numbers. Would Jiang Zhe lose? That was worrying too much!

The arguing was intense. The elders in this corps made up almost half of the elders of Xuan Kong Temple, and was the most powerful battle force in Xuan Kong Temple. Their choices would directly determine Xuan Kong Temple's direction.

Everyone knew that they must make a decision quickly, regardless of what it was.

The end result was a compromise. The elder corps would leave ten elders to help Jiang Zhe and guarantee the victory in this fight. The remaining elders would continue to pursue Xiao Mo Ge.

Dots of light suddenly appeared in the void. They were like snowflakes that were attracted towards A Gui, who was imprisoned in the purple chains. They flew towards A Gui and then into her body.

“The Nether Decay Reincarnation Lotus!”

In his sorrow, Zuo Mo suddenly saw this and hope rose inside.

Pu Yao had praised the Nether Decay Reincarnation Lotus to the heavens. Zuo Mo had high hopes for it.

Thinking about what A Gui had suffered, Zuo Mo felt extremely uncomfortable and wanted to smash the chains to pieces.

The silent A Gui seemed to detect the change. She suddenly raised her head and opened her eyes.

Zuo Mo could not describe his feeling when he saw those clear eyes. It was like the most precious treasure in the world being unveiled in front of him.

Under the purple chains, A Gui suddenly stood up.

She focused on the dots of light appearing out of the void in front of her. She raised her hand, palm up, and watched as the light

merged into her palm. There were threads of pure vitality contained in the threads of coolness.

A flush of colour returned to her pale face. That pure vitality nurtured her soul.

She knew that her body had found Young Master. Before swearing the Undying Shen Punishment, she had left the tiniest bit of her consciousness. That tiny consciousness formed the deepest instinct of her body.

Find the Young Master.

The Unconscious Void sealed everything but a few years ago, she suddenly had a feeling. At that time, she knew, her body had found Young Master!

From then on, her heart had settled. The Unconscious Void which sealed off everything did not seem to be such a hardship. In these years, the only thing she did was use her soul to nurture the undying shen power.

This was the only way she could help Young Master.

Her expended soul was quickly recovering.

“Young Master”

She suddenly stood. That pair of clearly eyes searched in the darkness.

Even though she could not see anything.

Chapter 680 – The Competitive Pair

In the surrounding area several Xuan Kong Temple scouts were roaming around; they warily searched for traces of enemies.

“Can we act now?” The orange haired yao turned as he asked Shu Long.

“Shut up!” A Wen hissed out from between his teeth. He glared angrily at the orange haired yao.

This idiot actually spoke at this time! He was really untrained!

Shu Long looked with slight helplessness at the pleading orange haired yao. He shook his head and said quietly, “Wait a bit longer.”

“Still waiting” the orange haired yao muttered with a twist to his mouth.

Shu Long said patiently, “They have not entered our range of attack. This is not advantageous for our ambush.”

The orange haired yao completely disregarded A Wen’s disdainful look. He said with puzzlement, “Why do we need to ambush them?”

A Wen really could not stop himself. “Idiot, it is easier to win in an ambush!”

The orange haired yao oohed and realized. “Ah, I understand. You are afraid you won’t win.”

“You won’t win!” A Wen exploded like a cat whose tail had been stepped on.

“If you can win, then why use an ambush?” The orange-haired yao looked strangely at A Wen with an expression of “You are so weird.”

“What do you know! This is tactics!” A Wen felt faint from his anger with the orange haired yao.

“You are just afraid you won’t win!” The orange haired yao said in an assured tone. He looked sideways at A Wen.

When A Wen met the orange haired yao’s strange gaze, blood rushed to his head. “Come on then, let’s fight!”

The people in the surroundings looked at the two fools acting up at this time.

The orange haired yao shook his head furiously.

“Seems like you’re afraid!” A Wen’s expression was disdainful.

The orange haired yao shook his head again. “I will not fight

against people that are afraid they can't beat the enemy.”

A Wen was furious. “You”

Shu Long felt exasperated. He decided that he wouldn't lead any team with these two again. Looking at the scouts it was clear they had noticed the noises and were moving in this direction, Shu Long said helplessly, “Then fight!”

“Yes, with a genius like me here, there is no need for an ambush.” The orange haired yao was smug. He charged first at the scouts.

“Idiot” The furious A Wen gritted his teeth. He shot out like an arrow.

The two charged, flying at the front like angry arrows.

The other people saw this and also charged out.

The scouts of Xuan Kong Temple were the elite members of each battalion. They were strictly trained from childhood and had rich battle experience. This group had worked together for more than five years and had great teamwork.

They did not panic and quickly formed a battle formation. The

chanting of dhyana xiu caused lights to appear on their bodies.

The dazzling sutra characters spun around their bodies. Their expressions were calm and at ease.

The leader of the team looked at the enemy charging at them and a hint of dismissiveness flashed through his eyes. They were experienced, he had great battle training and quickly judged the enemy. While they looked to have a ferocious aura, they were not in sync and their teamwork was terrible.

Was this Bie Han's team?

The leader felt relieved. It had to be said that Bie Han was not famous outside of the sect, but everyone in Xuan Kong temple knew of him and the famous Sin Battalion. It was like there was a rock on their chests, so heavy they could not breathe. Bie Han was a battle general on the same level as Jiang Zhe!

This group that was charging over was not Sin Battalion. They were probably Bie Han's cannon fodder.

He suddenly recalled there was another battle general with Bie Han called Gongsun something. He did not remember the name of that person clearly. He did not remember most people's names, but that was of no significance to the leader.

The distance between them decreased.

The leader shouted, “Animitta!”

The lights on their bodies spun rapidly and a strange power formed.

—————

The orange haired yao and A Wen felt countless lights collapse towards the center of the enemy formation, spinning and forming a multi-colored whirlpool. The whirlpool created a strong force that pulled them to fly towards the whirlpool.

“Whoa whoa whoa, what is that? I’ve never seen it before! Fireworks? It really is pretty! You have some skill! It is a pity that you encountered this genius, let this genius show you what is the truth of battle” He furiously sprouted words and his orange fire-like hair flowed in the wind.

“Shut up! You idiot!” Nearby, A Wen could not stop himself from cursing.

The orange-haired yao turned his face to A Wen and said seriously, “You will never be able to understand the thoughts of geniuses. This is why you cannot become a genius.” He turned away after saying this and he smugly said towards the Xuan Kong Temple xiuzhe. “Mortals, tremble!”

“Shut up!” Tendons bulged in A Wen’s forehead and his expression became more vicious.

The two argued but their actions were also extremely fast.

A layer of faint white flame floated out of the orange haired yaos body. The color of the flames was very light, almost transparent. His expression was exaggerated, waving, his arms spread apart as his mouth moved constantly.

There was a layer of black fire around A Wen's body that was as black as ink. It pulsed at an unique rhythm. This layer of black flame was thicker and deeper than the killing essence he previously had. It did not have any presence as as though it was harmless.

“The genius’ genius attack, the genius’ invincible body fire bullet!” The orange haired yao shot forward like a cannonball with his white flames, a long tail of fire streaking behind him as he charged towards the enemy’s formation!

“Kill!” A Wen suddenly shouted and stabbed with his spear! His movements were smooth and filled with beauty. The black flames on his body suddenly flowed into the black spear. A silent black energy formed at the tip of the spear and entered the middle of the whirlpool.

Stupid!

The leader sneered. It was too idiotic for the two to think they could defeat the formation!

But his smile quickly froze on his face.

Boom!

All of the dhyana xiu shook. All the lights and sutra characters on their bodies were shattered and turned to dots of light!

How was it possible!

The leader paled. The battle formation had been defeated!

The two enemy opponents had directly defeated their battle formation. Were the two yuanying?

But at this time, there was no time for him to think. His instinct formed from many years of battle allowed him to counterattack the situation quickly. With an angry howl, a sutra character appeared on his forehead. His expression was stern and dignified as his palms pressed together and then pushed forward.

Golden palm prints left his hand and immediately turned into two enormous golden hands that slammed towards the two people in the air.

The two hands became bigger and bigger until they covered the orange haired yao and A Wen.

[Imposing Light Palm]!

The sutra character at his forehead glowing even brighter, but his brow became dotted with grey and white.

“Leader!” a Xuan Kong Temple scout called in grief. The [Imposing Light Palm] was a skill beyond the Leader’s ability. This attack was forcefully used by expending at least ten years of his life force.

The other scouts all showed sorrow but they knew that this was not the time to grieve. No matter what, they could not waste Leader’s sacrifice.

All kinds of fist energy, staff shadows, talismans, and sutra characters erupted like a volcano.

Their gazes were locked on Shu Long and the others behind the two enemies at the front. They had to keep Shu Long and the others from helping.

Then they saw the remaining enemy scouts stop in unison without any intentions of forcing their way forward.

Some of those with quicker reactions couldn’t help but feel strange. But then they were full of disdain. As expected, these were untrained troops!

When their teammates needed reinforcements, they didn't even have the bravery to charge forward.

It was a pity that Leader had

[Imposing Light Palm] was one of the ultimate skills of dhyana xiu. It was extremely powerful but also demanded highly of the user's cultivation. Only those in yuanying could correctly perform it. Leader was a jindan and had used his lifespan to do so. Everyone believed that the two would not be able to escape.

The lights in the sky were dim in comparison to the two enormous hands.

Bam!

The two hands in the air seemed to pop like bubbles and turned into dots of light.

The orange haired yao's expression was dazed. He was slightly dizzy. The transparent flames around his body were slightly dimmer as he murmured unconsciously, "Hm, slightly dizzy"

A Wen's complexion was slightly pale and there were some wounds on his body. However, his glacial stare was murderous as he stared at the Xuan Kong Temple team leader.

Almost all of the Xuan Kong Temple scouts were stunned in this moment!

The two were unharmed!

———

Shu Long and the others did not have any intentions of going forward.

“I just knew it would be like this,” Ming Jue Zi said with a helpless expression.

“It’s great! We can relax.” Cang Ze twisted his mouth.

“It is not very good” Nan Yue had wanted to practice her yao arts .

Listening to the words of the people around him, Shu Long’s decision to lead a different team was reinforced.

At this time, the yells of the orange haired yao rang out over the entire battlefield.

“Hey hey hey, don’t steal what’s mine”

Answering him was A Wen’s angry shout. “Kill!”

“Kill!” “Kill!” “Kill!” “Kill!”

“Mine!” “Mine!” “Mine!”

Nan Yue and the other started to chat on the side.

“Who’s going to win this time?” Ming Jue Zi glanced and then asked.

“Tie.” Cang Ze answered without even looking.

“Tie.” Nan Yue looked towards the battlefield in admiration of the two’s fighting.

“Tie.” The black smoke yao’s voice came out of the black smoke.

Ming Jue Zi sighed. “I also feel it is a tie. However, don’t you feel this is boring?”

Everyone exchanged looks.

“Switch teams,” Cang Ze said.

“Switch teams.” Nan Yue had an expression of agreement.

“Switch teams.” The black smoke yao’s depressed voice came from the black smoke.

Shu Long who had been silent at the side could not resist. “Switch teams!”

Everyone’s tone was crisp but they couldn’t help but show some admiration in their eyes. The orange haired yao and A Wen were outstanding. After the two of them started to cultivate shen power, they had progressed so quickly it was astounding.

No matter what the two were doing, they competed.

Since a few battles ago, there had been no chance for the others to fight when they encountered small scouting teams like this one. The two of them took over the entire battle and there was no chance of anyone else to attack.

The two’s powers had started to become difficult for the others to understand.

Both the orange haired yao’s translucent flame and A Wen’s midnight black flame were both unfamiliar and strange powers in the eyes of everyone else. They were completely different than the three powers and was slightly similar to Daren.

While they admired the two, their fighting spirit also increased.

Everyone hoped to refine their strength through battle, not to be

bystanders.

A battle like this was only a small corner of the entire battlefield.

The fighting in other areas was even more intense.

The intensity of the battle was not outside of Jiang Zhe's expectations. What surprised him was that, in such intense fighting, they were the ones losing!

Chapter 681 – Zuo Mo's Transformation

Sitting on the rock, Zuo Mo's was expressionless and his eyes were vacant. He stared off into the distance as A Gui sat silently by his side.

Ceng Lian'er did not know what had happened, but she had once shared those fragmented memories with Zuo Mo, but she could guess after watching Zuo Mo feed A Gui the Nether Decay Reincarnation Lotus.

She did not make a sound.

Zuo Mo had been like this for three days.

Over these three days, he did not move. It was as though he a wooden statue.

————

In his sea of consciousness.

“How can I rescue A Gui?” Zuo Mo looked expressionlessly at Pu Yao and Wei.

“I don't know. The Undying Shen Punishment was the cruelest punishment in the ancient era. I have not heard of anyone ever breaking the shen punishment.” Wei sighed. At the side, Pu Yao

was silent as well.

Zuo Mo became silent again. However, this time, he did not remain silent for long. He raised his face and a light flickered in his eyes, like a candle in raging winds but refused to succumb.

He murmured hoarsely to himself and the words echoed in his sea of consciousness.

“At its core, the Undying Shen Punishment is a kind of shen power.”

“Since it is shen power, there definitely is a solution! If I cannot unlock it now, it is because I understand too little about it. My understanding of shen power is too weak. As long as I continue to grow stronger, become strong enough; as long as my understanding of shen power deepens, I can search for clues. I won’t give up; I will never give up; I will definitely find the solution.”

“Even if no one has broken it before, I will.”

The hoarse voice was not fierce, not spirited, not angry. Zuo Mo’s tone was indifferent as though he was talking about something unimportant. But within the calm, each word was as stern and determined as it was being engraved into steel.

The flames on Pu Yao’s body suddenly exploded. The eerie flames reflected on his eerie face. His thin blade-like lips curved in an

eerie smile. “Such a difficult matter really makes one’s blood boil. Oh, it is great to use this to pay rent.”

Wei’s expression was solemn but his eyes were as bright as stars. “The truth of the gravestone armor is to protect! Wei cannot stand idly by and watch A Gui’s sacrifice!”

Zuo Mo looked at the duo. A warmth hard to voice flowed inside.

The hundred and thousands of words he felt turned into one word when they reached his mouth.

A dot of light appeared in Zuo Mo’s unfocused eyes. His statue-like body suddenly shook. At the side, Ceng Lian’er noticed immediately. The worry in her eyes decreased greatly and she unconsciously showed slight joy.

Having refocused, Zuo Mo noticed the worry and concern in Ceng Lian’er’s eyes. He said, “I’m fine, do not worry.”

“That’s good.” Ceng Lian’er sighed in relief.

The intelligent Ceng Lian’er perceptively detected the change in Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo turned his face and looked at A Gui beside him. His eyes

became even more determined.

A Gui, I will definitely rescue you!

No matter what!

Over the next few days Ceng Lian'er saw the rapid changes in Zuo Mo's habits.

Cultivation! Furious cultivation!

Zuo Mo seemed to be possessed as he cultivated fanatically. He wasn't willing to waste even a speck of time. Ceng Lian'er had never seen someone cultivate like this. Every time she wanted to urge him to rest, she swallowed her words when she met Zuo Mo's steely gaze.

Every bit of time was so valuable in Zuo Mo's eyes.

Every bit of waste time meant that A Gui had to endure more of that great torture. Zuo Mo's heart hurt.

Pu Yao seemed to have become a completely different person. He brought out all the yao arts, spells and mo skills he collected. Wei also brought out all kinds of ancient sacrificial methods.

Most of the shen power inheritances had been lost over time and it was hard to see the connections. However, the three major

systems originated from shen power. While each focused on different aspects, they were developed from the same source.

Pu Yao and Wei thought of a method –reconstruction!

Reconstruct shen power from the three powers!

This was a crude and stupid method but it was a very plausible method, especially since Zuo Mo now had a large part of that Great Peace Mo Stele text which was one of the key points.

Zuo Mo's sun shen power cultivation was not low, but there were many details that were still unclear. This reconstruction process had clarified many of the details.

But Zuo Mo felt that this wasn't enough.

There were too many parts missing to this ancient power that made it hard to understand. What he studied wasn't limited to just sun shen power, but included even greenvine shen power. But the writing was from too long ago, and there was a great barrier between the people now and those ancient records.

Zuo Mo was not skilled in the ancient writing.

Fortunately, Wei was from an ancient tribe. Wei had been from final years of that era, as those ancient tribes declined, but he was still of great help to Zuo Mo.

As the three of them worked together, some of the basic patterns of shen power were clarified.

The division of cultivation levels for shen power was not as complex as the three powers and was much simpler.

Celestial, Earth, Mortal, they represented the three levels of shen power. In ancient times, all of the totem warriors were celestial level. They could move mountains, overturn seas, and destroy stars with their movements. For example, the Sun Crystal Seed inside Zuo Mo's body was something only those celestial level totem warriors could seal.

But as they organized, Zuo Mo and the others also found some interesting things.

According to this division of power, in Wei's era, those powerful totem warriors were earth level. The degradation of shen power was evident in that era.

The ancient era was undoubtedly the era that shen power was strongest. Wei's era was at the end of the shen power era. It was the time that shen power was gradually being destroyed and the three powers started to replace shen power as the mainstream.

Why did shen power degrade?

Zuo Mo suddenly thought of that suffocating Sealed Extinction

Battlefield. Was it that too many totem warriors had fallen in that great battle leading to the degradation of shen power?

And that mysterious Shi. Only now did Zuo Mo start to understand the great power of the other. He probably had been a totem warrior.

However, Zuo Mo did not plan on wasting time on uncovering history.

His time was so precious. Any drop of time had to be invested in becoming stronger!

Zuo Mo felt he had never had such a clear goal in life!

Every drop of sweat would not fall for nothing.

Zuo Mo could clearly feel the shen power in his body becoming stronger, especially after he had organized the knowledge of the two shen techniques. His improvement with shen power was clear, but it was clear he had just entered the preliminary stages of mortal level.

The long and distant path did not scare Zuo Mo, who now had a clear goal.

Zuo Mo's rapid improvement of shen power slowed. This was to be expected. He had only cultivated shen power for a short amount of time and he had not accumulated much. After organizing what

he knew, he had understood many details and many of the places he had been stuck at had opened. His shen power had increased due to this, but after this burst of improvement the growth of his shen power could only improve through a process of accumulation.

But Zuo Mo was not satisfied.

“Fighting?” Pu Yao’s eyes flashed with surprise. Zuo Mo never feared fighting before, but he was not one that liked fighting. It was rare for him to have a desire to fight.

“En.” Zuo Mo nodded. His expression was calm. “Fighting can cause my progress to become faster!”

Wei’s brow creased slightly. “It is very dangerous.”

As they sorted out shen power and understood more, they knew that shen power in mortal level was not of great advantage against the three powers in the later stages. Only when one stepped into earth level could they completely suppress the three powers in the later stages.

In other words, with Zuo Mo’s present shen power skill, his chances of victory against a yuanying was high, but if he encountered a fanxu it would be dangerous.

A Gui’s shen power was slightly stronger than Zuo Mo and Ceng Lian’er was the weakest of the three.

“There will always be danger.” Zuo Mo’s expression was calm but his expression was determined. “But fighting will allow me to grow more quickly. Also, even though it is difficult for us to comprehend shen power, why don’t we search for comprehension in battle?”

“Search for comprehension in battle?”

Pu Yao and Wei stilled.

“The three powers are different from shen power, but they are all derived from shen power at the core. That means then there must be patterns to the way the power is used. Rather than taking stabs in the dark like we are doing now, it would be better to search through battle. Since it is power, it would be more evident during battle.”

Zuo Mo said seriously.

Pu Yao and Wei had thoughtful expressions.

Moments later, Wei nodded. “Theoretically it is true, but too dangerous.”

Pu Yao smiled strangely. “This method is interesting! Are you planning on using Xuan Kong Temple?”

Zuo Mo did not find it strange that Pu Yao could guess his

thoughts. Spirit burned in his eyes. “Of those two old thieving baldies, one is dead, the other is injured. Xuan Kong Temple will not give up. I speculate that they will definitely send more people and they aren’t far from here. Bie Han said that Xuan Kong Temple only has two fanxu now. So the people that they have sent this time would be primarily yuanying. We might have a chance.”

Pu Yao snickered darkly. “They definitely will not expect that you dare to look for a fight.”

“En, there is also an additional benefit. We can help relieve the pressure on Gongsun Shidi and Bie Han.”

“That is a good idea.” Even Wei was persuaded by Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo told his idea to Ceng Lian’er. His original intention was to urge Ceng Lian’er to leave. Escalating this war with more battle was a dangerous course of action. In his view, Ceng Lian’er did not have to accompany them in this.

Ceng Lian’er fluffed her hair. Her serene eyes did not avoid Zuo Mo’s gaze. “I stay with you both.”

Zuo Mo was shocked. So he had talked so much for nothing.

“What you say is true, it will be dangerous. However, the world knows that I cultivate shen power. If I am alone, I will definitely be captured and forced to give up the shen power inheritance. Father’s power is not enough to protect me,” Ceng Lian’er looked

at Zuo Mo calmly and said.

Zuo Mo was stunned.

Ceng Lian'er was right. The fact that she cultivated shen power was no longer a secret. There were countless pairs of eyes watching her. If she left, she most likely would immediately fall into the hands of someone else.

Her only hope of survival was to stay with them to the end.

Only by staying with Zuo Mo could she reduce the number of people scheming for her shen power inheritance.

No matter how dangerous it was, she had no other choice.

There wasn't any terror in Ceng Lian'er's eyes. Her eyes were a deep unfathomable black that made it hard for people to guess her thoughts.

"If that's the case, then let's fight together!"

Zuo Mo looked at her and said seriously.

A thread of a smile blossomed at the corner of Ceng Lian'er's mouth. It was like a beautiful flowering blossoming in the darkness.

Chapter 682 – God-Killing Blood Sword

Wei Sheng walked along the street as the people around him gazed on in awe. Wei Sheng was famed in the mo territories. Up until now, he had not lost once.

There had been over twenty experts that had fallen to his sword.

Many of them were famous and were lords of an area. After his successive victories, Wei Sheng had become famous.

He has started by challenging others but was now challenged by others. This change had only taken him a few months.

The mo did not have too much of a negative attitude towards Wei Sheng. He was quiet, speaking few words, and determined. He also was not pretentious and was frugal. He was obsessed with the pursuit of power, and his passion and devotion to the sword was admirable. Also, he was an honest person. While he had defeated more than twenty experts, it was rare that people died by his sword.

In the eyes of the proud mo, Wei Sheng had almost all the attributes that mo revered.

Even the mo found it difficult to feel dislike for such a person. Many mo sighed inside. It would be wonderful if such a person was born a mo.

He was also so strong!

Having defeated twenty general level experts, many people speculated that he would not have a match below marshal level.

Would it really take a marshal to beat him?

However, many people felt that this was not interesting. Which marshal did not have great power and authority? They were each busy fighting to expanding their holdings. Who had the free time to fight against a sword xiu?

Maybe Wei Sheng's strength was almost close to marshal level, but even if it was just a sliver away, this kind of difference was unable to be crossed.

The gazes of the leaders were mostly looking at the battle between Jiang Zhe and Xiao Mo Ge. In their view, an expert like Wei Sheng was worthy of praise. But as long as he did not become a fanxu, he would not have any true influence on the state of affairs. However, the results of Xiao Mo Ge's battle would directly affect the state of the world.

If Xiao Mo Ge won, his reputation would grow, and he would become the first among the new generation of mo generals. Additionally, the decline of Xuan Kong Temple would not be able to be prevented.

If Xuan Kong Temple won, the mo would suffer another loss on

the battlefield. Jiang Zhe's reputation would grow, Xuan Kong Temple would become even stronger, and Xiao Mo Ge would not have any place to hide.

The attention this battle received was far greater than Wei Sheng's matches.

Wei Sheng was not affected. These factors were never ones that he paid attention to. He stepped onto the battle stage like usual and waited for the arrival of his opponents.

He sat down in lotus position with the black sword floating next to him.

He did not know who his opponent today was. He had never searched for information on any of his opponents. That was meaningless for him. He was trying to refine his sword essence, and was not fighting to win. Pure victory was not of value to him.

His mind was like a void and a little black sword was within it. If one looked closely, they would find that it was a miniature black sword. However, unlike the savagery and bloodthirst of the black sword, this little black sword had the beginnings of majesty.

The sword was like the endless void!

Vast, deep, and boundless!

Void sword essence!

His void sword essence had already surpassed any of Wu Kong Sword Sect's forebearers, and reached an unprecedented height. The sixth-grade sword scripture was transforming in his hands.

Suddenly, the little black sword shook lightly.

A faint, almost imperceptible, void sword essence rippled into the surroundings.

Everything nearby appeared in Wei Sheng's mind.

Among the densely packed crowd, one person was extremely clear.

This person was spying on him!

The little black sword was connected to Wei Sheng's mind. It seemed to detect something and shook urgently.

Sword essence!

This person was a sword xiu and also a Kun Lun sword xiu!

This person's eyes were filled with imperceptible enmity but what caused the little black sword to react so was the faint Kun Lun sword presence that he carried. It could not be detected with the naked eye, but in the void of the sword, it was eye-catching.

Wei Sheng knew long ago that Kun Lun would not give up.

But Kun Lun probably had not expected that he would also not give up.

Wei Sheng suddenly opened his eyes. A harsh light flashed across his determined eyes.

Since they had come, then they should not think of leaving!

Wei Sheng stood. The black sword seemed to respond and flashed into his hand.

The mo below the stage were all astounded. It was the first time that they had seen Wei Sheng perform any other actions before a fight. In the past matches, before the opponent came, Wei Sheng would sit motionlessly like a rock with his eyes closed.

What did he want to do?

The mo all showed puzzled expressions.

At this time, they heard Wei Sheng's clear shout ring in their ears.

“Kun Lun sword xiu, when did you become people that hide in the shadows?”

Wei Sheng's black sword pointed towards the Kun Lun sword xiu in the crowd.

Kun Lun sword xiu!

The mo below the stage were astounded.

The two words Kun Lun had brought endless pain towards the mo in thousands of years.

In the direction Wei Sheng was pointing people parted like the tide, revealing the Kun Lun sword xiu among the crowd.

His figure was average and so was his appearance. He did not show any differences compared to the average mo and if he was a part of the crowd, he would quickly fade away.

The Kun Lun sword xiu did not move. Wei Sheng's sword essence had locked onto him.

"I'm very curious how you found me?"

His voice was dry, hoarse, and ugly to hear. There wasn't any presence on him as though he was a normal person. However, his words confirmed his identity.

"My sword recognizes you."

Wei Sheng said coolly.

Just as he finished speaking, the space between him and the Kun Lun sword xiu had turned into a patch of endless void.

“They say that Wu Kong Sword Sect had a sixth-grade sword scripture called the Void Sword Scripture. I hadn’t expected that you are able to elevate it. If your sect leader and shishu heard of this in the grave, they would feel gratified,” the Kun Lun sword xiu smiled and said to himself.

Wei Sheng’s body shook.

His steely gaze gradually became pained. He grip on the black sword tightened, his knuckles turned white and trembled slightly.

The endless void shook and showed signs of instability.

There was a faint smile on the face of the Kun Lun sword xiu. He slowly walked forward as though he was taking a stroll.

“It is a pity that you were not able to see them one last time. Even your fellow disciples ended up in the hands of mo and become their prisoners. It really causes one to feel pity that Wu Kong Sword Sect was destroyed after existing for several hundred years.”

Wei Sheng was silent. However, the blood in his face retreated as

the other spoke.

The Kun Lun sword xiu looked wryly at Wei Sheng. In the intelligence report, Wei Sheng had a resilient and hardy personality but he cared greatly for his sect, this was his greatest weakness!

Sword essence was eternal and could exist for thousands of lifetimes. Emotions were just common things. If one's sword essence was infected by their emotions, they would never be able to reach the peak.

Such a pity for this good man!

There was still a smile on the Kun Lun sword xiu's face. However, his eyes were filled with ice and emotionlessness.

A transparent little sword that was as thin as a cicada's wings appeared in his hands.

Just as he was about to act, he suddenly became alarmed. His icy eyes suddenly changed.

In front of him, Wei Sheng's presence suddenly changed.

An ancient and desolate presence filled with deep grief flooded from the endless void and turned into threads that entered the black sword in his hand.

The black sword suddenly hummed!

It was like the howl of ancient wasteland beasts. The savagery and vicious presence filled the air. The thick tang of blood came from the sword and merged into the black void in the surroundings.

Almost in a flash, the dark void became tinged with dark red.

Wei Sheng's body trembled violently. His face was ashen as though all the blood in his body had been drained. But his hand that held the black sword was like rock and didn't move a sliver.

The Kun Lun sword xiu suddenly raised his head. He saw an mountainous blood coloured sword floating behind Wei Sheng.

Streams of blood dripped. The savage and bloody presence caused his sword heart to instinctively tremble.

This was

Wei Sheng's slightly red eyes became deep red, then dark red until they became black.

The same deep black like the previous void.

The killing essence and the tang of blood seemed to disappear.

The enormous blood sword behind Wei Sheng also disappeared as if it was just a mirage.

However, the blood tinged void in the surroundings informed people that the scene just now had not been an illusion.

The Kun Lun sword xiu's mouth was wide as he looked behind Wei Sheng. It was as though he had seen a ghost.

“God-Killing Blood Sword how is it possible”

He murmured to himself with an ashen expression.

Wei Sheng's expression returned to normal. The black sword in his mind was completely red, and the surrounding void was also dyed red. In the void was a little tiny infant sitting in lotus position on the blood sword. It seemed to be similar to Wei Sheng in features.

Yuanying!

At this time, he broke through to yuanying!

Wei Sheng's sword essence level was always above his cultivation level. Even the mo that he had defeated never had thought that the person they faced was just a jindan sword xiu.

Today, when he suddenly heard the terrible news about the sect

leader and the shishu, he had felt grief and fury. This caused a resonance with the black sword in his soul. The vast killing essence in the black sword had instantly broke through the barrier inside his body.

Previously, he had had a bad feeling about the sect, but there had not been any actual news about the sect leader and the others. He had held some hope. But now that the other had confirmed his suspicions, in great grief Wei Sheng lost the last restraints and calm that he had. The last barrier between him and the black sword was also broken.

The long accumulation and the comprehensions he gained at the border of life and death allowed him to have a successful breakthrough.

The Kun Lun sword xiu wanted Wei Sheng's mind to show weakness but he had never thought that this would become an opportunity for Wei Sheng to break through.

“God-Killing Blood Sword, so that is what you are called.”

Wei Sheng lightly caressed the black sword in his hand and murmured to himself. The black sword felt the sorrow inside Wei Sheng and the killing essence grew. It violently trembled, the sword producing threads of blood that ran along the blade. In a few moments, the sword was streaked with blood.

The blood on the sword seemed to have an unique presence.

If Zuo Mo was here, he would instantly recognize this presence was shen power! Pure shen power!

The threads of blood were the blood of totem warriors. The blood that the sword had drank tens of thousands of years ago!

The Kun Lun sword xiu's mind finally cleared up but his face became even paler. He was being completely suppressed by Wei Sheng!

The red void in the surroundings was like an enormous clamp that gripped him.

Impossible!

Even if it was the God-Killing Blood Sword, it could not be so powerful!

Was it

A terrifying thought flashed through his mind.

At this time, Wei Sheng raised his head.

In this moment, the Kun Lun sword xiu, Wei Sheng, and the red void in the surroundings had merged into one.

As expected he had a breakthrough!

“Master and the Shishu in Heaven, under my Void Sword Domain, this disciple Wei Sheng offers the blood of Kun Lun as tribute!”

These were the last words that the Kun Lun sword xiu heard.

Chapter 683 – Explanations Of Shen Power

Ceng Lian'er had stared at the ball of light in Zuo Mo's hand for a long time before she couldn't resist speaking, "Why do you cultivate spells?"

Since a few days ago, Zuo Mo suddenly started to cultivate spells. While Ceng Lian'er did not know much about spells, but she knew that with Zuo Mo's personality that he would not do useless things.

To go from cultivating shen power to suddenly cultivating ling power, she found this very strange.

Zuo Mo was sweating and it seemed that it took him great effort. However, he did not stop and spoke as he worked, "The three powers are each branches of shen power. Cultivating the three powers can help us advance our shen power."

Ceng Lian'er's expression was puzzled.

She had the inheritance from the Moon Tribe and her understanding of shen power was completely different than Zuo Mo's.

Zuo Mo did not explain how he arrived at this conclusion but Pu Yao and Wei had found that there was evidence to support this conclusion. It could not be explained in a sentence or two.

But he still added, “The disappearance of shen power should have another cause other than just the loss of the inheritances.”

Ceng Lian’er’s eyes suddenly lit up. “What other reason?”

The disappearance of shen power had always been a mystery. Up until now, no one had been able to explain it. That era was too distant in the past, and there were few records on the matter that had survived the march of time. Most of these were not specific in their wording. The shen power was stronger than the three powers. A Gui, Zuo Mo, and Ceng Lian’er were only in the early stages of mortal level and, when they coordinated, could kill fanxu xiuzhe. The advantages could be seen.

But the powerful shen power had still disappeared and the three powers which were not as powerful had developed and their use had spread until it became the mainstream method. This was something hard for people to understand. No matter if it was xiuzhe, yao, or mo, their pursuit of power was the same.

When Ceng Lian’er heard that Zuo Mo might have found the reason, she became alert.

“Belief.” Zuo Mo said. He didn’t mess up the spell on his hand.

“Belief” Ceng Lian’er stilled.

“The warriors of the ancient tribes have another identity. They are the totems of their tribes, they are thought of as the gods of

their tribes. They are entities that the tribes sacrifice to and worship. That is why ancient tribes have temples. And now, no matter if it is xiuzhe, or yaomo, we do not have totems nor temples.”

Ceng Lian’er contemplated this idea.

“In other words, cultivating shen power now is not the same as in the past. We have the inheritances, but we cannot be like the entities of the past and become totem warriors. We cannot receive the belief and ceremonial sacrifices of other people. However, we can work on the three powers. The three powers are not as strong as shen power but their cultivation systems are stricter and they developed from shen power so they are of great help to cultivating shen power.”

As Zuo Mo spoke, the light on his hand showed signs of instability and he hurriedly shifted his focus back.

Ceng Lian’er was intelligent and the inheritance she received from the Moon Tribe was complete. After some thought, she understood that what Zuo Mo said was correct. In the Moon Shen Power inheritance she had, much of the content was related to temples. In the past, she had not thought of this. Now, when she thought of Zuo Mo’s explanation, she realized.

The temple was for gathering belief.

“Can you teach me yao arts and spells?” Ceng Lian’er suddenly said.

Zuo Mo stopped. He hadn't thought that Ceng Lian'er would ask this. It had to be said that for an actual mo, it was a difficult matter to learn spells and yao arts from the start.

He looked at Ceng Lian'er. "It is slightly difficult to start from the beginning."

Ceng Lian'er smiled. "At the very least, it won't be as difficult as cultivating shen power."

Zuo Mo was left speechless. Yes, she was right. The cultivation of the three powers would not be as difficult as cultivating shen power. He did not refuse her. After some thought, he took out two jade scrolls. "Your mo physique is very good. This [Jade Bone Spell] uses ling power to refine the bones and will be of help to your mo physique. This [Nether Jail Bone Sacrificial Art] is also suited to you. You might try to practice this."

Previously, Pu Yao had given Zuo Mo all of the spells and yao arts he had collected. Wei's previous master had been a battle maniac and challenged numerous people when she had been young leading Wei to have a deep understanding in mo skills, and all kinds of mo skill styles. Wei had not held anything back.

Those skills that could attract Pu Yao and Wei's interest were not average things. Other than cultivation, Zuo Mo had spent these days reading the spells, yao arts, and mo skills. While they were lacking greatly compared to shen techniques, because they were not as powerful as shen pechniques, their demands on the control

and use of power was finer.

Start from the three powers. This was the result of Zuo Mo, Pu Yao and Wei's discussion on reconstruction.

They all thought that the path the present shen power had to take was completely different than in the era of the ancient tribes.

Once this direction was confirmed, Zuo Mo burrowed into the "Pu Wei Record Pavilion", something that could rival those record halls of the four great sects.

He only slept for four hours each day and spent the rest of his time reading or cultivating. Pu Yao and Wei had helped him design an extremely intense cultivation plan. This cultivation plan detailed everything down to ten minute blocks, and was so strict it was like a forging report.

Zuo Mo was perfectly carrying out this cultivation plan.

Whenever he was so tired he wanted to die Zuo Mo's would look towards A Gui, sitting silently beside him, and he would be filled with strength.

He had never been so focused or worked so hard.

Even Pu Yao and Wei were secretly surprised inside. The cultivation plan they had designed only existed in theory. When they had designed it, they had not thought that Zuo Mo would

manage to carry it out.

But when Zuo Mo had perfectly finished the first phase, it gave them a scare.

The Little Mo Ge they saw before them was so unfamiliar they were astounded.

Day after day, Zuo Mo's cultivation still diligently followed the cultivation plan designed by the two.

Even though Pu Yao and Wei were left shocked to the point they didn't know what to say, this was still not enough in Zuo Mo's eyes.

The progress was too slow!

Pu Yao and Wei both thought that the present rate of improvement was at the limit unless there was outside simulation. They were definitely at the forefront when it came to the study of shen power.

If regular methods were useless, then he would use extreme methods.

For example, fighting.

Zuo Mo was waiting for the other people in Xuan Kong Temple to

arrive. The enormous Xuan Kong Temple would not give up on such a good chance to obtain shen power. From how Xuan Kong Temple was willing to send out two fanxu, it could be seen that Xuan Kong Temple wanted to capture them.

Zuo Mo suddenly stopped the spell and his expression changed slightly.

They had come!

One, two, three

Thirty people, each of them yuanying!

Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. Xuan Kong Temple had such a high opinion of him!

Such a grand and enormous group did not scare him. He felt his blood boil, fighting spirit filling his chest. He wanted to immediately have a fight against the crowd of thieving baldies.

He quickly calmed down. A strategy was required to win against thirty Xuan Kong Temple yuanying.

A moment later, Ceng Lian'er stopped cultivating and looked at Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo did not speak and nodded at her. Ceng Lian'er understood and moved into the air. Zuo Mo grabbed A Gui and also jumped to fly.

“They are over there!”

The elders of Xuan Kong Temple immediately spotted the trio and pursued them.

But the Xuan Kong Temple eldest found quickly that the three were even faster than they were. In a blink, there was only an extremely thin white mark in the sky and no sign of the trio.

“Such speed!”

Many elders praised. Such speed. It could even compare to the Kun Lun sword xiu.

A widely-read elder had an astounded expression. “This is [Sky Mark]!”

“[Sky Mark]!”

Many elders stilled. They seemed to have heard this name before but they did not remember it clearly.

“It is from before the thousand year battle, the secret skill of Air Travel Sect!”

This elder’s explanation immediately stirred people’s memories. However, not every elder had an interest in the sects from before

the thousand year war. One elder said, “Old Lin, explain in more detail.”

Old Lin did not refuse and said, “The Air Travel Sect was an intermediate sect before the thousand year war. They had two powerful spells, one called the [Air Kill Spell] the other [Sky Mark]. [Sky Mark] was the top flying spell at the time. When one flies using it, there will be an extremely thin mark left in the sky so it is called Sky mark. When it was used together with the treacherous [Air Kill Spell], it became famous. However, all of Air Travel Sect had died in the thousand year war. Is this Xiao Mo Ge a descendant of Air Travel Sect?”

When he reached the end, Old Lin was slightly puzzled.

“This boy’s history is strange. Elder Dai Tao said that he cultivates all three ways, that appears to be true. However, we do not need to waste effort on this. When he capture him, all will be revealed,” an elder said with a snort.

“Elder Pang is right!”

The other elders nodded.

It could be seen that Elder Pang held authority among the elders. He turned his head and said, “Elder Xu, Elder Wu, Elder Hao, you three are the fastest in the sect. Please go first. Once you catch up to him, do not fight him head on, just follow behind him and message us the position. This boy is cunning. Be careful.”

The three elders nodded. They did not speak more and moved into the air.

As expected of the three who were skilled in flying spells, with their flying talismans, they immediately turned into three different colored lights and disappeared into the horizon.

The other elders put out their flying talismans, lotuses, lucky clouds, or ling beasts, each using something different.

Xuan Kong Temple was not skilled in flying but as one of the four greats, all of the elders were wealthy. The talismans and ling beasts they used were extraordinary, lights flashing and astounding in presence.

Zuo Mo's spell really had been [Sky Mark].

When he had first come up with the plan, he had planned every detail. His gamble meant his growth had to be quick in order to survive the fighting, the risk did not need to be stated. If he lost, there would not be a chance to regret it.

What was crucial to this battle was speed. If Xuan Kong Temple's elders surrounded him, he was dead.

The flying talismans he had were greatly lacking compared to the elders of Xuan Kong Temple. Therefore, when he found [Sky Mark] among the spells that Pu Yao collected, he immediately started to practice it.

[Sky Mark] was peerlessly quick, as expected of a flying spell that was at the top three thousand years ago.

Enjoying the pleasure of high speed flying, Zuo Mo had started the next step in his plan.

Thieving baldies, enjoy ge's welcome!

Chapter 684 – Ambush

“Here.”

The three stopped. Streaks of light flew out of Zuo Mo’s hands and entered the ground. They soundlessly melted into the ground.

Zuo Mo had a satisfied expression. The three flew ahead a bit further and then turned around waiting for the other to arrive.

—————

Soon after, the three dots of light in the distance grew larger and suddenly stopped near the three.

The three elders looked warily at the trio. They had learned from Elder Dai Tao that these three were powerful. Normal yuanying were not a match for them. Even Elder Ji Zheng had died at their hands.

The three did not go further forward and moved into defense positions. In any case, their mission was to follow the trio, and to prevent them from escaping.

A cold light flashed through Zuo Mo’s eyes. He shot towards the three of them first.

“Kill!”

Ceng Lian'er and A Gui almost disappeared into the air at the same time.

The three elders were shocked. They turned and moved to escape. But unexpectedly several lights appeared under their feet.

Not good!

There was a trap!

The three elder's expression changed dramatically. The lights layered together and almost took up all of their vision. Seal formations! Even if they did not look down, the three could judge from the light that the other had used seal formations. A seal formation of such scale that it would rival the protective shield of a small sect.

Xiao Mo Ge was skilled in seal formations!

This discovery caused the three to shudder in fear. It was not a secret that Xiao Mo Ge was skilled in the skills of yao, mo, and xiu. However, the three were still shocked that he was this skilled in seal formations. The field of seal formations was profound and complex. It was such an enormous field that even dedicated seal xiu had a hard time cultivating it. How could it be something that yaomo could learn?

But the skill in formations that Xiao Mo Ge showed was not

something to be underestimated.

If Xiao Mo Ge had already secretly set up the trap ahead of time and waited for them to run into the net, then their fates were not looking good!

If Xiao Mo Ge had just set it up now, then Xiao Mo Ge's skill in seal formations was even more terrifying!

No matter which case it was, it did not bode well for them.

But there was no time to ponder this now. It was most important to escape the trap first.

The figures of the three elders exploded with light. Sutra characters lit up on the body of one of the elders. The sutra characters turned into a wheel of light in the air to pressed towards the seal formation!

The golden lotus lit up under the feet of another elder. In a blink, countless golden lotuses emerged out of the ground. They spread outwards at an astounding place. When the golden lotuses touched the seal formation's light shield, the golden lotuses started to grow and creep along the shell of light.

The third elder tossed out a string of amber colored Buddhist beads. When the Buddhist beads landed on the ground, it turned into eight buddhas that were twenty five meters tall. Their expressions were different as they shielded him at the center.

Three of the buddhas charged forward.

In a blink, the three elders used all they could in hope they could break out of the seal formation as fast as possible.

Zuo Mo knew that the seal formation would not manage to withstand their barrage.

These seal formations were formation disks that he had forged using the materials he had on hand in the last few days. The grade of the materials he had used were high so the formation disks were powerful. But in front of full-powered attacks from three yuanying Xuan Kong Temple elders, they were nothing.

However, Zuo Mo had not hoped that these roughly made formation disks could trap three yuanying elders. His aim was accomplished when they were delayed for a few moments.

Zuo Mo felt surprised when the three elders attacked the formation at the same time. He suddenly understood the three were extremely wary of them!

In front of the three elder's full-powered attacks, Zuo Mo's formation disks turned to dust like paper mache.

Boom!

The ground underneath the elder's feet exploded. The layers of light from the formation all disappeared.

Before the three elders could celebrate, two figures suddenly appeared in front of them.

A Gui and Ceng Lian'er!

Adding on Zuo Mo who was still behind the three, a triangle formed, surrounding them.

However, the three naturally were of extraordinary strength to have become elders.

The sutra characters around the elder at the front suddenly merged into his body. A layer of liquid gold seemed to have been painted onto his body as he rapidly grew larger, stopping only when he was ten meters tall.

[Skanda Golden Body]!

A golden staff appeared on his hand, and he was magnificent to look at.

A cold snort sounded like thunder. He raised the dhyana staff and smashed towards A Gui.

The copper rings on the tip of the staff were suddenly shrouded in fire. There seemed to be countless angry souls wailing inside this fire that caused people's minds to shake. This was the Avici

Hell Fire!

A bamboo staff appeared on A Gui's hand. This was the Corpse Sea Bamboo. However, the corpse sea bamboo she held was slightly different than before. The Nether Ghost Core had been embedded on the third joint of the bamboo staff. It appeared like an eerie eye. This Nether Ghost Core came from the Nether Ghost Tribe. Zuo Mo did not know how to use it, and hadn't expected that it would be useful in A Gui's hands.

As shen power was channeled in, the Nether Ghost Core immediately lit up eerily. A Gui waved the bamboo staff.

A monster with a green face and fangs appeared in front of A Gui. It seemed to be a hybrid of ape and human, and had claws on its feet and hands. What was most eye catching was the line of hard spikes that jutted out from the back of its head all the way down to its tailbone. Its eyes gave off eerie purple energy.

When this great monster appeared, it immediately howled into the sky. A vast and vicious energy exploded outwards into the surroundings, like a volcano!

The flora on the ground under its feet withered into ashes at a visible rate.

The Avici Hell Fire that was crashing towards A Gui rippled. The monster reached out and grabbed the head of the staff.

It allowed the Avici Hell Fire to burn its hand and did not seem to feel the fire.

Purple light suddenly flashed in its eyes. The Avici Hell Fire at the head of the staff suddenly turned into a stream of fire and was absorbed into its palm! A red fire script appeared at its right arm at the same time.

The majestic elder changed expression!

Such a powerful being!

He had naturally recognized the Corpse Sea Bamboo that A Gui' had. The Corpse Sea Bamboo could nurture vicious beings but it could not create one so vicious. It definitely had to be the eye that was giving off the purple energy!

His guess was right. If the Old Bamboo Staff Man was here, he would definitely not recognize his Corpse Sea Bamboo. The Nether Ghost Core came from the Nether Ghost Tribe and it was a perfect pairing with the Corpse Sea Bamboo. Under the power of A Gui's Undying shen power, there were new changes.

This monster did not look much different than in the past, but its power had multiplied!

Ceng Lian'er was evenly matched against the other elder. Her movements were hard to predict, and the moon shen power's transformations were profound. The other's dhyana skills were

strong, and his talismans extraordinary. At this time, no one was able to defeat the other.

Zuo Mo was also fighting against the enemy.

He did not use the Little Mo Treasure Cup. Such a good chance to fight was something that could not be requested.

For him, victory alone had no meaning. The mountainous obstacle in front of him was not something that even a fanxu could move aside.

Resolving the Undying Shen Punishment, this goal was enough to make other people feel hopeless.

Zuo Mo did not stray in his thoughts. He was extremely focused and threw himself into the fight.

All Shen power was one kind of power in the end.

Only fighting would allow him to detect every change in shen power.

He did not use shen techniques, the Little Mo Treasure Cup, mo skills, yao arts, or spells. He just used pure shen power to face the Xuan Kong Temple elder in front of him.

In front of these buddhas twenty five meters tall, Zuo Mo was

minuscule.

His figure seemed as though it could be drowned by these enormous figures at any moment.

What he used was the simplest method of attack. His shen power channeled into his fist and he punched.

Every punch that connected with the buddhas, those enormous figures would shake.

This was the power of shen power!

It was the first time that Zuo Mo used shen power like this.

An unprecedented expression flowed across his mind.

The three powers inside his body were like three flexible but separate chains of power. With every one of his blows, the three chains would twist together and form a thicker and more powerful chain!

Comprehension flowed across his mind.

“Master!” Lin Qian respectfully bowed.

Kun Lun Sect Leader's snowy white brows were down. He appeared to be resting with his eyes closed but then said, "I heard that you seem to be focused on the matter with Wei Sheng?"

Lin Qian's heart shook slightly. He bowed his head and said, "Yes. Wei Sheng is of determined personality and is devoted to the sword. He will become a great enemy of our Kun Lun in the future."

"Hmph!"

The sect leader's displeased cold snort was like a heavy hammer that smashed against Lin Qian's mind.

Lin Qian's head went even lower.

"You have your priorities in the wrong order!" The sect leader slowly opened his eyes. His eyes were like a vast ocean filled with sword essence. He said indifferently, "You are the eldest disciple of Kun Lun, yet you panic over a little sect disciple from an unknown sect. You have to remember you are the future sect leader. You are Kun Lun. You are a mountain that they will never be able to ascend, and will always look up to!"

"Yes!" Lin Qian responded in a low voice.

The sect leader's tone eased. "I know that you are taking care of most of the matters of the sect. It has been hard for you."

Lin Qian shook his head. “This is this disciple’s duty.”

“This is what I want to tell you. We are Kun Lun, sword xiu. The sect leaders must always be the strongest members of the sect! Put everything else aside and focus on your cultivation. You are wary of Wei Sheng because you do not have enough confidence in your own strength. If you are strong enough, wouldn’t Wei Sheng be an ant in your eyes?”

The sect leader looked at Lin Qian and said, emphasizing each word, “Remember, this world is ruled by the sword!”

Lin Qian’s body shook. “This disciple will remember!”

“Go to the Sword Pavilion to find your Wei Shishu. Starting from today you will train under him. You will only leave the Sword Pavilion when your shen power enters earth level.”

Lin Qian suddenly raised his head, his face filled with disbelief. “Shen power? Is it”

The sect leader glanced at Lin Qian and said coolly, “Yes, our sect’s shen methodology has taken shape. While some details still need to be perfected, it can be practiced. You were the one that contributed the most in this matter, so you are the first to cultivate it. Other than you, all of the elders will start to practice it in order to perfect this shen methodology together. When it is completely perfected, the other core disciples will cultivate it.”

Lin Qian was so shocked by the new the he was left speechless.

The sect leader saw Lin Qian's dazed expression and showed a small smile. He liked this disciple very much and couldn't resist reminding, "Do not spread news of this matter but work hard."

His voice suddenly became ethereal as though it was coming from very far away.

"After this, it will be the era of shen power."

Chapter 685 – Becoming Better

Tian Huan.

Countless lights suddenly appeared inside a deep cave behind the mountains. The lights contained great power. The moment that they formed, all of Tian Huan was disturbed.

An old and slightly mad voice echoed out of the cave.

“Haha! Shen glyph! This old man finally succeeded! This old man finally succeeded! Ancient shen glyph. Haha, no, in the future, it will be called the Tian Huan shen glyph!”

The mad laughter of the person that was speaking to himself caused the Tian Huan elders that had flew over to be stunned where they stood.

But in the next moment, ecstasy rose onto their faces.

Shen glyph!

Every disciple of Tian Huan, who had started by using seal formations, knew the meaning of these two words!

————

Shen power flowed through his entire body. Zuo Mo's gaze was

pure and clear.

In his sea of consciousness, Pu Yao paid close attention to every change of shen power inside Zuo Mo's body. All of these changes were recorded. Pu Yao's rich experience and vast knowledge would help prevent Zuo Mo from making many mistakes, but what was most important was that Pu Yao was a sky yao. His terrifying ability to create simulations from the torturous sea of yao spells meant that he could help Zuo Mo perfect his shen power cultivation quickly.

Shen power was much more complex than yao arts and the work to reconstruct the method was unprecedentedly vast and complex. Even Pu Yao did not have any spare time for other matters and was forced to leave all of those conspiracy matters to Wei.

Pu Yao and Wei were not in disagreement about this division of labour. Their opinions were unusually in agreement.

In their view, there had to be a pattern that connected the three powers to shen power, a pattern that could be used to evolve into shen power. That was because the development of the three powers had reached a peak a long time ago. No matter if one was yao, mo, or xiuzhe, their pursuit of power was not different; the final stages of each power were highly similar.

From the general trend, the arrival of the era of shen power was inevitable.

The shen power that would develop would be very different from

the shen power of the ancient era. While the two had the same name, the shen power of the present would be reconstructed from the three powers.

Therefore, in Pu Yao's view, the one that managed to stay ahead of the others would have the greatest advantage in this era of shen power.

Zuo Mo's luck was unspeakably good. Even Pu Yao and Wei sighed about it.

But they could not just rest on their laurels. The inheritance of the Sun Tribe was able to dominate the ancient world but there were great differences between the ancient world and the present world. This inheritance was just a crude beginning, and there was still a great distance until it developed into a perfected cultivation method.

For Zuo Mo, the content that Pu Yao was considering was too far in the future.

Resolving the Undying Shen power was his only goal.

"Alright, finish the battle," Pu Yao said to Zuo Mo. There were numerous bright lines spinning furiously in the ball of light in front of him. If a normal person looked for a bit too long at the ball of light, they would feel dizzy.

Each moving light represented a recording of a certain trait of

shen power.

Hearing this, Zuo Mo did not hesitate and immediately took out the Little Mo Treasure Cup.

Clink!

The treasure coin immediately penetrated through the chest of the Xuan Kong Temple elder and created a spurt of blood.

Zuo Mo's shen power was completely used up but, having experienced this before, he did not panic. He threw a sun seed into his mouth. When the sun seed entered his mouth, it turned into a warm flow and shen power filled his body again.

The Little Mo Treasure Cup was powerful, but it consumed a great amount of shen power. The Little Mo Treasure Cup surpassed the limits of normal talismans. It could only be activated by shen power. It probably could be said to be the first shen power talisman in the world.

The monster that A Gui had summon was extremely powerful. But what surprised Zuo Mo was by was that the shen power from this human-ape hybrid that wasn't weak at all!

The monster's body was as hard as steel and unable to be damaged by flying swords. The spells of dhyana xiu were not as effective as it should have been against monster. Theoretically, the spells of dhyana xiu were most effect against dark and evil

monsters. Zuo Mo felt that shen power might be the reason that the spells were not effective.

The monster was unusually valiant, charging at the front, and A Gui's figure was unpredictable. The Undying shen power killed people silently. The enemy was dodging right and left. If A Gui quickly found a weakness and then she only needed one attack!

Of the three, the one having the hardest time was Ceng Lian'er.

She had the advantage. However, the other's talismans were endless and their cultivation was higher. Her shen techniques were powerful but it took time to use them. She had destroyed a few of the enemy's talismans but hadn't wounded the other.

But she was smart. When she saw she could not do anything, she stopped using shen power. She managed to keep the enemy suppressed and didn't give them the chance to run away.

When this elder saw Zuo Mo and A Gui leap at him, a shocked expression came onto his face.

Pew.

The one who had delivered the killing blow was A Gui.

The Undying shen power had sealed A Gui's soul but her fighting instinct was the most terrifying in the trio.

The three did not linger. They cleaned the corpses of the valuables and turned to leave.

A while later, when the elder corps of Xuan Kong Temple arrived, they saw the three stripped corpses on the ground and their expressions were extremely ugly.

“Here, here, here, here”

Pu Yao pointed out seven things in one go. In front of him, Zuo Mo’s expression was focused and serious. The places that Pu Yao had pointed out where the areas that needed to be redeveloped and practiced again.

These seven places were the result of Pu Yao spending three days studying the battle and modeling shen power.

Even in Pu Yao’s time, he was not the most powerful sky yao. However, with the name of [Encyclopedia of Yao Arts], no one could rival his ability to understand and analyse yao arts.

After working for three days, he showed signs of tiredness. However, the light in his eyes showed that he was extremely excited at this time.

Perfecting shen methodology was something extremely difficult that there were only a rare few in the world who could do it.

A new era was about to sprout from his hand. Oh oh oh, what was more exciting than this?

Such great work!

Maybe he could leave behind a great mark on history!

He thought about his teacher having told him go to the First Yao Art House to leave behind his name. Compared to what he was doing now, that wasn't worth a mention.

He started to dream what great nickname would appear in front of his name.

Oh, the father of new shen methodology. This nickname wasn't bad!

However, when his gaze landed on Zuo Mo's focused face, he immediately refocused. He coughed lightly and continued, "Try out the changes in these seven places. I based the changes off some methods from spells and yao arts. From the models, it should increase efficiency by about three percent and would decrease the activation delay by five percent."

Zuo Mo carefully noted down the seven places that had been improved. A few percent of improvement seemed to be a very

small number but Zuo Mo knew that the accumulation of these tiny numbers over time would be astounding.

“You are still in the preliminary stages of mortal level. Accumulating shen power is the most important thing. There is no source of belief now, the increase in shen power will need to come from advancing the three powers. The greater your cultivation in the three powers are, the more shen power you will get every day. What is most important here is balance. How much shen power you can produce is decided by your lowest cultivation.”

Pu Yao snickered. His expression was smug. “There aren’t many freaks are like you? Who cultivates three powers? For ones like Kun Lun, even if they now understand what shen power is, they need to start from the beginning in cultivating the three powers. Also, your right hand is a great boon of fortune.”

Then his expression turned stern. “However, do not slack off. A great sect like Kun Lun had all kinds of methods once they understand the design. The resources they can invest are great!”

Zuo Mo shook his head. “I will not slack off even one day until I resolve the Undying Shen Punishment.”

Pu Yao stilled. After a moment of silence, he looked at Zuo Mo and nodded. He said, “That is good. You are someone with a foundation now. You might want to have the people at Cloud Sea Jie start to cultivate the other powers and prepare for cultivating shen power in the future.”

Zuo Mo said, “You are right.”

He had been cultivating shen power for a while and increasingly felt that shen power was much more powerful than the three powers. While it was more difficult to practice, the difficulty was being resolved gradually.

Now, Zuo Mo could clearly feel that shen power was something that other people could cultivate.

“Give me all the spells, yao arts, and mo skills you two have collected. ‘Pu Wei Library’ Access will be divided according to their service.” Zuo Mo looked at Pu Yao and Wei.

Pu Yao said carelessly. “Alright.”

Right now, Pu Yao was only interested in shen power. He did place any importance on what he had collected over the years. Maybe by doing this he could collect a copy of the Moon shen power inheritance.

Wei nodded and said, “Alright.”

Zuo Mo gave a smile. With Pu Yao and Wei’s collection, Cloud Sea Jie’s power would skyrocket in the short time. Also, with that, Cloud Sea Jie’s foundation would become more secure. The reason that the large sects had survived for thousands of years and not fallen was because, other than possessing a great amount of resources they had numerous spell inheritances.

Adding on shen power in the future, Cloud Sea Jie would grow stronger.

Having reached an agreement with Pu Yao and Wei, the remaining matters could be handled by Pu Yao through the Ten Finger Prison. He did not have to worry as he cultivated.

Coming out of the sea of consciousness, Zuo Mo did not immediately cultivate. He still had to face the Xuan Kong Temple elder corps behind him. In his eyes, the enormous elder corps was a group of sparring partners. With every one that he killed, his shen power would grow.

————

The situation for the elder corps was very bad.

Xiao Mo Ge was clearly more cunning than they had imagined. The death of the three elders reminded them that while the other was unable to face their combined might, the enemy had the power to kill them individually.

Possessing astounding speed, great individual power, cunning, and devious. From every angle, Xiao Mo Ge seemed to be the one in the role of the hunter.

The elder corps was already starting to regret this mission.

Chapter 686 – The Mo Gods Emerge, The World Is Left Astounded

“Oh.” A tall, large mo suddenly turned. There were two sickle shaped red marks on his thin face. His faint blue eyes were slightly narrowed as he sat on a throne carved with exquisite designs.

There was a smile on his face, but no one was able to feel any warmth from it.

“Xuan Kong Temple is really a failure, even now, they have not reached the gate to shen power yet they dare to target our mo. Have the xiuzhe declined so much in the thousand years?”

His smile became slightly disdainful and cold.

“Itis probably because they were the winners in that war.” A voice came from the corner. The one that spoke was covered in thick armor. His body was brawny and there was a horn growing out of his forehead. He was imposing and his voice was deep and thick.

“There is no way around it, we were the losers, losers will also scheme to take back what was lost in the past.”

A mo youth that was lying in midair had an unconcerned expression as he spoke. As he spoke, he threw a bloody red grape into his mouth. He was relaxed and said unclearly, “Don’t think about sending me, ah’ve been in a lazy mood, don’t want to go

anywhere, sweep, ah just want to sweep”

The mo sitting on the throne had an exasperated expression and could only turn to the horned mo in the corner.

“I will go.” The rhinoceros mo said with a grave expression. “This year is coincidentally the two hundredth year of the shen temple’s founding. I can use those people as a sacrifice, the shen temple will grow in authority and will be able to attract more clans. It is time to show our shen temple to the world!”

More belief meant more shen power.

“That’s right.” The mo sitting on the throne narrowed his eyes and said with a light laugh. “Since the others are not willing to act, then let the era of shen power start with us.”

The brawny figure disappeared.

————

Jiang Zhe had been defeated!

The news spread as though it had wings, flying to every corner of the three realms. If it Bie Han’s sneak attack of Cold Mountain Jie was a dagger shoved into Jiang Zhe’s soft belly, then Gongsun Cha had accurately grabbed Jiang Zhe’s weaknesses and tore at Jiang Zhe until he bleed to death.

Learning that his retreat had been cut off, Jiang Zhe had tried to lead his main forces to break out of the encirclement.

But Gongsun Cha did not give Jiang Zhe any chances to retreat peacefully. Some people said that Gongsun Cha was like a cunning wolf that tightly clung to Jiang Zhe's battalion. Whenever he saw a chance, he would leap and take a bite.

All the people who saw the battle described it like this.

In their eyes, Gongsun Cha's forces were sharp demonic blades. They would be hidden. But every time they appeared, they would slice off a thin layer of flesh from Jiang Zhe's battalions and draw blood. It would cause the enemy to feel great pain yet each cut was not fatal.

Jiang Zhe's battalions gradually grew weaker.

The disadvantage of fighting in foreign territory was completely apparent now. No mo along the way would help Jiang Zhe. Actually it was the opposite. Small mo troops along the way would attack any Xuan Kong Temple xiuzhe that had fallen behind. They weren't even afraid to attack small battalions.

Jiang Zhe's forces seemed to have landed in an endless bog. There were also terrifying demonic blades hidden in this horrific bog.

Eventually Jiang Zhe died by Bie Han's hand.

This battle that was enough to change the world's state of affairs finally ended now. The effects of this event were still deeply affecting the world.

Yet no one had expected after just one day, the world's attention was attracted by another matter.

Something called the Mo Shen Temple had suddenly appeared.

A mo god of the Mo Shen Temple with seven mo temple guards had killed the twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders.

But even more astounding was that this mo god immediately announced that he would sacrifice these twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders would be sacrificed to the shen temple.

Then this mo god announced that Black Cloud Jie was under the protection of the shen temple. Any action that would cause fighting in Black Cloud Jie would be taken as a provocation and a challenge to the Mo God Temple.

All of the world was shocked speechless by the Mo God that had appeared out of nowhere.

Their first response was to suspect the truthfulness about death of the twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders. However, the mirages of the twenty seven elder's corpses and their talismans

were made public by the Mo Shen Temple.

People now discovered that this was true.

Xuan Kong Temple was finished!

While they still had fanxu elders, they had lost Jiang Zhe, their main battalions, and their elder corps were destroyed. No one could save it from the fate of death.

Those with any sense of logic would be able to conclude this. However, no one paid attention to Xuan Kong Temple now. Losers would always be immediately forgotten by people. Even if it was a colossus like the four greats, when it crashed to the ground, people would reminiscence about how great it had been. They would say that while things had changed, people were the same and such. But in a blink, their gazes would gather on the victors. The losers would become a footnote in history to memorialize the strength of the winners. And the past identity as one of the four greats would just cause this contrast to become even grander and eye-catching.

Everyone was deeply astounded by the Mo God Temple.

Twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders. Such a grand group was one that no factions in the mo realms would guarantee that they could defeat.

All killed by the Mo Gods of Mo Shen Temple!

There was a lot of information in these last two words.

Normal people might have been astounded by the power that the Mo Shen Temple displayed. But among the major factions, their attention was on last two words—

— Shen temple!

They knew very well what the phrase that had been lost in time meant.

Shen power!

It definitely was shen power that allowed the Mo Shen Temple to kill all twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders.

All of them believed this.

No matter if it was yao, mo, or xiuzhe, any sect or clan that had some history desired shen power. However, up until now, they had not heard of anyone that found the way to cultivating shen power. The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion had been hotly contested and what people wanted was that nameless mo stele said to be the key to shen power.

The attraction of shen power could be seen.

Shen temple, so the crux of shen power was at the shen temple!

Many mo suddenly realized.

As more and more intelligence about the Mo Shen Temple was gathered, people found to their shock that the Mo Shen Temple had existed for two hundred years in the remote Black Cloud Jie. Even in Black Cloud Jie, there were not many that knew of the shen temple.

Before this, who knew the name of Black Cloud Jie?

Having worked for two hundred years before suddenly walking onto the world's stage. There were many questions behind all this.

After the sacrificial ceremony, the Mo Shen Temple suddenly announced that the recruits of the mo shen guard that passed the exams were able to learn shen power.

These words were like throwing a spark into a pot of boiling oil.

Shen power!

The Mo Shen Temple announced for the first time that they had mastered the method to cultivate shen power.

Black Cloud Jie immediately became a new holy ground. Countless mo seemed to be possessed as they moved towards Black Cloud Jie.

This was just the beginning.

Very quickly, the defense lines of the xiuzhe almost all moved back. Almost overnight, the xiuzhe who had held the advantage all this time had lost all of their power. The positions of the two sides flipped and this increased the reputation of the Mo Shen Temple.

A sorrowful mood spread among the xiuzhe.

Shen power, the mo had found the way to cultivate shen power!

————

Pu Yao's dream about being the "Father of New Shen power" was destroyed. The Mo Shen Temple had started two hundred years already. Even Wei praised their determination and endurance.

Zuo Mo had seen the fight between the mo god and the elder corps with his own eyes and saw the strength of that mo god.

He really was too powerful!

Zuo Mo suspected the other had earth level shen power.

Few understood better than Zuo Mo what earth level shen power meant. When shen power reached earth level, it would change to

something that the three powers could not match.

Even if one was a marshal, they would not have any power to fight back in front of earth level shen power.

He had seen how the mo god had easily killed the twenty seven Xuan Kong Temple elders. The talismans and spells that hit the mo god were like smoke and could not harm him. Zuo Mo's hands and feet felt cold.

When the mo god had glanced in his direction before leaving, he almost suffocated.

In that moment, his mind was completely blank.

He gradually recovered long after the mo god had disappeared.

A chill ran from his feet to his scalp. All the hairs on his body were standing up.

So terrifying!

Was this earth level shen power?

It was terrifying!

Even Pu Yao was silent for a long time. That kind of power

surpassed his imagination. The other clearly was further along than they were. This caused Pu Yao to feel demotivated and dispirited.

Yet what Pu Yao hadn't expected that when Zuo Mo recovered from his initial shock, the first thing he did was to start cultivating shen power like usual.

Pu Yao couldn't help but say, "They are using the shen temple!"

"Oh." Zuo Mo did not stop and continued to cultivate.

"Their method is more effective than ours. They have recreated belief, their cultivation speed is faster than ours," Pu Yao continued.

"Oh." Zuo Mo did not show any intentions of stopping.

"Oh? Can you be normal? Their method is simpler and more effective than ours, they"

Zuo Mo stopped what he was doing and interrupted Pu Yao, "No matter how good their method is, it is not suited for me. I cannot make a shen temple. We are on different paths so we will continue on ours. It is not important who is better."

"Not important?" Pu Yao widened his eyes as though he heard something incomprehensible.

“I do not cultivate shen power to defeat them.” Zuo Mo looked at Pu Yao and said to himself, “I am doing it for A Gui, to release A Gui from the Undying Shen Punishment, and for myself.”

Pu Yao stilled.

“Also, seeing his power fills me with confidence. Earth level is so powerful. When I reach earth level, I might be able to release A Gui’s Undying Shen Punishment!” Zuo Mo’s eyes were as bright as stars. He unconsciously tightened his fists.

Zuo Mo suddenly turned his face, his smile sunny.

“Also, I believe that the shen methodology that you, Pu, has perfected will not be lacking to any one else’s! You are Pu!”

Chapter 687 – The Hero And The Beauty

After the string of events, the Mo Shen Temple quieted down but the effects of its appearance on the world had not stopped at all. The present state of affairs became even more unpredictable. Even those that studied the situation did not dare to guarantee they could grasp the direction matters would develop.

However, this did not have too much to do with Zuo Mo.

He was heading towards Nether Spring Jie. Since he already learned that A Gui's soul was being restrained by the Undying Shen Punishment, Zuo Mo still hoped that the Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass would provide some him some clues.

However, this time, Zuo Mo planned for Gongsun Cha and Bie Han to return to Cloud Sea Jie.

In the past, Zuo Mo's individual strength was not enough so he had to get the aid of the battalions. But now his shen power had developed, he also had A Gui and Ceng Lian'er who were also strong. Even if they were facing marshals, they had the ability to fight and it was not a problem to flee.

Also, the collapse of Xuan Kong Temple and the appearance of the Mo Shen Temple caused Zuo Mo to have a feeling they were at a turning point of the era.

This was a chance for Cloud Sea Jie.

Xuan Kong Temple, one of the four greats, had been defeated at the front lines and lost its experts. Its decline could not be stopped. However, its enormous body was the richest banquet and caused countless factions to drool.

For a very long time, the xiuzhe world would be in a turbulent state. The old equilibrium had been broken, and a new equilibrium will only start forming from fighting and rivers of blood. Zuo Mo hoped that Cloud Sea Jie would be able to get a share of this great banquet.

The present Cloud Sea Jie possessed two powerful battalions and the [Pu Wei Library]. What it lacked was resources.

This was not apparent because Cloud Sea Jie was always on the defensive and it was hidden. But there would be a day that Cloud Sea Jie would come to prominence and the enemies they would face then would be titans like Kun Lun. The resources the two sides would be able to move would not be on the same level.

Their enmity with Kun Lun could not be resolved.

Other than this, Cloud Sea Jie needed to establish deeper foundations.

This meant that Cloud Sea Jie needed to expand its territory. Only by expansion could it possess more resources and establish itself.

In Zuo Mo's view, this was the best opportunity for an expansion.

Once the new equilibrium was formed, expansion would antagonize all of the surrounding factions. The best way was to take advantage of the chaos. If they missed such a great opportunity, it would never come again. With a terrifying enemy like Kun Lun, if they did not strengthen themselves early, then they might not even qualify for a final battle.

In Zuo Mo's view, resolving the Undying Shen power for A Gui, and solving the riddle of his origins were his personal matters.

As the leader of Cloud Sea Jie, he could not allow his personal matters to affect the future of Cloud Sea Jie and lose the best chance to develop. The present him had enough strength to reach Nether Springs Jie.

So he ordered Gongsun Cha and Bie Han to return to Cloud Sea Jie.

Gongsun Cha and Bie Han had strongly opposed this but Zuo Mo did not waver at all. Out of helplessness, Gongsun Cha and Bie Han could only lead their battalions back to Cloud Sea Jie and prepare for the expansion.

However, Gongsun Cha told Zuo Mo before he returned that Wei Sheng had entered the mo territories with only his sword in order to help Zuo Mo. He was going to use battle to refine his sword essence. Before this moment, Gongsun Cha and the others had

concealed this matter from Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo was dumbstruck upon hearing this.

His chest was filled with warmth, but more was the worry for Eldest Shixiong. The danger of a sword xiu moving in the mo territories alone was scalp-numbing to think about.

Zuo Mo immediately listened for word about a sword xiu that was in the mo territories.

He hadn't expected that he would obtain the information without any effort. Wei Sheng's name had been spread far and wide. There were details about each of his fights. Zuo Mo was overjoyed. He hadn't thought that Eldest Shixiong would have made such a great reputation for himself in the mo territories. He wasn't just undefeated, he had won the respect of the mo. When he had been searching for news, he found that all the mo spoke with reverence and respect when they talked about Wei Sheng. The declarations the major personages gave also showed this.

Zuo Mo immediately stopped worrying.

He had absolute confidence in Wei Sheng. Unless a marshal came, no one would be able to defeat Eldest Shixiong in a fight unless they did something underhanded.

But then the report of Eldest Shixiong killing a Kun Lun assassin caused murderousness to boil inside Zuo Mo's chest.

Kun Lun!

Zuo Mo quickly calmed down. Xuan Kong Temple was about to crumble. Kun Lun would not let such a chance past. At this time, Kun Lun definitely would not focus their attention on Eldest Shixiong.

Thinking about this, Zuo Mo took out a snowy piece of paper. This was fifth-grade natural snow paper. It was one of the top types of paper. Zuo Mo carefully drew out seal formations on this paper. The seal formation that he was drawing was completely different and more complex than the normal seal formations on messenger paper cranes. A while later, Zuo Mo put down the brush. His fingers moved and spells shot into the paper crane.

Only now did Zuo Mo show a satisfied expression. He blew at the paper crane. The paper crane seemed to be folded by an invisible hand and took form.

Once the paper crane formed, it disappeared.

It was as though a rock lifted off Zuo Mo's chest. Zuo Mo naturally had an imprint from Eldest Shixiong. However, there was such a great distance that normal paper cranes could not reach him. Therefore, he forged this sixth-grade paper crane. The other reason was that the contents of the paper crane were extremely important. Zuo Mo had written down the shen methodology that he had been perfecting recently into the paper crane.

The shen power system was about to replace the three powers and become the newest and highest power system.

With Shixiong's personality, he would not make a shen temple. Therefore, he could only walk the same path as Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo felt some anticipation about what Eldest Shixiong, that focused on the sword, would become when he cultivated shen power.

However, Zuo Mo had warned Eldest Shixiong not to expose the fact that he was cultivating shen power. The appearance of the Mo Shen Temple had made shen power the most attractive thing at the moment. If people knew that Eldest Shixiong had a shen methodology, those marshals would not continue to sit still.

When the paper crane disappeared, the last thread of worry in Zuo Mo's mind disappeared with it.

He, with A Gui and Ceng Lian'er, changed their appearances. They departed for Nether Springs Jie.

————

Ji Li Yu's expression was dejected. Her thoughts wandered as she looked at the sky.

Qing Hua Xue was sitting thoughtfully in the corner. She knew of Ji Li Yu's unwillingness. This was not hard to understand. Ji Li Yu

had become famous very early on, and the Ji Family was a powerful family. In these years, she had become the fantasy lover for countless youths. While Ming Yue Ye's order could not be disobeyed, she still was unwilling.

However, Ji Li Yu cultivated the [Charm Clothing] and was the most suitable person.

The importance that Ming Yue Ye placed on this matter far surpassed other people's expectations. Other than Ji Li Yu, there were more than thirty people that had come along. These beauties were of different kinds, seductive, dignified, elegant, friendly, it was enough to dazzle the eyes.

The Blue Flower Family had also been selected.

Qinghua Xue was from a branch family of the Blue Flower Family and had an outstanding appearance. She was extremely suitable. Her elder brother had opposed it strongly but she had agreed because she heard the target of this mission was Xiao Mo Ge.

These three words seemed to have an unusual attraction towards her and would always unconsciously attract her mind.

Of the group, Ji Li Yu was undoubtedly the brightest pearl. The other beauties lost color under her light. Qinghua Xue calmly stayed in the corner. She did not attract attention and secretly observed this group.

The creator of this plan was Ming Yue Ye, but without the support of the council of elders, the Ji Family would not have made such a great sacrifice as to send Ji Li Yu.

Qinghua Xue was intelligent and had great perception. She felt that the goal of this mission was not as simple as the rumors said.

The leader of the guards for this group was Feng Xin Zi. This man gave her great pressure. She needed to be very careful in order for him not to discover her actual strength. The other experts were only just slightly weaker than Feng Xin Zi.

What surprised Qinghua Xue was that the group did not disguise their journey. They made a fuss along the way. Ji Li Yu's charisma worked on both yao and mo. Her natural seductiveness caused the [Charm Clothing] to be used to its limits. Seductiveness formed as she moved.

Ji Li Yu's talent in music was extremely high and she immediately won over the hearts of countless mo.

There was great mixing between yao and mo. Ji Li Yu was one of the most famous beauties among the yao and her popularity in the mo territories was not low. When she appeared in the vision of the people, they found that she was even more beautiful than the rumors. Countless mo was enchanted by her. They accompanied and protected the group. Even the three princesses' limelight could not compare.

Ji Li Yu unintentionally stated the goal of their mission in public.

It was Xiao Mo Ge who was extremely well-known at this time. She seemed to be admiring and loving in her tone.

Xiao Mo Ge's prison-breaking battle and his interactions with Ji Li Yu were quickly dug up. People found to their surprise that Xiao Mo Ge and Ji Li Yu had entanglements before.

Many people realized. So this was how it was!

In the past, with that astounding battle, Xiao Mo Ge had completely won over Miss Ji li Yu's proud heart. In these years, Miss Ji Li Yu had thought of him day and night, unable to sleep, and tortured by love. She finally gathered her courage and came to the mo territories to search for Xiao Mo Ge

Rumors like this quickly spread through the mo territories and sounded extremely convincing.

The people who spread this had expressions of certainty and those that listened were interested.

Xiao Mo Ge was, expected, a good male mo!

Only a peerless beauty like Ji Li Yu could pair with such a heroic youth like Xiao Mo Ge.

The rumors spread wider and wider and convinced many people. Busybodies even started to search for Xiao Mo Ge's tracks.

Naturally, no one found Zuo Mo that had changed his appearance.

But when he heard the rumors, he didn't know to laugh or cry. He almost didn't remember the name Ji Li Yu. When he finally thought of it, he shook his head.

He didn't have any good impressions of that woman.

He quickly threw this matter to the back of his mind. Other than cultivating, what they did everyday was travel.

He only had one goal, Nether Springs Jie!

Chapter 688 – Rock

In order to spend more time cultivating, Zuo Mo and the others chose to ride a large mo steed.

Fully grown Sky Sharks were about nine hundred zhang long. Their bodies were strong and was able to resist the harsh wind in the sky. In some regions, it was also used as a combat unit. Its vicious personality made it suited for battle. It was a mo beast that lived in the sky, the void, and the chaotic turbulence. There were rarely things that were a threat for them.

Its enormous body meant that the inside of its body was large enough to be used as accommodations. It was a good choice for long journeys.

Zuo Mo did not lack money so they had rented a whole courtyard to themselves.

Rather than say it was a yard, it was a residence made from three little houses. In order to make it easy for travellers to cultivate, there were blood pools that were used for cultivating mo physiques inside the yard.

It was a pity that the blood pool was not of any use to Zuo Mo now. He only hoped that no one would disturb him.

If Ceng Lian'er was alone, she definitely would not cultivate so madly. However, she was alongside Zuo Mo. Whenever Zuo Mo started to cultivate sun shen power, the energies in her body would

uncontrollably move and her moon shen power would also circulate. She had to follow Zuo Mo's rhythm in cultivating or risk suffering side-effects.

Only at this time did she truly understand how freakish Zuo Mo was.

He seemed to never know exhaustion. He used any time he had to cultivate. It was fortunate that Zuo Mo had many things he needed to practice such as the three powers so it gave her time to breathe, but even so she still felt that she couldn't keep up.

Yet when she finally had a day of rest and inspected herself, she found to her shock that in a few short days her shen power had grown by a tenth!

In this whole day of rest, she was immersed in deep shock.

Her deep eyes were full of emotion.

Zuo Mo did not have the time to dwell on his emotions. He squeezed everything he could out of his time. He needed to face each battle with all of his power.

Zuo Mo panted, his body was soaked with sweat. His fingers that dangled at his side were convulsing.

He had just finished a practicing high difficulty finger movements. The ling power he had was almost completely used

up. Right now, he was able to control the change between shen power and the three powers.

Of the three powers, his weakest was ling power and this was the main focus of his practice.

In the cultivation plan that Pu Yao had given him, the practice of spells was a very important part.

[Bowstring Finger Spell] [Five Element Communication] [Mist Raindrop Sword Scripture] [Hundred Dhyana Sutra Records]

All of these spells focused on transformation. Zuo Mo had originally thought that his finger motions were pretty good, but when he saw the requirements for the [Bowstring Finger Spell], his scalp turned numb and his face went ashen.

Cultivating this each time was alike being tortured.

But Zuo Mo managed to persist. His ling power had grown greatly and become even more pure, easier to control, and more powerful.

Even though it was still far from satisfying Pu Yao, Zuo Mo still felt a clear improvement, especially in the advance of his shen power.

His shen power became more malleable and directing it was like moving a part of his body. Some blurry details seemed to resolve

themselves and he could now unconsciously carry out some actions.

Zuo Mo, Pu Yao, and Wei were all very motivated. This quick advancement showed that their thoughts were in the right direction.

In exploring unknown cultivation, what was most important was direction. If the direction was wrong and ran counter to the answer, the consequences were not just detrimental but could easily cause injury. If the general direction was right, then the details was just a matter of hard work and experience.

After about ten breaths, Zuo Mo's breathing finally recovered. The sweat on his face disappeared. Zuo Mo's recovery abilities were very strong due to his powerful mo physique. This was an important reason that he had managed to persist.

Turning his face, he saw A Gui sitting silently beside him. Zuo Mo's gaze became much gentler.

At this time, a ruckus sounded outside the door.

Zuo Mo couldn't help but frown.

It had to be said that the mo's sound blocking techniques were lacking compared to the xiuzhe. The use of mo matrices was far behind seal scripts, and there were not many that understood the use of mo matrices.

Zuo Mo's gaze flickered to the room on the left. His gaze focused. Ceng Lian'er was at an crucial time in her cultivation!

The sound outside did not show signs of quieting down and became even louder.

Zuo Mo sent a sound-blocking spell towards Ceng Lian'ers room and then stood to walk out.

Opening the gates, he saw a circle of people outside.

"I said that I'm not selling to you!" The youth that was speaking had an angry expression as he tightly gripped a stone in his hand.

"Hahaha, you won't sell? Ye doesn't have the patience to quibble with you. Even if you don't want to sell it, you have to!" The one who poke was a youth dressed grandly. His expression was proud as he played with a short staff in his hand. The short staff was inlaid with all kinds of precious stones and it could be seen to be extremely valuable at a glance.

There was a group of guards surrounding the youth that was selling stones with maliciousness in their eyes.

Zuo Mo did not have any sense of justice. If this was another time, he wouldn't even look twice. But now, Ceng Lian'er was at a crucial juncture. It would be troublesome if she was disturbed now.

When his gaze flashed across the stone, Zuo Mo's pupils suddenly shrank.

The stone was about the size of a basket, completely blue, and threaded with lines of blood red. It seemed slightly eerie.

That stone was interesting!

He felt a ripple of shen power from it. This was extremely weak. If it wasn't that Zuo Mo's shen power had become purer recently, he probably would have had a difficult time detecting it.

This was the first time Zuo Mo had encountered something that contained natural shen power. Was there things that contained shen power like how jingshi contained ling power?

————

At this time, a guard said darkly, "Buddy, for one stupid stone, we're giving you twenty thousand mobei! Know your limits, if you anger our master, you won't get even one mobei!"

The youth with the stone had a flushed face. "I only said I'll trade, not sell, I'm only trading for mo weapons! Brigadier mo weapon!"

"Brigadier mo weapon? Ha, you're dreaming! You dare to ask so

much of ye, you don't want to live" the young master snorted coldly.

At this time, a voice suddenly interrupted. "I'll trade with you."

Everyone immediately quieted.

The stone-selling youth was not very excited. He looked suspiciously. "Brigadier mo weapon, only brigadier mo weapons!"

This person was dressed normally and was not attention catching. A person like this did not look like one that would have a brigadier mo weapon. Even the lowest of the brigadier mo weapons cost over thirty thousand mobei on the market.

Zuo Mo did not waste words and took out several mo weapons.

"This black sickle is brigadier level, it is formed from killing energy. With every person killed, the killing energy will increase. When the killing energy accumulates to a certain level, it can form fiendish souls. This Heaven Azure Dagger-Ax is brigadier level. It is as light as a feather, suited to fast attacks. It can rip through the void. This blood fiend axe is one hundred and eighty thousand catties heavy. It is suited to power-type mo physiques. When it is swung, an axe fiend will form. Which one do you want?"

When Zuo Mo introduced each mo weapon, he would wave it and show it. He had many mo weapons. They were all taken from the mo experts that he had defeated before.

The crowd around immediately shifted. Many people's eyes became burning hot. Even the guards were moved. All of them had expressions of greed.

Each of these three brigadier level mo weapons were all fine ones that were above fifty thousand mobei. The three articles together were one hundred and fifty thousand mobei. The shock they gave could be imagined.

The stone-selling youth stilled. From when he got the stone, he wanted to trade for a brigadier mo weapon but it had been over half a year, and he still hadn't managed to trade for one. At many times, he had thought that his price was too high. When there were really three mo weapons in front of him, he didn't know what to do.

Seeing the other dumbstruck, Zuo Mo could only remind the other, "Which one do you want?"

The stone-selling youth seemed to wake up and rushed out, "I want the Sky Azure Dagger-Axe!"

Zuo Mo did not waste words. He waved his hand and the Sky Azure Dagger-Axe flew in front of the youth. With a wave of his hand, that stone came out of the youth's arms and flew into his hands.

"Where did you get the stone?" Zuo Mo asked.

“The deep abyss of Hundred Energy Jie.” The youth hugged the Sky Azure Dagger-axe after saying this with an excited expression.

A brigadier level mo weapon! It really was a brigadier level mo weapon!

Having gotten the mo weapon of his dreams, the youth felt as though he was dreaming.

Hundred Energy Jie!

Zuo Mo knew the name. It was one of the jie on the way to Nether Spring Jie. He had remembered all of them and this Hundred Energy Jie was among them.

At this time, a dark voice sounded.

“Young Master, this one remembers that the compound was robbed a few days ago and lost many mo weapons. This Sky Azure Dagger-axe is among them!”

The one that spoke was one of the young master’s guards. His eyes showed greed that he wasn’t able to disguise.

The furious young master immediately understood and snorted coldly. “No wonder I find these mo weapons so familiar, they are from my compound! Come, capture this thief!”

The guards immediately surrounded Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo's expression was calm but he was slightly surprised. He hadn't thought that he would encounter such an absurd matter. At this time, he detected movement from the yard. Ceng Lian'er had finished cultivating.

Zuo Mo immediately lost the last qualm he had.

He grinned and showed snowy-white teeth. He smiled and said, "A few days ago, some thieves sneaked into my residence, and stole many things from me. So it was you!"

The guards had shocked expressions. They had done things like planting evidence and accusing others many times but it was the first time they were accused.

Before they could react, the figure in front of them disappeared.

A guard was hit with a slap on his face before he could react. Pia. His body seemed to be hit by a rampaging rhinoceros and was sent flying. He fell to the ground unconscious.

Zuo Mo's control of the three powers in his body had increased and so had his control of his mo physique.

His figure flashed and he appeared like a ghost in front of

another guard. His left hand shook and the shadow of his hand was like whip that accurately hit that shocked face.

Another figure was sent flying!

Zuo Mo's figure was lightning fast.

In a flash, none of the guards were left standing. The entire area was silent. Everyone was shocked by the chaotic attacks.

The young master's face was as white as paper. "I ... I am from Horizontal Jie's Ji Family ... You ... you ..."

"Do you know ye's nickname?" Zuo Mo walked towards the young master.

"What ... what name?" The young master was like a frightened rabbit.

"Scalping Zombie!" Zuo Mo snarled

Ooh!

The young master fainted from too much fear.

The other really had no resistance to fear. Zuo Mo shook his head. He walked next to the young master and, with practiced

motions, stripped them of their possessions.

Scalping always made him feel good.

Chapter 689 – Shen Crystal

In truth, Zuo Mo did not find the things these people had particularly valuable. What he wanted was to re-experience that feeling from his days at Wu Kong Mountain. Of course, he had to pretentiously sigh over the passing of time. He had once been satisfied for a long time by a few jingshi. That pure joy had become a beautiful memory long ago.

Zuo Mo prepared to leave but someone called him.

“Daren, is that Blood Fiend Axe for sale?”

A man stepped out of the crowd and looked heatedly at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo stopped walking and turned around. He examined the other and immediately understood. This person was a brigadier and was perfectly suited for the mo weapon. The mo weapons that Zuo Mo had were mostly taken from the elite members under Marshal Yu’s command. They were mostly mo weapons that the general levels had wielded and were of extraordinary quality for brigadier level mo weapons.

Zuo Mo did not have much use for these brigadier level mo weapons but he also had lots of mobei. Therefore, he said, “Trade only.”

The other immediately had an expression of difficulty, but when he saw the rock in Zuo Mo’s hand, he was inspired. Maybe this daren liked strange things?

He had went to been to places. While he didn't have treasures, he had several strange articles.

He took out everything he had and put them in front of him. He said respectfully, "Daren, all this one has is here."

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised by the other's briskness. This person's reaction was quick.

While he admired the other, with Little Mo Ge's caution in doing business, he naturally examined the articles in front of him seriously.

The man was not rich and the pile of items were almost all fragments of things. There wasn't one complete mo weapon. Zuo Mo's eyes, however, suddenly it up.

A piece of broken sword that was rusted all over.

When he touched the broken sword fragment, the shen power inside was stimulated.

An ancient item!

Zuo Mo immediately understood. He picked up the broken sword. Unexpectedly, the sword was light as though it was a feather. There was something here! No wonder the man had kept

it with him. The man had not recognize the origins of this item, but just the weight of the item would have been enough to pique his curiosity.

“I’ll trade for this.”

Zuo Mo did not hesitate. He waved his hand. The Blood Fiend Axe turned into a streak of red light that embedded itself in the ground in front of the man.

The man was overjoyed. “Many thanks, Daren!”

After saying this, he was afraid Zuo Mo would regret the trade. He hurriedly picked up the Blood Fiend Axe, put away everything, and disappeared. He had picked up the broken sword by chance. Other than being unexpectedly light, it wasn’t special at all. In the beginning, he had searched for people to examine it, but other than marveling at its light weight, no one was able to identify it.

It really was worth it to use a useless broken sword to him to trade for a brigadier mo weapon!

With this mo weapon, his power would skyrocket!

The other people saw the man had used a rusty broken sword to trade for a fine brigadier level mo weapon. Their eyes turned red.

“Daren, Daren, please look here, do you have anything you want?”

“Daren, look here!”

They took out what they had and hoped that Zuo Mo would trade for one of their items. Then they could also trade for a brigadier level mo weapon. There wasn't another place with bargains like this!

An unknown stone, a rusty broken sword, these were actually traded for two high quality brigadier level mo weapons.

The other passengers on the Sky Shark heard the news and all ran in this direction.

How could they miss such a good event?

Such a noisy affair naturally disturbed the guards on the Sky Shark. The price of riding the Sky Shark wasn't low so there was a full guard on board for security on the trip.

But when they arrived, they coincidentally saw the heated scene.

The price to travel on a sky shark was high and consequently, the guests here definitely had some wealth. They quickly found that this daren was not interested in the things that they thought were pretty good. It was usually a knick-knack of unknown origins that easily attracted his favor.

After some more people successfully traded for mo weapons, the crowd immediately became even more restless.

It seemed that this daren had strange taste.

Zuo Mo had a whole bunch of brigadier level mo weapons on him. Since he had no use for them, it was worth it to trade them for useful things. Also, Little Mo Ge had good eyes, and knew the ways of doing business. Of course he only profited and did not lose.

When the leader of the guards walked over, he saw the scene of the trades. There seemed to be an endless number of mo weapons behind that guest, each was of extraordinary quality.

Even though he had entered general level a long time ago and brigadier level mo weapons were not of great use to him, he still pondered if he should trade for one or two. It would be a great present to give to his juniors. The next few mo weapons traded away were all of outstanding quality. No wonder even the guards were moved.

Fortunately the leader of the guards did not forget his duties. He forced down his impulse. What he needed to do was to maintain order and prevent chaos.

“Boss, there!” a subordinate suddenly shouted.

The leader of the guards stilled and turned his face. Following the finger of his subordinate, he saw the almost naked people lying on

the ground. Wait, wasn't that Young Master Ji?

The leader of the guards broke out in a cold sweat.

It was over!

He had a deep understanding of Young Master Ji's arrogance. However, the Ji Family of the Horizontal Jie was powerful and protective. Other people did not dare to resist. But Young Master Ji was stripped so cleanly

The leader of the guard did not plan on thinking further about what would happen next. Inside, he grimaced. This had occurred on his sky shark and he would most likely be affected as well.

However, he did not immediately try to get justice for Young Master Ji. He was experienced and he knew that if the person who dared to act so against Young Master Ji of Horizontal Jie and his people was either powerful or had his own backing. No matter which, they would not be someone he could offend.

But it was not good for Young Master Ji's group to be left lying naked in the street. Gritting his teeth, he said, "Put clothing over them."

Some shark guards took off their outer robe and put them over the bodies of the Ji Family members.

Seeing no one step out, the leader of the guards sighed in relief.

Putting clothes on Young Master Ji was a test of this daren's intentions. No one stopped him so he said, "Help them back to their own rooms."

No one paid attention to the movements of the shark guards. Everyone was excitedly attempting to trade with Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo of course detected it, but he ignored it. For him, this was just a small punishment. If the other still did not recognize what was good for him and came back to look for trouble, he did not mind giving that Horizontal Jie Ji Family a memorable lesson.

The shark guard leader quickly learned of what had happened and his gaze as he looked at Zuo Mo became respectful and awed.

Zuo Mo's business was quickly finished.

His eyes were skilled and his consciousness swept across the items almost as soon as other people took them out. He immediately spotted if there was anything he was interested in.

Today, he had obtained some good things. He was in a good mood.

However, it was not worth it to waste his cultivation time for these things. He stopped his transactions and returned to his yard, ignoring the calls of the other passengers behind him.

The shark guard leader opened his mouth but did not say anything in the end.

Returning to the yard, Zuo Mo immediately set up a large number of jinzhi.

Then he took out the stone streaked with blood. He raised his head and said to Ceng Lian'er who was looking at him with a curious expression, "Give me the Green Carp Tongue Sword to use."

Ceng Liane'r handed over the Green Carp Sword.

Zuo Mo held the Green Carp Tongue Sword and started to strike at the surface of the stone.

The stone was cut piece by piece like a piece of dough. Ceng Lian'er had a shocked expression. As the stone became smaller, her surprise increased. A Gui felt shen power and unconsciously moved closer to inspect the stone.

Shen power!

This stone actually contained shen power!

Zuo Mo's cutting movements became slower, and it was evident that it was taking effort to wield the Green Carp Sword in his hand. As he continued to slice off layers, the concentration of shen power contained in the rock layers became denser. The stone also became stronger. Zuo Mo had to channel shen power in order to continue to slice off layers.

As he cut deeper, the blood color became more apparent.

Zuo Mo cut off the last piece of the surface. A pure and clear red cube appeared in front of the trio.

Shen crystal!

In that moment, Zuo Mo and Ceng Lian'er stopped breathing at the same time.

The shen crystal was about the size of a walnut. It was completely red, clear and glowing, beautiful. What was even more enchanting was that the wave of shen power it exuded was pure and gentle. It filled the entire yard. If not for the jinzhi that Zuo Mo had cast before, everyone on the Sky Shark would have been alerted to this wave of shen power.

“There are actually shen crystals in this world” Zuo Mo murmured to himself. His expression was grave. He naturally knew what this meant.

In the xiuzhe world, jingshi mines were the core of the income for every sect. It was the most important resource of all resources, and the life of every sect.

A crack had been opened in the gates to the shen power era. At the time, the value in the discovery of shen crystals was peerless!

Holding the shen crystal in his hand, Zuo Mo's shen power seemed to be simulated. It became unprecedentedly active. Almost as his mind moved, a thread of shen power came out of the shen crystal and burrowed into Zuo Mo's body along his palm.

When this shen power entered Zuo Mo's body, it immediately merged with the shen power inside Zuo Mo's body. Zuo Mo felt refreshed and comfortable.

The light of the shen crystal in his hand dimmed slightly.

As expected, then shen crystal could help him cultivate shen power!

Zuo Mo suddenly opened his eyes, the light in his eyes bright. He handed the shen crystal to Ceng Lian'er. Moments later, Ceng Lian'er's expression changed.

Ceng Lian'er's shen power was of a completely opposite attribute to his but she could also use the shen crystal. This showed that the shen crystal's shen power did not have any attribute.

This would be of great aid to shen power cultivation of any kind.

If he had the help of shen crystals, his cultivation would be even faster. If he could find enough shen crystals, then his cultivation speed would multiply!

This meant that the time he needed to advance would be greatly

decreased.

A Gui's Undying Shen Power!

Almost without hesitation, Zuo Mo made his decision.

“We need to go to the abyss of Hundred Energy Jie!”

Chapter 690 – The Gravestone Oath

“They really are trash!” Anger flashed through the eyes of the middle-aged person. “They have lost the face of the Ji Family! If he wasn’t my son, humph!”

The last word was spat out murderously. The temperature in the room suddenly dropped.

Ji Heng, the present patriarch of the Ji Family. He was not the eldest son of his family but his marshal level power had allowed him to become the patriarch without any opposition. In the decades that he had been the patriarch, the power of Horizontal Jie’s Ji Family had expanded quickly.

“Young Master has five general level guards. This person having defeated them in a flash is not weak.” The one who spoke was a middle-aged man with a goatee. He was Ji Xi, a member of the Ji Family’s branch family. However, he had the position of chief steward and was deeply trusted by Ji Heng.

“Have A Heng go and pick up that trash. Every time he goes out, he embarrasses us! After he returns, throw him into the Deep Mo Hole,” Ji Heng said coolly.

Ji Xi’s heart shook. The Deep Mo Hole was the cruelest training ground the Ji Family had. It was filled with demonic monsters and it had been many years since someone dared to go down. Being sent there had now become a form of punishment in the clan. Those that had committed great wrongs were thrown in there. If

they were able to come out of there alive, they were spared their death sentence.

“Young Master is slightly proud, but he has not committed any major mistakes” Ji Xi couldn’t help but urge. He knew that if Young Master was thrown into the Deep Mo Hole, he wouldn’t be able to come out alive with his power.

Ji Heng smiled coldly, his white teeth cruel. “If he cannot climb out, he is not qualified to be my son.”

Ji Xi was silent. He knew that Master had already made his decision and any further attempts at persuading him was futile.

Ji Heng did not look at Ji Xi and said to himself. “As to that person who acted against us, have A Heng take care of him.”

Ji Xi nodded to indicated his understanding. He changed the topic. “Master, we haven’t heard any news from the people we sent to the Mo Shen Temple. They most likely have all died.”

A shadow flashed through Ji Heng’s eyes. He sneered coldly and said, “The Mo Shen Temple does have some skill to have formed shen power. Is there any news of Xiao Mo Ge?”

The Mo Shen Temple gave him great pressure. Marshal level had only days ago been the greatest power in the mo territories but now they were not.

The Mo Shen Temple was now the strongest existence!

“No.” Ji Xi shook his head. “He seems to have suddenly disappeared. According to our investigation, the elder corps of Xuan Kong Temple came to capture Xiao Mo Ge. Three of the elders died in the hands of Xiao Mo Ge’s group. The Mo Shen Temple’s people appeared along the way. Strangely, Mo Shen Temple and Xiao Mo Ge did not have a conflict.”

Ji Heng had a thoughtful expression. A moment later, he raised his head. “Pay attention to Xiao Mo Ge. His shen power is not as powerful as the Mo Shen Temple but he does not have a shen temple, he should be cultivating it some other way.”

“Yes!” Ji Xi responded and then left the room.

Ji Heng sank into deep thought. Moments later, he suddenly rose, left the room, and flew into the air.

————

A short while later, he came to a well-concealed valley. The surroundings were heavily guarded.

He was very familiar with this place. Entering the mountain valley, there was a shen temple.

While the shen temple was still incomplete, but there was a sacrificial altar and the main temple. It could be seen that the shen

temple hadn't been constructed recently. It was at least a decade old. He slowly walked to the center of the sacrificial altar and spread his arms. A strange feeling rose.

No one knew that ten years ago, he had started to study shen power.

But ten years had passed, and progress had been slow. Shen power was a sensitive matter. Out of consideration for secrecy, he had never publicized the shen temple.

The sudden appearance of the Mo Shen Temple was a great blow for him.

So belief was the most important thing!

A hint of decisiveness flashed across his eyes.

————

As he continued to cultivate, Zuo Mo's spell skill level rose rapidly. His ling power was the weakest of the three powers. Every improvement in that would directly increase Zuo Mo's skill at controlling shen power.

According to Pu Yao's new categorization method, his mo physique skill level barely reached first-class, his yao arts were second-class, and his spell skill level, even after his furious cultivation spree, had just reached third-class.

Pu Yao judged that Zuo Mo's shen power control was third-class. The most important cause was that his skill with spells was dragging him down.

There was someone to compare to. That rhinoceros mo god. Pu Yao's judgement of him was earth level in power, first-class in technique!

It could be seen just how great the difference between them was. It wasn't just the difference in shen power, even the difference in technique was great.

However, Zuo Mo was not dispirited. He was filled with fighting spirit.

The shen power inside his body was growing everyday, and his technique was growing better by the day. His right hand could endlessly provide him with shen power as though he had a natural shen crystal inside his body. This was an advantage that no one else had.

As for techniques, Pu Yao had already made a list for him. If he could master those frightening spells, he believed that he could conquer shen power.

In Pu Yao's model, if Zuo Mo's shen power methodology could reach first-class, and his shen power level reached intermediate mortal level, or if his methodology was second-class and his shen power was late mortal level, he would be able to match a marshal

level without the Little Mo Treasure Cup.

Zuo Mo did not have any interest in marshal level.

But he was enchanted with the study of shen power methodology. It would allow him to more easily discover the mysteries of shen power and could help him understand the underlying principles of shen power.

For other people, fighting was the most important.

But for Zuo Mo, what he needed to discover was the essence of shen power.

If he could understand the principles of shen power then he would have a way to resolve the Undying Shen Punishment.

When a certain technique was practiced to a very high level, its power could allow you to hold an advantageous position in battle. This was the common saying “one novel move to make a living.” Once one had several of these moves, the chances of victory would greatly increase.

But if you wanted to discover the roots of power, you needed to understand as many methods of use as possible. Each method represented utilization of a certain quality of that power.

The more qualities of the power you mastered, the closer you were to the true essence of the power.

This path he chose was the more difficult path.

Also, the practice of methodology was something that one could not take a short-cut with. It was completely a labor of effort. One had to tirelessly practice it over and over until it became instinct.

Only then would this method, or rather, this quality of power become something that you understood at a fundamental level rather than just cursory understanding.

This was what Zuo Mo was pursuing. His right hand that could continuously form shen power enabled him to invest more time into the dull and vast practice of methods.

Zuo Mo had finished using the shen crystal. He made a general estimate. The shen power contained in the shen crystal was about twenty days worth of shen power produced by Zuo Mo's right hand. This amount was significant.

Undoubtedly, if he could possess enough shen crystals, it would greatly increase the progress of his shen power cultivation.

There was still a while before reaching Hundred Energy Jie. He decided to temporarily put this matter aside until he reached there.

He had carefully recorded what he had experienced in during his study. Then he passed these reflections back to Cloud Sea Jie

through Pu Yao. These reflections would be organized and then added to the Pu Wei Library.

Zuo Mo did not hide anything on how to cultivate shen power. He did not have the time to go back to Cloud Sea Jie so he could only use this method to make a minor contribution to Cloud Sea Jie.

But Zuo Mo had never thought that this action, one he felt minor, would directly push Cloud Sea Jie into the era of shen power.

Pu Wei Library had a strict entrance policy. Those that were able to enter at the present were those that had followed him for a long time. Zuo Mo's subordinates had a nearly blind trust in him. The cultivation reflections among the great number of jade scrolls were always the most welcome content.

In the present Cloud Sea Jie, cultivating three powers at the same time was a new fad.

Due to their isolated location, they did not have much information coming in from the outside world. However, their trust in Zuo Mo allowed them to unhesitatingly choose to cultivate the three powers.

Zuo Mo did not know of all this.

In the sea of consciousness, the three were in discussion.

“Progress is too slow.” Pu Yao frowned. He was not satisfied with Zuo Mo’s progress. “Based on this speed, it would take at least five years for your spells to reach first-class alone! You also have to elevate your yao arts to first-class.”

Zuo Mo also didn’t know what to do. His talent on spells was the weakest of the three powers. He had diligently followed Pu Yao’s cultivation plan but Pu Yao was still dissatisfied with his rate of progress. The difficulty of moving from third-class to second-class was far greater difficulty, and moving from second to first class was multiple times more difficult than that.

Pu Yao also didn’t have a solution. Zuo Mo was hardworking almost beyond Pu Yao’s imagination, but his lack of skill and talent in spells was almost beyond Pu Yao’s imagination. Zuo Mo was, however, unusually outstanding in the mo skills and yao arts.

Damn it, spells were about to become Zuo Mo’s shortcoming!

Pu Yao’s expression was slightly ugly. If Zuo Mo’s spell skill level really wasted too much time, then it meant that the path that he had modeled had a fatal weakness.

At this time, Wei suddenly spoke, “Maybe you can try the Gravestone Oath.”

“Gravestone Oath?” Zuo Mo stilled. “What is that?”

He hadn't thought that Pu Yao who usually looked down on Wei and had repeatedly objected to this to say, "Maybe you can try it."

Zuo Mo looked in confusion at the duo.

Wei slowly spoke, "The Gravestone Oath is a method of using the Gravestone Armor."

"Gravestone Armor?" Zuo Mo's expression was blank. He could not connect the topic at hand to the Gravestone Armor.

"The use of the Gravestone Armor is actually a kind of self-sacrifice. In essence, it is a trade. Sacrifice oneself in trade for power to protect." Wei's expression was solemn and carried an indescribable devoutness.

Zuo Mo jumped in fright. "You are saying for me to turn into the Gravestone Armor?"

"It can be said to be something like that, but also not." Wei said calmly, "In the past, in order to obtain the power for me to protect my tribe, I chose to make the greatest sacrifice in order to gain the greatest amount of power. But you do not need this kind of power. Similarly, you do not have to make such a large sacrifice. This is the rule of the gravestone."

Zuo Mo seemed to understand slightly.

"The Gravestone Oath is frequently used by the inheritors of the

Gravestone Armor. In order to pursue greater cultivation, they would frequently swear certain directed oaths.”

Zuo Mo inquired, “You mean that I need to accept your inheritance?”

Chapter 691 – Bu Zhou City

“The power to protect comes at a price,” Wei said meaningfully. His deep gaze flashed with a light that was stubborn and determined.

Zuo Mo stilled, looking away, he thought of A Gui.

In terms of protection, there was probably none that was more determined than A Gui’s protection. But at the same time, there was no protection that carried such a cruel price.

Was this what it meant to protect someone?

Zuo Mo’s thoughts swirled.

Wei did not speak. Pu Yao also maintained his silence. There was only the crackling of the eerie flames in the sea of consciousness.

Moments later, Zuo Mo looked up and grinned to show an unconcerned smile. “You want to frighten me? Ha! From every angle, this seems to be a profitable business, why wouldn’t I do it? Tell me, tell me, how do I do this?”

Wei looked deeply at Zuo Mo. “You are sure.”

“So chatty, it is best to be quick. Ge is in a hurry to cultivate. Can you afford to waste ge’s time?” Zuo Mo glared.

Wei smiled. “It is very simple.”

As he finished saying this, the gravestone in Zuo Mo’s sea of consciousness suddenly shattered into pieces. It turned to black energy that became snakes that burrowed into Zuo Mo’s body.

Then the black energy formed into a little gravestone inside Zuo Mo’s body.

There were many complex grey patterns on the surface of the new formed gravestone. If one did not look closely, it would be hard to detect them.

In this moment, Zuo Mo seemed to understand something.

“To abide by your ceremony, to execute your wishes, to swear your oath, will you?”

An ancient voice echoed in Zuo Mo’s mind. This scene summoned many memories. But Zuo Mo immediately detected a difference. Hm, the lines were not right!

He remembered the first time it had been “To abide by my ceremony, to execute my wishes, to swear my oath.” How come it changed?

But Zuo Mo did not hesitate for long. When he made his decision,

his mind was filled with Wei's words, the power to protect comes at a price.

Taking a deep breath, the uncaring smile on Zuo Mo's face faded. His expression became solemn and he said, "I'm willing!"

When the words escaped his lips, the complex patterns on the surface of the gravestone suddenly lit up like a web of light.

Zuo Mo's mind blanked.

Moments later, when he recovered from his daze and his eyes refocused, his first action was to touch his chest.

A strange feeling came.

When the gravestone had entered his heart in the past, it had felt rootless and intangible. But now, while the gravestone was still the gravestone, it seemed to have grown many roots in his heart.

"This is it?" Zuo Mo asked Wei in puzzlement.

Wei's expression was slightly tired. But he still smiled and said, "Yes, you did not require much so the price you paid was not large. From now on, the effect of practicing your spells will be three times what it was before, and the price you need to pay is"

"En?" Zuo Mo looked at Wei.

“It is” Wei trailed off.

The tendons in Zuo Mo’s forehead started to throb.

“It is” Wei was smiling.

“It is your mom!” Zuo Mo erupted. His temples throbbed as he howled angrily at Wei’s face.

Wei had a faint smile as he calmly waved a finger. His expression was dignified. “Not my mom.”

Zuo Mo almost went crazy. “I will kill you! I will kill you!”

The most crucial information being withheld left Zuo Mo’s anger burning. If the heavens bestowed a metal rod to him right now, he would skewer this horrid person and burn him over a fire! Also, he would put on enough hot chili!

Wei looked at Zuo Mo with a smile. That smile, that expression, it was like there was “come beg me, come beg me” written on his face.

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth. To deal with a lowly person like this, it seemed he had to use his ultimate move!

The anger on Zuo Mo’s face faded as he said darkly, “Wei, we

should calculate rent. You have lived here a long time, but you haven't paid rent! Right, ge only accepts jingshi and no other currency. Also, don't think of using spells, mo skills, or other things to make up your debt, ge only wants jingshi!"

Wei's smile froze on his face.

Pu Yao who had been watching silently stepped back and hid in the flames. It would not be good to appear in front of Zuo Mo at this time.

If the city gates were burning, it would still affect the fish in the moats.

Rent was a great problem

"Oh, that, actually, your gravestone oath is very simple. There will be a day in every month that you will lose all power until your shen power can resolve the Undying Shen Power. How about it, this price isn't too great, I had to work hard to obtain this for you. Choosing gravestone oaths is a highly technical matter and demands great experience, it isn't something normal people"

Wei nattered on as though he had done great favor by completing a hard task.

"Humph!" Zuo Mo snorted coldly. He turned and then swaggered out of the sea of consciousness.

Behind him, Wei wiped away his cold sweat. As expected, it was easy to forget himself

Pu Yao stepped out of the flames with an expression of scorn.

Coming out of the sea of consciousness, Zuo Mo was thinking.

Losing all of his abilities for one day of the month in exchange for three times the effect when practicing spells, this was a very profitable transaction. However, this was a hidden weakness. If he encountered danger on the day that he lost all of his powers, then it was over for him.

It seemed that he needed to make preparations.

While this created a hidden weaknesses, Zuo Mo was still very satisfied with the gravestone oath. Three times the effect meant that his training time could shrink by two thirds.

In the yard, Zuo Mo started to practice spells.

He was using the [Bowstring Finger Spell]. This was a very complex and profound finger spell that was primarily based on finger movements. It belonged to a sect from before the thousand year war, and it was the sect's founding spell. There were pitifully few high level finger spells in the present. There were only some crude spells such as the [Little Art of Cloud and Rain] that used finger movements.

Xiuzhe currently believed that when the control of ling power reached a certain level, they could leave behind finger movements.

Theoretically, this was completely correct.

But this finger spell was completely different. Its intentions was to use finger movements to allow xiuzhe with low cultivation to use higher level spells.

From the moment he started to practice the finger spell, Zuo Mo immediately detected differences.

His ling power seemed to have become more sensitive. Some parts that he did not understand before were much clearer. After practicing a few times, Zuo Mo's finger movements became smoother and unlike the clumsiness of the past.

As expected, it was effective!

Zuo Mo became alert. Cultivating ling power had always been a painful matter for him. Zuo Mo was enchanted with the ease when he cultivated mo skills and yao arts. But today, the pain had flown away. Zuo Mo finally found that familiar yet unfamiliar feeling of ease.

After practicing furiously for twelve hours, Zuo Mo had not slowed down, still hungry for more.

This feeling was great!

Based on this speed, Zuo Mo had enough confidence that he could raise his spell level to first-class in a short amount of time.

He suddenly felt the Sky Shark descending.

Someone knocked on the door.

Zuo Mo's consciousness spread and he saw the person who came. It was the leader of the sky shark guards.

He waved his hand and the door opened on its own.

“Honored Daren, our shark has reached Bu Zhou City. According to the original schedule, we will stay here for three days. If Daren finds staying on board boring, you may want to go explore,” the leader said respectfully.

There were ways to inform all guests but the shark guard leader still decided to make the trip personally to show respect.

Someone as strong as this was qualified to receive this respect.

Zuo Mo nodded. “I understand.”

The guard leader saw this and did not talk any more. He bowed and then left.

“I have heard that Bu Zhou City produces White Ridge Snake Bones. It is of use to me,” Ceng Lian’er suddenly spoke up.

“White Ridge Snake Bones?” Zuo Mo’s reaction was quick. “Your mo physique?”

“En.” Ceng Lian’er nodded and explained. “A secret of our White Fang Clan. I learned from my father. The White Ridge Snake Bones can improve our White Fang mo physique. However, the White Ridge Snake Bones are only produced in a few places, Bu Zhou City being one of them.”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo nodded and said, “Let’s go and see. I hope that you have enough luck to find some this time.”

Ceng Lian’er smiled. While she had changed her appearance to a normal one, this smile was still filled with beauty.

“A Heng, you have to help me kill him!” The young master of the Ji family gritted out. He had never been humiliated so. Being beaten and stripped naked had actually happened to him. Whenever he thought of what had happened that day, he wanted to find a crack in the ground and bury himself.

It was too embarrassing!

A Heng was not tall. His body was thin, his skin dark, his hair short and bristly. He was dressed in short robes and looked like a

manual laborer without any presence of an expert.

But a person like this was an existence that people in the Ji Family feared.

A Heng looked with slightly pity at the Young Master. This idiot didn't know what fate was awaiting him when he returned. However, he did not show any disrespect on the surface. He laughed lightly. "Young Master, do not worry. It is not so easy for someone to get away with shaming our Ji Family."

The Ji Family young master had an excited expression. "Haha, right! I will want to be present that day. I want to personally see how this guy will die!"

When he finished, his tone was bloodthirsty and hateful.

A Heng smiled dismissively. In his eyes, this kind of cruelty was just an expression of being useless.

"He's exiting the sky shark now," a subordinate reported.

Suddenly, a light flashed across A Heng's eyes. He stood and walked outside.

The young master of the Ji Family seemed to become excited. His eyes were red as he hurried behind A Heng.

A Heng did not pay attention the young master. His body moved like lightning towards the place his subordinate had reported. People along the way were alarmed and moved aside.

Almost at the same time, Zuo Mo seemed to feel something. However, his gaze moved towards the other side of the street. His expression couldn't help but show a thread of shock.

Hm, that was

Chapter 692 – Feng Xin Zi

Yao!

An enormous group of yao were slowly heading in this direction. It was common to see yao in the mo territories, but it was rare to see such a large group of yao. There were also many high level mo guards around the group. Zuo Mo muttered inside, was this a yao envoy?

The society structure of the yao and mo were completely different.

The yao had many large clans, but the Council of Elders were the highest power of the yao. Among the mo, the fractions divided everything up, heroes leading their families to rule over an area.

It was the first time Zuo Mo had seen a group of yao receive such a level of welcome. Bu Zhou City was part of the land of the Tang Family. The Tang Family's most famous expert, Tang Chen, ruled multiple jie with his marshal level power. The Tang Family was also a family with a long history. It could be traced back to the thousand year war.

The Tang Family's style was a peaceful one, and they paid attention to the development of their lands. Due to this, they were respected by the people.

Was the Tang Family going to ally with the yao?

This thought flashed through Zuo Mo's mind but he quickly threw it to the back of his mind. The Tang Family allying with the yao had nothing to do with him. He was just making a short stop in Bu Zhou City and naturally would not worry too much about this matter.

At this time, a sharp presence filled the entire street around him.

Zuo Mo raised his head in surprise. Had someone recognized them?

His upper body did not move as he pulled A Gui. They both seemed to slide backwards like he was on ice. His movements were relaxed and free. Ceng Lian'er followed silently behind him. Her movements seemed more ethereal and eerie. There seemed to be a shadow moving constantly.

"Hm!" A hint of shock flashed across A Heng's face.

The other's movement was unusually smooth. They were able to immediately break free of his lock. It was rare for him to encounter such an event.

But then he snorted. His body suddenly became blurred and divided into six copies. The copies turned to six grey shadows that leapt at the trio from different directions.

It was the first time that Zuo Mo had encountered such an unique

mo physique and he couldn't help but feel slight interest.

His hand opened slightly, and his five fingers danced at an unique rhythm. A strong suction formed at his palm. One of the grey shadows was trapped by the suction force and was immediately became unable to move.

[Collection Art] was not a high level yao art but it had other abilities when used in this situation.

Zuo Mo's mo skills were first class, his yao arts second class, and his spells third-class. His spells were too weak to face enemies. His mo skills were the best and was enough to win this fight but he would lose a chance to train. The gains received from battle was more effective and clearer than usual practice.

His yao arts could be used to fight and also needed to be improved. It was perfect to use now.

Seeing Zuo Mo unexpectedly use yao arts, Ceng Lian'er immediately understood and perceptively did not act. A Gui also seemed to understand the situation. She silently allowed Zuo Mo to pull her and did not attack.

For Zuo Mo, it took almost no thought for a low level yao art like [Collection Art] to form.

The grey shadow that he had caught seemed to be made from a ball of mist. Its figure was very similar to that person but the

features were blurry. While they were lightning fast, Zuo Mo found that their movements were still slightly stiff.

Seeing the [Collection Art] was effective, Zuo Mo's fingers moved. A few more Collection Arts locked onto the other grey shadows.

Once Zuo Mo's [Collection Art] appeared, A Heng frowned. Yao!

If this was any other situation, he would not have any misgivings and would directly kill the other. However, the news of Ji Li Yu's group arriving in mo territory was a hot topic. Old news such as the alliance of yao and mo were once again mentioned.

The mo were close to the yao, and it was common for the two races to marry. However, compared to the frequently interchange between the people, the attitudes of the governments were not so harmonious. It was just because the two had a common enemy that they could stand on the same side regarding major issues. Of course, this was also related to the fact that the mo were made up of many fractions and lacked a true king.

But the furor caused by Ji Li Yu's group caused the relationship between yao and mo to once again be in the public spotlight. A Heng immediately felt wary at the sudden appearance of a yao expert at such a sensitive time.

The Ji Family and the Tang Family were usually at peace. The two even encouraged marriages between the families. However, it was frowned upon to kill people in another's jie. If one wasn't

careful, it was possible to strain relations between the two sides.

In this span of time, the other grey figures had charged. Their movements were slightly stiff but the murderousness they gave off was not false.

At this time, Zuo Mo's other hand rose and drew out a circle.

A silver blinding hoop of light!

Hiss-crack!

The grey shadows seemed to hit a wall of lightning. Countless electrical arcs released, and lightning snakes walked. The lightning immediately swallowed the grey shadows and did not leave anything behind.

A Heng's pupils suddenly contracted. Such a powerful yao art!

“Hm! [Sky Pole Lightning Hoop]!”

A bright voice suddenly spoke. A Heng's heart shook even more. He hadn't even detected this person coming so close. He turned his face and when the other's appearance entered his field of view, he was shocked again, yao!

“Who are you?” The incomer asked as he looked at Zuo Mo with curiosity, “They say that the Sky Pole Lightning Hoop had been

lost long ago. I hadn't thought that someone would still know it. So interesting."

Zuo Mo raised his eyes to look at the other and was astounded inside. This person had been silent when approaching, like a ghost. If it wasn't that Zuo Mo's sixth sense was much stronger than the average person, he would have had a difficult time detecting them.

This person was not old. His clothing was tasteful and it could be seen at a glance that he had status. The other had a sunny smile and seemed friendly.

However, Zuo Mo did not answer. While the other looked harmonious, Zuo Mo could feel a thread of a chilling presence from the other. This presence was extremely faint and hidden deeply. However, Zuo Mo's sixth sense was above normal. He was unusually sensitive to dangerous presences. This cold presence gave him an extreme feeling of danger. It was like a snake coiled in the darkness, cold and cruel.

Also, this kind of cold cruelty was hidden in that sunny and warm smile. It caused Zuo Mo's hairs to stand up.

"Sir is?" A Heng showed a smile as he looked thoughtfully at the other.

"I am Feng Xin Zi." The youth smiled.

A Heng's expression changed. "So Sir is Feng Xin Zi, my apologies

for my manners! I hear that among the younger generation, Brother Feng is a leader!”

His heart was filled with helplessness. The more he didn't want to encounter something, he encountered it. Feng Xin Zi was the guard leader of Ji Li Yu's group and also an expert among the yao. His power was unfathomable and A Heng did not have any confidence he would win in a fight.

Feng Xin Zi smiled and said, “Minuscule abilities like mine cannot be seen in public. What are you two fighting about, how about everyone take a step back for my sake?”

A Heng's face was smiling. “Since Brother Feng said this, this little brother is no problems.”

At this time, Zuo Mo saw the Ji Family young master hurrying over and understood what had happened. An imperceptible smile came to the corner of his mouth. “This one doesn't have any objections.”

Feng Xin Zi was overjoyed. “Great! Why don't I have a drink with you two, since we have resolved matters peacefully?”

The Ji Family young master was about to speak when A Heng glanced at him. His cold gaze caused the young master's curses to shrink back into his mouth. A smile once again hung on A Heng's face. “Naturally.”

Feng Xin Zi turned to look at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo shook his head. “My apologies, this one still has matters and not the time. Please pardon me.”

Finishing, he left with A Gui and Ceng Lian’er.

Feng Xin Zi’s gaze immediately darkened. A Heng saw this, and an imperceptible smile flashed across his lips before disappearing. “Brother Feng, let’s go and drink until we are drunk!”

A sunny smile came back onto Feng Xin Zi’s smile. “Alright!”

Feng Xin Zi. Zuo Mo was sure that he had heard this name somewhere. But no matter how hard he thought about it, he could not remember.

He gave up, but he was sure that Feng Xin Zi was extremely powerful. Zuo Mo noticed that Feng Xin Zi had come from that yao group. Right now, Zuo Mo only wanted to cultivate and not get dragged into other matters. Consequently, he had not hesitated in refusing Feng Xin Zi’s invitation.

“Let’s go and see where we can buy White Ridge Snake Bones,” Zuo Mo pushed his thoughts aside and said to Ceng Lian’er.

Zuo Mo’s group went into a few shops and did not have any discoveries. A kind-hearted storekeeper told them honestly that what they sold would not reach the level of the White Ridge Snake

Bones and suggested for them to go the Rare Articles Hall to look.

The three followed the shopkeeper's suggestion and went to the Rare Articles Hall.

The entrance to the Rare Articles Hall was normal and almost in disrepair. It seemed like an average little store and did not show any of the presence of the best store in Bu Zhou City.

Zuo Mo and Ceng Lian'er exchanged a look. Both of them were slightly surprised.

But since they had come, Zuo Mo decided to go in to look. When they stepped across the doorway, the scene in front of them changed.

Mo weapons of strange shapes hung in the void in front of them. Each mo weapon had a completely different presence, some warm, some explosive, some cold

These mo weapons of various styles were arranged in parallel to form a staircase made completely of mo weapons.

Stepping on the stairs, they could clearly feel the unique presence of the mo weapons under their feet. This feeling was extremely strange.

Zuo Mo couldn't help but sigh in shock. Such extravagance.

Each of these mo weapons were general level mo weapons. Any of them, if put on the market, would be good things. But in this place, they were just used as stairs for people to step on.

Ceng Lian'er's eyes immediately lit up. With this staircase, it could be seen just how powerful Rare Articles Hall was.

When they walked to the end of the staircase, an old person was already waiting there.

Chapter 693 – A Complete Set Of White Ridge Snake Bones

“Welcome, please, are you here to sell or purchase treasures?” the old person asked respectfully.

Zuo Mo nodded and said directly, “Does your store have White Ridge Snake Bones?”

“White Ridge Snake Bones?” A hint of surprise flashed across the unclear eyes of the old person. He raised his head and said, “Our store does have White Ridge Snake Bones. Please come with me.”

Finishing, he turned and walked inside.

The trio followed behind the old man. The ceiling above their head was like the night sky. Light streaked across like meteors, reflecting on mo matrices. There were mo weapons floating in the sky above them like innumerable stars.

Threads of various colors fell from the mo weapons and swayed like a sea of grass.

Zuo Mo’s thoughts shifted. He reached out a hand to grab a green thread in front of him. When his hand touched the thread of light, one of the mo weapons above his head lit up and then it appeared in Zuo Mo’s palm.

Ceng Lian'er was extremely interested. She pulled on a silver thread of light. A pair of sickles appeared in her hands.

The old person did not hurry them and explained with a smile. "This is the Mo Weapon Firmament of the store. The mo weapons you are holding are not the real ones, but the presence is the exact same as the real article. You can examine them at your leisure. If you want one of them, you only need to pay the corresponding mobei and it will fly into your hands."

Zuo Mo was skilled in mo matrices. After standing and observing the Mo Weapon Firmament for a while, he had a general understanding of the mechanism. He smiled slightly and opened his hand. The mo weapon in his hand turned into a light that flew into the firmament above them.

He naturally did not have a desire for the mo weapons here.

A short time later, the old person took the trio to an elegant tea room. In the tea room, a white-faced and beardless middle-aged mo was idly drinking tea.

The middle-aged mo saw the trio and showed a smile. He motioned with his hand. "Please sit."

Then he filled three cups and handed them over. A pleasing fragrance spread in the tea room. The old person had an intoxicated expression. Seeing this, the middle-aged mo also handed the old person a cup.

The old person was overjoyed and carefully took the teacup. He said hurriedly, “Many thanks, Chief Steward!”

Ceng Lian’er suddenly spoke, “A pretty good tea, stone sprout.”

The middle-aged mo showed surprise and joy. “I hadn’t thought that Miss is also enjoys tea like me! Greetings!”

Ceng Lian’er took a sip. After savouring it for a moment, she said serenely, “I hear that your store has White Ridge Snake Bones?”

The middle-aged mo gave a small smile. “Yes, this small store has a complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones.”

“Complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones?” Ceng Lian’er was unable to keep her composure or disguise her joy. The White Ridge Snake Bones were hard to find, and a complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones was much rarer.

The middle-aged mo smiled slightly and said, “Yes, this set of White Ridge Snake Bones is complete and flawless. Truthfully, it is the first time the store has encountered such a perfect set of White Ridge Snake Bones since it was founded.”

“Name your price,” Little Mo Ge said with bravado.

“Trade only.” The middle-aged mo took a sip of tea before saying. “Materials of the same level. If it is a mo weapon, it has to be an earth mo weapon.”

Earth mo weapon!

Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. A earth mo weapon was just one level below sky mo weapon. In all of the mo territories, there were just one hundred and eight of those. Ceng Lian'er's Green Cicada Sword and the previous Black-hearted Treasure Coins had all been earth mo weapons.

Zuo Mo had forged the Black-hearted Treasure Coins into the Little Mo Treasure Cup. If they brought out the Green Cicada Sword, it would undoubtedly expose their identities.

Ceng Lian'er put down the teacup without changing her expression. She shook her head and said, "It is too expensive."

"It is very expensive," the middle-aged mo nodded his head and said, "but it is worth this price."

Ceng Lian'er was silent. The other was right. A complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones was also a priceless treasure.

She stood and said to Zuo Mo. "Let's go."

Little Mo Ge didn't stand. He turned towards the middle-aged mo. "Does your store want earth mo weapons, or earth level mo weapons?"

The middle-aged mo was slightly surprised. He understood what Little Mo Ge was saying. Did the other have mo weapons that could match earth mo weapons?

There were one hundred and eight earth mo weapons and all of them had been observed and their characteristics recorded. It was possible to find information on everyone.

Mo weapons that could rival earth mo weapons.

Had some mo weapon grandmaster made a new work recently?

The middle-aged mo was puzzled but he still said with a smile, “If the level of the mo weapon can reach the level of an earth mo weapon, it is possible.”

An earth level mo weapon that was not among the ranking of earth mo weapons could undoubtedly be sold for a higher price.

No one wanted their mo weapon to be one that other people knew everything about.

Zuo Mo stood. “Alright, we will return after a few days.”

Seeing the certainty on Zuo Mo’s face, the middle-aged mo felt some trust. He stood to see them off. “This one will respectfully wait for your visit.”

Leaving the Rare Artifacts Hall, the trio walked on the street.

Ceng Lian'er serenely spoke, "Other than the Green Cicada Sword, we do not have any other earth mo weapons."

"We'll just forge one." Zuo Mo's words were filled with great confidence.

"Forge one?" Ceng Lian'er was astonished.

She had not expected such words.

Zuo Mo had not been joking.

For a person who was knowledgeable in mo matrices, skilled in forging, that possessed the Sun Shen Fire, and was wealthy, it was not very difficult to forge a mo weapon.

However, Zuo Mo would have to do all he could to make an earth mo weapon. But it wasn't that Zuo Mo didn't have any confidence. He had studied the Black-heart Treasure Coins and the Green Carp Tongue Sword.

Naturally, they could not trade the Green Carp Tongue Sword. All of the mo territories knew that Marshal Yu had died by Zuo Mo's hand. If this thing was made public, it would definitely draw a tsunami of attention.

The next problem was that Zuo Mo needed to forge an earth mo weapon using the materials he had on hand.

He had a lot of good things. As the quality of materials increased, their uses became more general. In terms of low level materials, talismans and mo weapons used completely different materials. But when it came to the higher grades, the two overlapped.

Zuo Mo had a lot of high level materials, especially what he had taken from Ji Zheng's body. Those were all top materials.

Zuo Mo also had an advantage. He had large numbers of general level mo weapons. In that fight against Marshal Yu, almost all the general level mo under Marshal Yu's command had been killed. Their mo weapons naturally landed in Zuo Mo's hand. Other than the mo weapons he had given his soldiers, Zuo Mo still had a large number of mo weapons.

These remaining mo weapons were not of great use to the present Zuo Mo. He didn't lack mobei at this time so there was no point in selling them. Also, the materials that he had to use now were all precious treasures that almost couldn't be bought with mobei.

Zuo Mo's idea was based on these mo weapons.

Before the thousand year war, there had been many mo weapon forging methods but that were now lost. In Wei's words, it was called "craftsmanship." Wei was experienced and the ultimate authority in this area. He could trace any kind of mo weapon

forging method back to the ancient era.

Ever since Zuo Mo took the gravestone oath, Wei's attitude was so good it was frightening. He was completely different from his previous half-living state. After enjoying the meticulous concern, Zuo Mo quickly found a nightmare had begun.

–Wei was actually a chatterbox!

Heavens! After knowing this guy for so long, Zuo Mo only now found that Wei was a chatterbox. Even Pu Yao, who ghosts and monsters avoided, chose the path of avoidance when facing the maddening nattering.

Zuo Mo finally understood what it was like to be haunted.

“A Zuo, you want to use the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship? This idea is good. However, I'm not sure about many of the details. It has been too long. You need to try it yourself. Oh, I remember. I've never introduced the history of the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship to you. Aiyaya, I've actually missed such an important matter. I'm old, my memory is failing. Oh oh oh, speaking of the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship, I have to start from thirty five thousand years ago. At that time”

Zuo Mo felt as though a bunch of flies were buzzing around him.

So terrifying!

“Stop!” Zuo Mo yelled at Wei.

Wei immediately closed his mouth. His eyes were wide and his expression innocent.

Zuo Mo reflexively rubbed his head. He knew that ever since he had sworn the gravestone oath, there was a connection between him and wei. All of Wei’s hidden personality was now exposed.

Calmed down, Zuo Mo started to think.

He did plan on using the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship. This was the best choice at the moment. The Weapon Layering Craftsmanship was to layer many mo weapons to forge one mo weapon. Zuo Mo had learned of craftsmanship methods that had been lost after the thousand year war from Wei.

The quality of the mo weapons he had was very good. If he used the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship, and he was lucky, he might obtain an earth mo weapon.

However, while Wei had done some mo weapon forging, he was not a proper mo weapon forger. Zuo Mo had to explore many things by himself.

Fortunately, there were mo weapon pools in Bu Zhou City specifically for forging mo weapons.

The forging of talismans mostly used fire, so what resulted were

all kinds of cauldrons.

Forging mo weapons occurred in mo weapon pools.

Bu Zhou City had an Underground Nether River that was very suitable for forging mo weapons. Most of the mo weapon pools were constructed by the Underground Nether River.

The Underground Nether River was silent. It was about twenty li wide and spectacular to see. The river water of the Underground Nether River was as sticky as glue, black yet clear, and silent as it flowed.

When one walked along the river, there were mo weapon pools of various sizes along the banks that seemed to stretch out endlessly.

There were also countless caverns that had been dug out along the banks. People frequently used mo skills to guide the water into their caves. The lower the cave was, the more mo weapon pool water there was, and the better the quality. It was also more expensive. The caverns higher up were much cheaper and it required people to get their own water.

There were two kinds of mo weapon pools here. One kind was the mo weapon pools owned by the local prominent families. These mo weapon pools were not open to the outside and were private property of these families. The other kind of mo weapon pools were open to everyone. Anyone that could pay the mobei could use them. These mo weapon pools were managed by the Tang Family.

An old male mo came up. He was wearing the insignia of the Tang Family.

“Is there something you need?”

“I need a mo weapon pool,” Zuo Mo said.

“What quality?” the other asked.

“The highest quality,” Zuo Mo said without hesitation.

The old man was slightly surprised. The highest quality mo weapon pools wasn't just very expensive to use, the water was turbulent and abundant. If one did not have enough power, they would not be able to control the power.

Was this person a famous mo weapon master?

Chapter 694 – Weapon Layering

Craftsmanship

“He rented a mo weapon pool?” The chief steward was slightly surprised. The trio that visited the other day had attracted his interest and he had ordered his subordinates to pay attention to their movements.

“Yes, they rented the Heaven tier mo weapon pool.” The subordinate had investigated thoroughly and hurried back to report.

“Heaven tier!” The middle-aged mo stilled. Of course he knew what this meant. Only those with some skill would dare to rent a heaven tier mo weapon pool. As the highest grade of mo weapon pool in Bu Zhou City, it was expensive to rent. The volume of water was astounding, and it was so difficult to control that almost nobody used it.

Was there a mo weapon master among them?

The face of the average-looking youth flashed across the mind of the middle-aged mo but he suddenly realized that, no matter how hard he thought back, he could not remember the details of the youth’s appearance. The other two females were also so ordinary that he could not remember them.

He was experienced and he immediately realized the trio had probably disguised themselves.

But his thoughts did not linger on the question. There were many people in these chaotic times that did not like others knowing their identities. Those with power always had their own eccentricities. What he cared about were mo weapon masters, especially powerful mo weapon masters. Any strong mo weapon master meant an endless and steady profit for a business.

Mo weapon masters were a kind of resource, and a powerful mo weapon master was a resource that had to be fought over.

Thinking about the youth's cool and confident expression, the middle-aged mo's heart reflexively jumped.

Earth level mo weapon!

If he could really forge one

The mind of the middle-aged mo which he always prided himself on being unaffected by anything was immediately disturbed.

“Pay close attention, I need to know all the details! Do not be afraid of spending money, understand?” It was rare that the middle-aged mo tone was so serious.

“Yes! This subordinate understands!”

In Zuo Mo's view, of the three great cultivation systems, for

forging, he had to admit that the xiuzhe far surpassed the other two races. Seal scripts were a vast and complex field that yao and mo could not compare to.

In comparison, while mo matrices were their own system, they were not as well-developed as seal scripts. But even so, those in the mo territories that understood mo matrices were considered well-learned and were few in number.

This was related to the attitude of mo towards their mo weapons.

The forging methods of mo weapons were usually simple and crude but there was something that the xiuzhe could not rival them in, materials. The materials that were used in mo weapons were usually a part of the mo themselves, for example, a feather, or nails. So while mo weapons were crudely made, but after being tempered daily and affinity granted by having come from a part of the owner's body, they were as a literal extension of their own bodies.

However, those were just average mo weapons.

Top level mo weapons such as the earth mo weapons were not so easy to make.

Of the one hundred and eight earth mo weapons, other than the extremely rare few that had been forged by the user, the great majority were forged by mo weapon masters.

For mo weapon masters, forging an earth level mo weapon was the highest goal of their lifetime. The makers of the twelve sky mo weapons were the most accomplished mo weapon masters of their era, and the best mo weapon masters in mo history. Each of their names represented a legend.

In Zuo Mo's view, forging earth level mo weapons were not a very difficult matter. He only needed the necessary materials. Even if he didn't have any, he could still accomplish it through unorthodox methods such as using weapon layering. But the creation of sky mo weapons was out of the range of his abilities.

There were many mo weapon masters gathered around the mo weapon pools of Bu Zhou City. Many people stayed here for many years to forge mo weapons. This city quarter had, long ago, developed into an area for mo weapon masters and provided a large group of residents a way to make a living. Meaning it was possible to buy most common materials from these suppliers.

This saved Zuo Mo a lot of time.

After spending two million mo bei on all kinds of materials, Zuo Mo had finished his preparations.

The monthly rent for the heaven tier mo weapon pool was about five hundred thousand mo bei. In other words, without even starting, Zuo Mo had paid two and a half million in mobei. The wealthy Zuo Mo did not feel anything regarding the expense.

Two and a half million mo bei was just the price of an above

average general level mo weapon.

He had a whole pile of general level mo weapons in his ring. This relatively small expenditure was not enough to make him feel pain.

But while he did not feel pain, it did not mean that other people did not feel pain. The mo weapon masters around the Underground Nether River quickly learned that there was someone who had come and spent two million on materials in one go.

When they heard that this person had also rented the heaven teir mo weapon pool, it attracted their attention.

There were two guesses about this person. Either this person was a wastrel or he was someone accomplished!

Zuo Mo did not have the idle time to listen to the gossip. His time was tight. The sky shark would only stay here for a few days.

If he didn't have the weapon layering craftsmanship up his sleeve, and that the complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones being so important to Ceng Lian'er, Zuo Mo definitely would not waste his time on this.

But since he had started, he would naturally do his best!

'Waste' was not a word in Little Mo Ge's vocabulary.

Ceng Lian'er and A Gui stood guard outside the mo weapon pool to prevent others from disturbing Zuo Mo.

The heaven tier mo weapon pool was about half a mu large. The thick and black pool water flowed in from the Underground Nether River and formed a natural whirlpool in the pool. The whirlpool spun at a stunning speed like thousands of horses racing. A thick, dark, and cold presence emanated from it. Those with slightly weaker constitutions would feel cold all over, and would suffer internal injuries if exposed for long periods of time.

But Zuo Mo's mo physique was yang and domineering so he didn't feel any discomfort at all.

He made a circle around the mo weapon pool and nodded in satisfaction. The riverwater of the Underground Nether River was pure and yin in attribute. There were large amounts of mo matrices set up around the heaven tier mo weapon pool. The vast amount of water would be able to completely wash and temper the materials.

When he thought of this, Zuo Mo added many new mo matrices on the foundation of the original mo matrices. The roaring whirlpool suddenly became quiet. However, the center of the whirlpool deepened and ripples spread from the center of the whirlpool.

Zuo Mo started to throw materials into the mo weapon pool.

The black yet clear water started to become opaque. The whirlpool seemed to be able to swallow everything. The materials he threw in disappeared without a trace.

When the last article was thrown into the water, the pool water actually became a dark red.

The dark red whirlpool was like an enormous blood eye continuously spinning and would cause people to focus their attention on it.

Zuo Mo closed his eyes. A general level mo weapon appeared on his hand. This was a copper spear that flashed with a blue light that would shock people's souls.

Zuo Mo threw the little copper spear into the dark red whirlpool.

Eleven general level mo weapons were thrown in a stream into the mo weapon pool. The dark red whirlpool became even more red until it became the color of blood.

When the last general level mo weapon was thrown into the mo weapon pool, the moving whirlpool suddenly stopped.

Zuo Mo did not dare to be careless. Multicolored lights flashed on his hands. As his fingers changed, lights shot into the mo weapon pool.

If xiuzhe skilled in forging saw this, they would gape at

everything that was happening here!

Zuo Mo was actually using the methods of talisman forging!

Yes, Zuo Mo was using the methods for forging talismans. However, what he used was different from the average talisman forging methods. The lights that lit up on his hands were not spells but mo matrices!

In other words, he was using methods of seal formations on mo matrices.

This took twelve hours.

Even a person as resilient as Zuo Mo showed slight exhaustion.

Twelve hours passed.

Pop-splish, pop-splish!

The blood like mo weapon pool seemed to be boiling and bubbles surfaced and popped.

Zuo Mo's attention was focused and he did not dare to relax at all. The blood red mo weapon pool by his feet was quickly becoming orange, and he could see the mo weapons at the bottom of the pool. However, each mo weapon was now a size smaller than it had been before while the light they gave off was even brighter

than before. After the cleansing and tempering of the mo weapon pool, all of the impurities had been washed away and they were even higher in quality.

The bright mo matrices flowed on the surface of these objects.

Zuo Mo released a breath. Up until now, he had not made a mistake.

There were twelve general level mo weapons in the pool. They stood upright in the water.

Zuo Mo did not immediately start the next step but instead sat down in the lotus position to meditate.

Six hours later, he opened his eyes. The exhaustion on his face had disappeared. His eyes flashed. He had recovered to his peak condition.

He suddenly raised his hands.

One of the mo weapons at the bottom of the mo weapon pool shook. An extremely minuscule ripple appeared on the smooth mirror-like surface of the pool.

That mo weapon slowly melted. One hour later, it had turned into a pile of metal liquid with countless mo matrices flowing on the surface.

Then another mo weapon flew over. This metal liquid seemed to come alive and wrapped around the incoming mo weapon. Then the bright red metal water seemed to slowly and persistently swallow the other mo weapon like a monster.

A hour later, the metal water was twice as big and the mo matrices on its surface had turned brighter and even more complex.

Then it started to consume another mo weapon!

Time slowly flowed by like this.

The pool water of the mo weapon pool slowly became clear and glittering. Any small speck of water seemed to be attracted by an invisible force. It rose up from the mo weapon pool.

Then, mist started to form on top of the pool. The mist seemed to be alive and started to merge together.

The combined mist ball slowly danced on top of the pool like a dragon.

It became more and more nimble and its presence continued to increase.

What Zuo Mo did not know was that an astounding

transformation was happening to the Underground Nether River outside of his mo weapon pool.

Mo weapon master after mo weapon master continued to fly out of their mo weapon pools. There were numerous mo weapon masters that were floating above the banks of the Underground Nether River.

They were staring in shock at the vast surface of the Underground Nether River!

Chapter 695 – The Presence Of Earth Level Mo Weapon

Streaks of blood coloured water rose in the vast and serene surface of the river. In a flash, the clear black color was completely overtaken by blood red. The calm surface also became restless and turbulent as though there was a terrifying monster hidden underneath surface of the river. The waves that rose gradually became higher and higher, and crashed against the shores.

The mo weapon masters floating above the river had never seen the Underground Nether River like this. All of them had panicked expressions.

“Look! Over there!”

Suddenly, a mo weapon master with keen eyes pointed at a mo weapon pool and shouted in shock. He attracted the attention of everyone else. They all turned to look in the direction he was pointing.

Hiss!

Simultaneous inhales sounded above the river.

Thick black clouds had gathered above a mo weapon pool. The Underground Nether River was thirty li under the ground. How could clouds form from the forging?

But the thick clouds truly appeared in front of them.

Boom-om-om!

Suddenly, deep thunder sounded from within the clouds.

The mo weapon masters above the river stared at each other. There was nothing dangerous from the sound of the thunder but they all knew what this meant. Tales of it had been passed down from a long time ago that when a great mo weapon appeared, it would cause a worldly apparition.

What was happening right now was undoubtedly

“It’s the heaven tier pool! It’s the heaven tier pool!” another mo weapon master shouted.

“It’s him!”

“So it’s him!”

The mo weapon masters all descended into noise. That mysterious person who had spent two and a half million mo bei and rented the heaven tier mo weapon pool. He had been the topic of discussion before. How could they not be shocked when they saw that the mo weapon pool was causing all this noise was the heaven tier pool?

Boom-om-om!

The roars of thunder became more frequent. It was possible to see lightning flash among the thick cloud layer.

At this time, beads of blood slowly rose from the Underground Nether Pool. Each blood bead was glowing and perfect.

It was extremely stunning to see the dense layer of blood beads floating above the vast surface of the river. These blood beads were of various sizes but all of them were perfectly round. Detail-minded mo weapon masters immediately noticed that as the beads of blood rose, the Underground Nether River that had become blood-colored was recovering its original color.

Gradually the surface of the river recovered to its usual calm until there was no tinge of blood in the water.

These blood beads

Just as everyone was both puzzled and shocked, the blood beads floating above the river suddenly flew together towards the heaven tier mo weapon pool.

Almost at the same time, a great blinding bolt of lightning lit up the cloud and illuminated the Underground Nether River.

An unforgettable scene fell into everyone's field of view. In this moment, they unconsciously stopped breathing.

The sky full of blood beads drew out bright bloody arrows in the air!

The bloody arrows were like water and carved up the air above the river!

All of the blood arrows pointed towards the heaven tier mo weapon pool!

There were so many it stole their breath!

When the last blood bead entered the heaven tier mo weapon pool, a blood colored pillar of light thrust through the clouds like a sword.

Boom-om-om!

The earth seemed to be trembling and vibrating violently.

All of them gaped at this blood colored light pierced the sky like a sword dozens of zhang thick.

Heavens!

The sword of light actually thrust through the rock and pierced the sky above their heads!

Thirty li! That pool was thirty li under the ground!

The spectacular soul-shaking scene caused all of the Underground Nether Pool to lose their power of speech and become completely silent.

And at this time, Bu Zhou City was in a furor.

The enormous blood colored sword of light suddenly erupted from the earth and charged into the clouds. It could be seen from far away.

Only someone that was blind could not see it.

————

Ji LI Yu looked at Feng Xin Zi who appeared idle and relaxed. She said coolly, “You seem to have free time. What, you didn’t go out to drink today?”

Feng Xin Zi roared with laughter. “I have to rest occasionally.”

“Just don’t forget our mission.” Ji Li Yu smiled coldly. “We still haven’t found Xiao Mo Ge yet!”

“Don’t be impatient.” Feng Xin Zi waved his hand.

“Don’t be impatient?” Ji Li Yu’s voice suddenly rose. Anger showed on her peerlessly beautiful face. “You’re telling me not to be impatient? How many days has it been? Didn’t the intelligence say that Xiao Mo Ge is definitely taking this route? How come we haven’t encountered him until now?”

Feng Xin Zi felt a slight headache. He knew that Ji Li Yu disliked this mission very much. He could only comfort, “There is no use in being impatient. This is the mo territories, not the yao realms.”

“So we are just waiting like this?” Ji Li Yu looked hard to Feng Xin Zi and said.

Feng Xin Zi was slightly displeased but did not show it in his expression. “It would be best if you had a solution.”

“What about those three? Weren’t you suspicious of them?” Ji Li Yu changed the topic.

Feng Xin Zi did suspect that Zuo Mo’s trio was Xiao Mo Ge’s group. While the appearance was different, but the two women traveled with the man and fit the descriptions. That day, Zuo Mo had also used yao arts. Feng Xin Zi knew that Xiao Mo Ge was skilled in yao arts. Was a person that could beat a prison-breaking battle someone that could only be described as “skilled in yao arts?”

How could Feng Xin Zi not suspect someone that fit the description so well at such a critical time?

Yet what had happened later surprised Feng Xin Zi.

The trio first went to the Rare Artifacts Hall and then to the Underground Nether River. Feng Xin Zi even knew that they had rented the heaven tier mo weapon pool and spent two and a half million mo bei.

All the signs indicated that this person was a mo weapon master, and a skilled one at that.

Feng Xin Zi was slightly depressed but did not show it. “He is a probable suspect. His yao art skill is very high. While he is making mo weapons, it might be a kind of disguise.”

“Disguise?” Ji LI Yu snorted. “Why does he have to disguise himself?”

Feng Xin Zi was silent.

This was also something that Feng Xin Zi did not understand. Xiao Mo Ge had a great reputation in the mo territories and had two top level generals in his command. The mo territories factions didn't dare to offend him and even the Council of Elder's opinion was that Xiao Mo Ge's faction was one of the strongest.

In a situation like this, Xiao Mo Ge didn't need to hide himself. No one would dare to provoke him.

Just at this time, a vast and intimidating presence suddenly shot into the sky suddenly.

Feng Xin Zi's expression changed slightly. Such a powerful presence. His mind moved and his figure disappeared!

In the next moment, he appeared in the sky. He saw the straight pillar of blood light that pierced the sky and inhaled suddenly. His eyes even became dazed for a brief moment.

Earth mo weapon!

These three words flashed through his mind.

Feng Xin Zi was one of the most accomplished geniuses among the younger yao generation. He had been educated by an orthodox yao art house and his knowledge was something that the average yao did not have. Without any hesitation, he judged the origin of this terrifying presence!

Only earth mo weapons could have such a terrifying presence!

He had once heard that Xiao Mo Ge had a sky mo weapon, the infamous Anti Dragon Claw. However, that was just a rumor and he had not seen it with his own eyes. But he had experienced the presence of an earth mo weapon before. The unique presence of an earth mo weapon that filled the air and seemed to take over the world was suffocating.

Earth mo weapon, it really was an earth mo weapon!

Had someone forged an earth mo weapon?

Feng Xin Zi looked in disbelief at the blood colored pillar of light that connected earth and sky.

————

When the bloody pillar of light erupted out of the earth, the expression of the middle-aged mo that was idly drinking tea inside the Rare Artifacts Hall changed. His body suddenly disappeared from his spot.

“Earth mo weapon!”

When he saw the bloody pillar of light that thrust into the sky, he shouted in shock.

From his experience of interacting with countless mo weapons, he recognized it at first glance of the bloody pillar of light. He was thoroughly familiar with all one hundred and eight earth mo weapons. While he had not seen them all in person, he knew the unique traits and presence of each earth mo weapon.

The strange presence given off by this thick blood colored pillar of light was completely different than any earth mo weapon he knew of.

He had lived for twenty years in Bu Zhou City and was familiar with everything here. When he noticed the position of the bloody pillar of light, he immediately stilled.

Wasn't it the Underground Nether River there?

Suddenly, he thought of that normal looking youth with that confident expression. A thought flashed through his mind. He gaped with an expression of disbelief.

Had had that guy really forged an earth level mo weapon?

————

As the masters of Bu Zhou City, the Tang Family was also alerted.

That bloody pillar of light was truly too eye-catching, too stunning! Almost all the experts of the Tang Family flew into the air. Each person paled in shock when they saw the spectacular color of blood.

“Earth mo weapon! Such a presence can only be an earth mo weapon!” A Tang Family elder was so excited his lips were trembling. “Is there an earth mo weapon buried under our Tang Family land?”

“Someone has forged an earth mo weapon!” Tang Chen suddenly

spoke. His figure was tall and broad but his eyes were long and narrow. His eyes were bright as he narrowed them.

“Forged an earth mo weapon?”

All of the Tang Family elders were shocked.

The Tang Family were not country bumpkins. The Tang Family had their own earth mo weapon, [Fire Rain Meteor Hammer] ranked forty first! This great mo weapon was owned by the family patriarch Tang Chen. In Tang Chen’s most famous battle, he had used the [Fire Rain Meteor Hammer] to defeat the famed patriarch of the Ma Family, Ma Yuan Qi who had also been marshal level.

It had been that battle that established Tang Chen’s fame. It was also that battle that had caused the great Ma Family to quickly decline. They had almost died out now.

No one knew better than they did the value of an earth mo weapon!

Earth mo weapons were the weapons most suited to marshals. Only earth mo weapons could completely tolerate the terrifying power of a marshal!

One hundred and eight earth mo weapons existed, although this number did not refer to all the mo weapons that still existed, but from the past to present. These were all the earth mo weapons that had ever existed. Many of the one hundred and eight had

disappeared a long time ago. No one knew where they were. Right now, there were just about twenty or so that people knew of.

Sky mo weapons were things of myths and legends, and many people even though they were fanciful tales.

Earth mo weapons were the best mo weapons that almost all the mo recognized!

Someone had actually created an earth mo weapon!

Everyone's eyes turned covetous.

Chapter 696 – Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike

The appearance of the blood colored pillar of light lasted for an hour.

Bu Zhou City was completely overturned. It was possible to see the eye-catching pillar of light from any corner of the city. The pillar of light that reached into the sky, and the terrifying presence it emanated all showed the power of its source!

The great majority people suspected that it was a mo weapon appearing. Only the most well-informed people knew that someone had created an earth level mo weapon!

This news was much more of a shock than the previous guess and more valuable!

A mo weapon master that could forge an earth level mo weapon was definitely among the top mo weapon masters of this era. Every one of them had a significant position in the mo territories, and they were targets that all the factions pursued with all of their power.

Earth mo weapons were in practice the top level of mo weapons. The sky mo weapons might be more powerful, but that did not mean that the craftsmanship techniques were more advanced, but that there was a difference in the materials used.

Take the Anti-Dragon Claw as an example. The Anti Dragon Claw was made from the foreclaw of a vicious dragon. This dragon was savage and vicious, and had killed innumerable number of people. Supposedly, its foreclaw had turned red because it had been dyed in the blood of its victims. But this was not enough to make it possible to forge it into a sky mo weapon. What caused it to qualify to become a sky mo weapon was that in the dragon's final battle, this foreclaw had penetrated the heart of another powerful dragon.

A mo weapon master had coincidentally passed by and cut down this foreclaw. When they had done this, the other dragon's heart had been hanging from the foreclaw. Supposedly, this heart had been beating at that time.

That had created the materials for the Anti-Dragon Claw.

Putting aside the requirement of rare materials seen once in a millennium, earth mo weapons were the peak of mo weapons.

Each earth mo weapon forged represented the true and great skill of a mo weapon master.

They were truly grandmasters. Grandmaster, this great and honored appellation.

Their value was not because they might be able to forge a second earth mo weapon. In truth, the great majority of grandmaster were never able to forge a second earth mo weapon. However, they were still respected and the targets of every faction.

That was because they could greatly increase the skill of other mo weapon masters.

This kind of improvement was decisive and fundament to any faction.

Therefore, Bu Zhou City was in a frenzy!

Ceng Lian'er was standing guard by the door. She was filled with shock. That stunning blood colored pillar of light had astounded everyone at the Underground Nether River and also caused her to gape in shock.

Earth mo weapon!

He had actually forged an earth mo weapon!

Up until now, Ceng Lian'er's expression was slightly dazed. This was an earth mo weapon! She possessed the Green Carp Tongue Sword. She was not skilled with swords so she had been surprised when Zuo Mo had given the Green Carp Tongue Sword to her so easily. She treasured the Green Carp Tongue Sword.

Because this was an earth mo weapon!

Only one hundred and eight earth mo weapons had ever existed

in the mo territories!

When she heard the quote from the Rare Artifacts Hall, she had given up. It was not because the complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones was not worth so much but because it was too expensive.

The value of an earth mo weapon could not be accounted for using mo bei because there had never been an earth mo weapon on the market.

When the pillar of light had erupted, her mind turned blank.

She looked with slight admiration at A Gui. From beginning to end, A Gui had been unusually calm. The noise hadn't caused her expression to change at all.

Suddenly, A Gui suddenly raised her head. Her lifeless eyes suddenly lit up with purple energy.

Ceng Lian'er paused but she reacted quickly. A sharp light flashed across her eyes as she shouted, "Come out!"

A figure appeared like a ghost.

"Haha, the little girl is very strong"

Before the other finished speaking, A Gui's figure disappeared from her spot. She did not hesitate to attack.

Ceng Lian'er grimaced. A Gui had attacked too quickly! While she was pretty, she was not a hesitant person. Her eyes flashed and she attacked as well!

They had been together for some time. She knew that A Gui was very sensitive to enmity. If the other had attacked immediately, she definitely had detected the other's enmity!

However, she did not forget that they could not expose their identities. She did not use shen power but mo skills.

Her mo skills were not weak, and had improved greatly after cultivating with Zuo Mo in recent days.

Her right hand raised slightly. White mo matrices appeared on her arm like tattoos. They quickly covered her entire arm. Her fingers were slightly spread as she grabbed at the other.

Hiss!

A thin but sharp sound of the air breaking was like the hisses of a group of snakes that caused hairs to stand on end.

The air rippled.

White shadows lashed out like coiled white snakes.

The enemy clearly was wary of these white shadows. His figure twisted strangely in the air and he managed to break free of these shadows.

But before he could rejoice, he felt a strong feeling of danger. His expression changed slightly. His arms were suddenly shrouded in green light. His body twisted like a braid and his arms went behind his back.

Snap!

A small sound of a crash. However, it was like he was whipped. His body shook, and an astounding power pierced through the green light on his hand.

Before he could react, his vision blurred and his body smashed into the ground!

The instant of enormous pain caused his mind to turn blank.

An unknown amount of time later, he recovered from his daze. His bones felt like they were about to fall apart and he had no strength.

They hadn't killed him!

This caused his mind to scatter and be filled with disbelief. The other's attack was strong, and unpredictable. He hadn't even managed to survive one move before he lost the ability to fight.

When he thought of this, his face flushed. He had always been proud of his own strength, and had never thought

He struggled to climb out of the hole. The attack had crushed him into the ground.

If his mo physique was not strong, he would have died just now.

Ceng Lian'er looked with interest at the other. She had stopped attacking because A Gui had stepped back. This surprised her. A Gui was usually as wooden as a puppet but when she started to kill, she never had mercy.

It was rare to see her not kill the enemy. Had the other's enmity disappeared?

Since A Gui had moved back, she was happy to do the same. She knew of Zuo Mo's intentions. It would be a troublesome matter to kill someone here.

This male here was slightly interesting.

Zuo Mo looked at the mo weapon on his hand with excitement.

This was a long pike. More accurately, this was a double-bladed

pike. The body of the pike seemed to be made from multicolored snakes winding around each other. The body of the snakes were clearly divided into different color patterns. If one counted closely, they would find ten completely different colors and patterns on the pike. There was a spot of red in the middle of the snake heads that was extremely eye-catching. What was most unique was the two snake heads at the ends could become ten different weapons.

Zuo Mo had used ten different mo weapons. These ten transformations were the true expression of Zuo Mo's skill.

The Weapon Layering Craftsmanship could forge earth mo weapons but their original attributes would be erase. However, Zuo Mo had melded together some seal script and mo matrix techniques to successfully keep the unique traits of the ten mo weapons.

He decided to name this the [Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike]

The Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike was the first earth level mo weapon that he had forged. There hadn't been any flaws in the entire process. It was so perfect it surpassed his expectations. The power of the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike also surpassed his predictions.

Even among the earth mo weapons, the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike was higher quality.

For a moment, he could not bear to sell it.

But Zuo Mo quickly calmed down. He shook his head and laughed. He had gained greatly in this process. He hadn't just learned the Weapon Layering Craftsmanship, he had gained an even greater understanding of forging mo weapons. He also had many new understandings of mo matrices. In the future, he would be able to forge even more powerful mo weapons.

Also, he had peerless weapons like the Anti Dragon Claw and the Three Thousand Threads of Worry. He was coveting everything, and may, as a result, lose everything.

After thinking, he reorganized what he learned and passed the information back to Cloud Sea Jie through Pu Yao. This was habit he had now developed. Whenever he had new understandings, he would organize them and share them with Golden Crow Camp.

He only wanted to make his paltry contribution to Cloud Sea Jie.

After doing all this, he walked out of the mo weapon pool with the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike.

When he walked out, he saw Hua Ru Hai who was furiously trying to ingratiate himself with Ceng Lian'er.

Ceng Lian'er's eyes lit up when she saw Zuo Mo. A figure flashed out of the corner of the eye. It was A Gui suddenly appearing beside Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo lovingly rubbed A Gui's head and said gently, "A Gui worked hard."

A Gui's expression was wooden.

Zuo Mo turned to look at Ceng Lian'er and Hua Ru Hai with a questioning gaze.

"This guy was sneaking around, we found him." Ceng Lian'er gave a small smile. Her gaze lingered on the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike.

Zuo Mo handed the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike to her.

When it entered her hand, Ceng Lian'er uncontrollably burst out, "Earth mo weapon!"

She had the Green Carp Tongue Sword and was familiar with earth mo weapons. When this entered her hand, she made an accurate estimate. While she knew that it would be an earth mo weapon from the apparition alone, but she still felt excited when she saw it. She waved it a few times and praised, "A good mo weapon! What is its name?"

Hua Ru Hai looked with bright eyes at the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike in Ceng Lian'er's hand. He was almost drooling.

"Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike," Zuo Mo said with a smile. His body relaxed.

"A good name!" Ceng Lian'er smiled and handed the mo weapon

to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo suddenly detected countless gazes gathered on him and was slightly surprised. He raised his head and saw there were many people floating in the air above the Underground Nether River and the surrounding mo weapon pools.

This was

Before he could react, the entire sky exploded.

These people suddenly flew madly in his direction. They fought to be first with excited expressions, shouts coming like a tsunami.

“Grandmaster! Grandmaster!”

“Grandmaster, accept me! Accept me as a student!”

The scene became chaotic.

Chapter 697 – The Domineering Tang Chen

Zuo Mo was used to scenes like this.

He did not speak and only gave a small smile. A short time later, the noisy crowd quickly quieted. The mo weapon masters looked in reverence and respect at Zuo Mo.

At this time, silence was more effective than speech.

But he still felt a small headache. He would only stay in Bu Zhou City for a short while and forging the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Piek was just to trade for the White Ridge Snake Bones for Ceng Lian'er. He hadn't thought that forging an earth mo weapon would create such a ruckus.

The reason that he had changed his appearance was because he did not want to draw attention to himself and he could reach Nether Springs Jie as fast as possible.

It would not be easy to leave after making such a spectacle.

These mo weapon masters that were looking him with fear and reverence were just a small problem. It would not be so easy to get rid of the prestigious families of Bu Zhou City. Zuo Mo had experienced the conduct of the prestigious families before.

If he revealed his identity, the other would not dare to do anything, but that way, his tracks would be exposed. What would

occur would be endless trouble. It was not a secret that he had shen power. If people had doubted that shen power existed before, the mo gods that had killed the Xuan Kong Temple corps had displayed the great force of shen power.

Being in possession of a great treasure was a crime.

Zuo Mo knew this. The trio was not weak. If they secretly moved, they would not encounter any great trouble. The only strong enemies they would likely encounter would be lone experts. If their tracks were exposed, there would be prestigious clans that would use all of the power at this disposal to try to get the shen power inheritance from him.

It definitely would not be a good idea to reveal his identity.

Calming down, Zuo Mo's mind started to turn furiously. He pushed his voice low to say to Ceng Lian'er. "How many people know of the use of the White Ridge Snake Bones?"

Ceng Lian'er stilled but she was smart and immediately understood what Zuo Mo meant. She replied in an imperceptible voice, "Few. Even in the clan only my father and I know."

Zuo Mo was slightly relieved. Their only possible flaw was the White Ridge Snake Bones. If other people knew the use of the White Ridge Snake Bones for the White Fang Snake mo, it would be easy to suspect their identities. It was not a secret that he had a female companion that was a White Fang Snake mo.

He could only deal with the events as they came.

Zuo Mo decided as he smiled as usual.

Suddenly, the crowd behind shifted.

“Congratulations! Congratulations! I had not thought that Honored Sir would actually forge an earth level mo weapon!” The middle-aged mo had a joyous expression and there was a group of guards behind him.

Zuo Mo hadn't expected the chief steward of the Rare Artifacts Hall to come directly to the mo weapon pool. He was slightly surprised but his expression did not change. He said coolly, “All due to Sir's good luck, everything proceeded smoothly. This earth mo weapon is called the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike, it can turn into ten different mo weapons, each with their own abilities.”

Finishing, he took out the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike and performed some of the transformations.

The mo weapon masters in the surroundings had never seen a true earth level mo weapon before. They stretched out their necks, their eyes wide in fear they would miss a single detail. When they saw the ten transformations of the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike, they gave gasps of shock.

The middle-aged mo's gaze was burning hot as he started at the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Spear in Zuo Mo's hand. He wanted

to take it immediately. As the main steward of Rare Artifacts Hall, he had better judgement than normal people. He had also touched a true earth mo weapon before.

With just a glance, he realized that this Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike was better than the earth mo weapon he had touched in the past.

His gaze became even hotter. However, he was a smart person. He said with a smile, “I have brought the White Ridge Snake Bones.”

According to Little Mo Ge’s personality, he would not be himself if he did not take the chance to profit enormously. However, this time, he was in a hurry to leave so he did not haggle. He nodded. “It is yours.”

The joy on the middle-aged mo’s face increased.

The complete set of White Ridge Snake Bones appeared in front of Zuo Mo. Sighs of shock rose in the surroundings again. It was extremely rare to see such a perfect set of White Ridge Snake Bones.

“Please wait!” A voice suddenly interrupted. It was Hua Ru Hai. The urgency on his face had disappeared and was replaced by calmness. “This one is Hua Ru Hai of North Bay’s Hua family. I wish to purchase this earth mo weapon”

Before he finished speaking, Zuo Mo grabbed the White Ridge Snake Bones and shoved the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike into the hand of the middle-aged mo. Hua Ru Hai's expression froze on his face.

Was something wrong with this person's heard? Did he not understand this was chance to raise the price?

Hua Ru Hai's blood rushed to his head and he glared angrily at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo ignored him. With the White Ridge Snake Bones in his hand, he gave a look to Ceng Lian'er He grabbed A Gui's hand and quickly proceeded to leave.

The middle-aged mo was still immersed in the joy of obtaining the earth level mo weapon and did not notice the actions of the trio.

“Valued Guests, you leave in such a hurry. My Tang Family has not treated you properly, and slighted such valued guests. This is our crime. This one is Tang Chen and ask for forgiveness from you!”

A deep and pleasant voice echoed in everyone's ears. The noisy scene suddenly became silent. Everyone had speculated that the Tang Family would not stop and watch with a mo weapon grandmaster represent, but when Tang Chen asked for forgiveness, it caused everyone to be speechless.

Then sound spread in a wave.

Tang Chen was the present patriarch of the Tang Family. He rarely was seen in public. They hadn't thought that he would personally come. This really was giving a great honor to this grandmaster!

Zuo Mo's expression was the same but he grimaced. Now it would not be easy to leave.

The other was polite in speech but his position perfectly blocked off their path. Zuo Mo stopped walking and then casually bowed. He said, "I do not dare to accept this. We have matters to attend to and are in a hurry to travel. Mister Tang, please forgive us."

Tang Chen smiled when he heard this. He drawled, "Grandmaster is too polite. Please tell us what the matter is. The Tang Family will be honoured to serve Grandmaster. It is the good fortune of Bu Zhou City that Grandmaster has come here. Please, Grandmaster, stay for a few days, and let us act as good hosts."

As expected, a difficult person!

Zuo Mo cursed this Tang Chen a few hundred times. He wanted to take out Little Mo Treasure Cup and let it go. It seemed from Tang Chen's posture that Zuo Mo definitely would not be able to leave today. The other most likely would force them to stay.

Zuo Mo's mind moved rapidly and decided to pretend to agree.

Later, he would find a chance to sneak away.

Having decided this, he pretended to be reluctant and replied, “Then we will disturb Patriarch Tang for a few days.”

Tang Chen gave a satisfied smile. “Grandmaster, please!”

Tang Chen’s gaze swept across the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike in the hand of the Rare Artifact Hall Chief Steward. He praised, “A good earth mo weapon!”

The middle-aged mo did not avoid Tang Chen’s gaze. He smiled calmly and said, “The mo weapon is good, the grandmaster is even better.”

Tang Chen naturally understood the other’s double meaning but pretended not to hear it. He smiled slightly and said, “The Tang Family coincidentally needs an earth mo weapon, please, state a price.”

His tone was cool but an aura of dominance formed.

The middle-aged mo was not frightened and said slyly, “This one does not dare to overstep this one’s authority. If Daren wants to ask about the price, this one will report to the owner.”

“You’re pretty good.” Tang Chen turned and left after saying this.

Zuo Mo showed a thoughtful expression.

It seemed that the support behind this Rare Artifacts Hall wasn't weak.

The trio were set up in one compound. This was a very large compound in a great environment. It had all the equipment needed and there were more than a hundreds of servants. There was only the trio living in this enormous compound.

The compound was heavily guard on the outside. There were more than twenty of the Tang Family elite general level and above acting as guards and sentries. There also many mo matrices set up in the surroundings. It was impossible to set up seal formations like transportation formations.

This caused Zuo Mo to grimace. The other was clearly more experienced. After "inviting" them to the Tang Family, they were put under house arrest. The present situation was no different than house arrest even though the other did not restrict their movement.

Zuo Mo had also learned the domineering style of this Tang Family patriarch.

It was impossible to sneak away without being detected while

under such heavy guard. If they tried to force their way, then all of their secrets would be exposed and the Tang Family would pay any price to keep them here.

There was great apology and guilt on Ceng Lian'er's face. "If it wasn't for the White Ridge Snake Bones"

Zuo Mo shook his head and interrupted her. "This isn't your fault. Who would think that the earth level mo weapon would cause such a great disturbance."

Zuo Mo looked at A Gui and felt urgency. If they were trapped here, when would they be able to reach Nether Springs Jie.

At this time, his mind suddenly moved.

He thought of a great idea.

"He is going to forge earth mo weapons?" Tang Chen asked gravely.

"Yes! He said that he wants to forge a new earth mo weapon." The subordinate's tone was filled with joyful surprise.

"Earth mo weapon!" Tang Chen's expression changed but then he frowned. He naturally knew of the difficulty in forging an earth

mo weapon. This grandmaster had just finished forging an earth mo weapon and now wanted to forge a second one. He felt incredulous at this.

Any earth mo weapon could be said to be the masterpiece of a mo weapon master's life.

The great majority of mo weapon grandmasters only ever forged one earth mo weapon and those that had forged two could be counted on the fingers. He had never heard of one that had forged three.

Tang Chen had not captured Zuo Mo forcibly because of the earth mo weapon but was in hope that he would be willing to help take the role of the teacher for the Mo Weapon Camp.

Bu Zhou City was rich in resources, but the skill level of the mo weapon masters was not high. If the level of these mo weapon masters could be increased, the resources could be turned into an endless flow of fine mo weapons. The Tang Family's power would increase another level in a short period of time.

Had he gotten new ideas from forging the earth mo weapon last time?

While he did not believe that Zuo Mo could forge a second earth mo weapon, Tang Cheng was naturally happy for Zuo Mo to throw himself into the forging of mo weapons.

“En, cooperate fully with him,” Tang Chen said without hesitation. “Satisfy his needs to the best of our abilities.”

“Yes!” The subordinate acknowledges. However, his expression turned strange. “But Grandmaster had a strange request”

“Strange request “ Tang Chen stilled.

Chapter 698 – The Unexpected Guest

Bu Zhou City, Tang Wen Hall.

This was Bu Zhou City's grandest banquet in the past few years. It was popular and filled with people. There were many beauties, the fragrance of wine spread around the air, and those that were conversing would exchange greetings with smiles.

Anyone of slight fame in and around Bu Zhou City had received an invitation from the Tang Family. There were famed experts from surrounding towns that had rushed over.

Other than the Tang Family's unrivaled power in this area, many people had come for another person, Grandmaster Xiao Yun Hai[1]. It was not strange for a grandmaster that had just forged an earth level mo weapon to be pursued to this degree.

Then they heard that it had been Grandmaster Xiao Yun Hai's request to hold this banquet, many people had thoughts about the situation.

While the Tang Family had forcefully stolen Grandmaster away, many people still desired to meet him and form friendly relationships, especially the experts that were strong and lacked mo weapons. They were like flies that smelt meat and all ran over.

Feng Xin Zi had a sunny smile on his face. He had refused the advances of countless beautiful young female mo. He was holding a cup of wine as he sat beside Ji Li Yu.

“You were wrong.” Ji Li Yu’s tone was slightly mocking. “He’s the new mo weapon grandmaster.”

Feng Xin Zi shrugged his shoulders. “Maybe Xiao Mo Ge also knows to forge mo weapons/”

While he teased this, inside, he did not believe his own words. Xiao Mo Ge was a genius. Even Feng Xin Zi who was called a genius by others had to admit the other’s astounding talent. But even the most talented person could not be good in all areas. Mo weapon creation was a profound and cryptic field. In order to have accomplishments in this area, one needed to accumulate skill and experience. The former was related to talent, and the latter to time.

“Also, don’t you feel it is strange? A mo weapon master that can make an earth mo weapon should have at least some fame and reputation before this, but no one has heard of his name before?” Feng Xin Zi looked at Zuo Mo in the distance and said to himself.

“There are many people who leap into fame from obscurity. There is nothing strange about that.” Ji Li Yu’s tone was dismissive.

“Maybe.” Feng Xin Zi did not continue on the topic.

One person forced their way over and said enthusiastically, “Ha, I am so fortunate to encounter such a beautiful miss today! Miss who is so beautiful that my heart has almost stopped beating, can

you tell me your name?”

Ji Li Yu felt slight disdain but she did not show it in her expression. She smiled brightly. “Shouldn’t you introduce yourself first before asking for someone’s name?”

Ji Li Yu was devastatingly beautiful to start with. When she did not smile, she was the brightest jewel at the banquet. When she smiled, the entire banquet hall seemed to light up. The nearby guests were dumbstruck.

The young person who stepped forward to speak with her was also stunned. After a while, he recovered. His expression was intoxicated. He appeared as though he would be willing to die if Ji Li Yu told him to do so.

“Oh oh oh! I should die for this! I was so impolite. Heavens, this is unforgivable! Please forgive my rudeness, I am Hua Ru Hai from the South Bay’s Hua Family. It is a little place, a little place.”

Hua Ru Hai smiled fawningly. Shocked intakes sounded in the surroundings. South Bay Hua Family was a faction that rivaled the Tang Family.

“I am very happy to meet you, Mister Hua Ru Hai! I am Ji Li Yu of the yao!” Ji Li Yu’s smile blossomed and drew the eyes of the males present.

“Happy, happy, truly happy!” Hua Ru Hai was so excited he could

not speak rationally.

“Has Mister Hua Ru Hai also come for Grandmaster?” Ji Li Yu asked curiously.

Hua Ru Hai nodded repeatedly. “Yes, yes, I was coincidentally around the mo weapon pool when Grandmaster completed forging the mo weapon. I saw with my own eyes the worldly apparition when the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike was created.”

“Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike?”

“Yes, it is an outstanding earth mo weapon, and can change into ten different mo weapons. It is the first time I have seen such a wondrous earth mo weapon. It is a pity it ended up in the hands of Rare Artifacts Hall. It will not be easy to buy it from them.” Hua Ru Hai shook his head and said with regret.

Ji Li Yu suddenly said, “Grandmaster is really young. Are all mo weapon masters so young?”

Hua Ru Hai smiled and said, “Actually, I was stunned when I met the Grandmaster for the first time. I hadn’t expected him to be about the same age as me. However, people at the grandmaster level are probably not the same as us mere mortals.”

“That is true.” Ji Li Yu smiled faintly. Her gaze turned to the mo weapon placed at the center of the large hall. “That is the Sky Snake Ten Manifestations Pike?”

“En!” Hua Ru Hai looked with intoxication at the Sky Snake Ten Manifestations Pike and murmured, “Perfect! It is absolutely perfect! I haven never heard of this level of craftsmanship. It is great!”

Ji Li Yu stared at the Sky Snake Ten Manifestations Pike. An intimidating yet almost imperceptible presence emanated from the pike and shrouded the entire hall. It would occasionally cause sighs of awe.

“It really is a perfect masterpiece,” the chief steward of Rare Artifacts Hall praised.

“Many thanks to you for your support!” Zuo Mo offered his thanks to the other. He had sold the Sky Snake Ten Manifestations Pike to the Rare Artifacts hall already. They had only brought it out for display because it was Zuo Mo’s request.

“It is nothing,” the middle-aged mo smiled and said. Then he said subtly, “No matter the occasion, Rare Artifacts Hall is a friend of Grandmaster.”

He had felt great shock when he had received Zuo Mo’s request but he quickly made his decision. While he did not know what the Grandmaster’s intentions were, it was undoubtedly the best choice to build a good relationship with the other.

Zuo Mo raised the winecup in his hand and toasted the other. “Please!”

“Please!” The middle-aged mo responded with a raise of his glass in satisfaction. It was not common to have a grandmaster owe you a favor.

There was an imperceptible smile on Tang Chen’s face. Suddenly, a servant said a few words in a low voice by his ear and he nodded.

He suddenly stood and raised both of his hands. He said in a loud voice, “Everyone!”

The hall immediately quieted down. All gazes turned to focus on Tang Chen. Tang Chen had absolute authority in Bu Zhou City. Just a few of his words could have great effects on Bu Zhou City.

Tang Chen had a big smile. “Today is really a good day, with friends filling the seats, and honored guests that have come.”

Just as he was speaking, a procession walked in from the door to the hall. The one leading the way was a youth with a faint smile on his face. His handsome face was filled with confidence as he walked with his head high at the front.

The crowd unconsciously made way for him.

“Uncle Tang!” The youth bowed towards Tang Chen.

Tang Chen laughed and said, “Come here, come here, let Uncle have a look at you. Heroes really come from youth! I really admire A Di for having such a son!”

A Di? Low discussion rose in the crowd. Everyone was speculating who this A Di was.

“Father frequently mentions you, but there has been many matters. He feels very guilty for being unable to visit Uncle Tang these years,” Gongzi Xi said respectfully. [2]

“Oh!” A reminiscing expression came onto Tang Chen’s face. He said emotionally, “The years have passed so quickly!”

He then laughed. “It is not good to be too emotional on such a good day.” Finishing, he turned to face the hall with a hand on the youth. He said in a loud voice, “Everyone, let me introduce you. This is Marshal Di’s son, and my nephew, Xi!”

The crowd exploded.

Everyone knew who Marshal Di was. Oh, of course this meant every other than Zuo Mo. Marshal Di was much more famous than Tang Chen and was one of the most famous marshals in the mo territories.

Many people had uncertain expressions. While Tang Chen’s

authority in Bu Zhou City was unrivalled, the Tang Family was usually low-key and seemed content to be in their area without any ambitions to vie for the world.

Due to this, many people thought of the Tang Family as just a strong local faction. However, Marshal Di was one of the competitors fighting for domination of the world and one of the strongest marshals.

Because of the difference in status of the families, many people were surprised the son of Marshal Di was so respectful towards Tang Chen. To even bow like a junior suggested that the two marshals had a close relationship.

————

Xi's arrival caused the entire banquet to have a turbulent underflow. Many people thought inside that they needed to reassess the strength of the Tang Family.

This included the Ji Family.

In the corner, A Heng's eyes flashed and he was uncertain. The Tang Family had been a faction that the Ji Family had been trying form relations with for a long time. The Ji Family had even hoped that they could use a marriage to ally the two families together.

He immediately detected something unusual nearby when Marshal Di's son Xi had arrived.

The young master of the Ji Family looked with hate and viciousness at Zuo Mo.

Refocusing, A Heng noticed the expression of his young master and frowned inwardly. The newly arrived Gongzi Xi appeared handsome and accomplished, his family's young master in comparison was not acceptable to be seen in public. A Heng shook his head inside.

That Xiao Yun Hai was an honored guest of the Tang Family now. They did not have any more chances to act. Not speaking of how they wanted to form an alliance with the Tang Family, even if they did not care about how the Tang Family felt, they could not act against a valued guest of the Tang Family while in Bu Zhou City.

He reminded, "Young Master, you cannot be rash!"

"So this will be the end of it?" the young master gritted his teeth and his voice seemed to bellow out from his chest.

A Heng said coolly. "Master will not be happy if you offend the Tang Family."

The Ji Family young master's face paled. When he thought of his father's anger, a chill rose from the bottom of his feet. All of his anger immediately disappeared.

After A Heng reminded him of this, he didn't look at his young master again but focused on Gongzi Xi. He decided to stay a while longer and find out why Gongzi Xi had suddenly come to Bu Zhou City.

The Tang Family was low-key but their strength could not be underestimated. They would be of great aid to any family they allied with.

A Heng knew that the Horizontal Jie's Ji Family did not have as much influence compared to Marshal Di. However, he hadn't expected that Tang Chen had concealed this relationship so deeply. They had investigated for so long and hadn't even heard a hint of it.

The Ji Family had started to try to ally with the Tang Family from a very long time ago. Tang Chen's attitude had always been ambiguous. So this was the reason behind it.

No matter what, he could not let the Tang Family and Marshal Di form an alliance.

A cold light flashed across A Heng's eyes.

With the arrival of the new guests, no one noticed the two people from the Ji Family in the corner.

Tang Chen's gaze flashed across Gongzi Xi's retinue. When his gaze landed on Li Xian'er, he was slightly surprised. However, he did not change expression and brought Gongzi Xi in front of Zuo Mo.

“Virtuous nephew, come, this is Grandmaster Xiao Yun Hai! Grandmaster has just forged an earth mo weapon, the Sky Snake Ten Manifestations Pike, it is extraordinarily powerful!”

At this time, the corner of Zuo Mo's eye imperceptibly twitched.

Chapter 699 – Zuo Mo's Goal

His gaze unconsciously moved, and swept across Gongzi Xi's group. His gaze suddenly stopped on a female.

For some unknown reason, Zuo Mo had an eerie sense of familiarity.

This female

Zuo Mo dared to guarantee that he had definitely never seen this female before. He wasn't able to identify anything familiar about her. This included her appearance, her speech and presence. They were all very unfamiliar and Zuo Mo was sure that he had never seen her before.

But that eerie sense of familiarity haunted his mind and could not be swept away.

It really was strange.

Zuo Mo suppressed the strange feeling he had. His expression was normal as he gave a small smile and exchanged greetings with Gongzi Xi. "I'm very happy to meet you."

Gongzi Xi also had a smile. "On the way here, I heard that Grandmaster had forged an earth mo weapon. Xi itches to see it, and has travelled day and night. This journey was not a waste after meeting Grandmaster!"

Tang Chen pretended to be angry. “So Virtuous Nephew has not come to see this old man, this old man thought too highly of himself!”

The people around laughed when they heard this.

Tang Chen also had a small smile as he said, “You and Grandmaster are of similar age, and must be able to converse better. Virtuous Nephew, you should ask for guidance from Grandmaster, you will definitely benefit.”

“Uncle is right,” Gongzi Xi said respectfully.

Zuo Mo smiled. “Patriarch Tang is too complimentary.” He felt strange. This Tang Chen seemed to treat Gongzi Xi like his own nephew. The relationship between the two families was not simple.

Gongzi Xi’s gaze turned to the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike in the middle of the large hall. He couldn’t resist saying, “This is Grandmaster’s new work?”

“This is called the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike,” the middle-aged mo elegantly took over. “Does Master Xi want to try?”

“I can?” Xi showed joy.

“Of course!” The middle-aged mo made an ushering motion. “Our hall received the favor of Grandmaster and this Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike. Master can do as you please.”

Even a blind person could see that the middle-aged mo was showing goodwill to Gongzi Xi.

Gongzi Xi’s expression was excited and he was desiring to try.

Li Xian’er secretly examined Zuo Mo. She was unusually sensitive. Zuo Mo had done his best to make his gaze appear casual, but Li Xian’er still detected Zuo Mo’s attention focused on her.

Her appearance had been disguised. While she still looked pretty, it was several levels below her true appearance. Which of the servants around Gongzi Xi were not beautiful due to his position? Theoretically, she should be very non-descript and mediocre among the group.

She hadn’t thought that Tang Chen and Xiao Yun Hai would notice her.

However, she was very curious about Xiao Yun Hai.

It was not common to see such a young mo weapon grandmaster. Being from Tian Huan, Li Xian’er had seen many kinds of geniuses, but there were only just a rare few that were so accomplished at

such an age.

As though he noticed her gaze, the young grandmaster gave a small smile at her.

This guy was slightly strange!

Li Xian'er thought inside.

Qinghua Xue looked closely at Zuo Mo within the crowd. Her eyes were as bright as stars and she was struggling to keep her calm.

It was him!

Yes, it was him!

Qinghua Xue could not suppress the excitement inside.

Almost at first glance, she had recognized Zuo Mo. While the appearance and the name were unfamiliar, Qinghua Xue's eyes had not missed his familiar patterns of speech and movement. She was too familiar with Xiao Mo Ge. She hadn't just fought against him, she had collected almost all the mirages on the market concerning him.

This was him!

Xiao Mo Ge!

The gathering that would have normally found unpleasant and noisy was so beautiful right now. Qinghua Xue's eyes did not move away one bit.

“What are you looking at?” one of her fellows poked her. Her friend was called Ning Xin'er. She was the most beautiful female of the cadet branch of the Ning Family, and due to this, she had been selected.

Qinghua Xue seemed to wake up. Her face was aflame.

“Oh, you like Xiao Yun Hai?” Ning Xin'er teased her. “While he doesn't look handsome, his future is unlimited as he was able to become a grandmaster at such a young age. Haha, if you can get him, the Qinghua Family probably would be overjoyed.”

Qinghua Xue quickly recovered her calm. She slanted a look at Ning Xin'er and said pointedly, “Weren't you pining after Xiao Mo Ge?”

“Xiao Mo Ge?” Ning Xin'er said self-mockingly. “I want him. However, with the yao's greatest beauty standing at the front, we can just rest our hearts and act as secondary characters.”

The words were tinged with jealousy and some disappointment.

Qinghua xue was silent. She could understand Ning Xin'er's feelings. Of the group of people that had come, there was no one other than her that had been willing. In front of Ji Li Yu, all of them lost in comparison. Everyone felt that if Xiao Mo Ge was going to fall in love, it would be with Ji Li Yu. They were from the cadet branches of their families, but they had many suitors, including sons of main branches. Who was willing to travel thousands of miles to act as accompaniment?

"I feel that Xiao Mo Ge might not fall in love with Miss Ji," Qinghua Xue suddenly said.

"Maybe." Ning Xin'er twisted her mouth. "If he doesn't fall in love with the most beautiful woman, then there is no hope for us."

Qinghua Xue was silent.

Ning Xin'er tilted her head and suddenly became excited. "This Xiao Yun Hai is a good target. I feel that the higher-ups will definitely agree to recruit a mo weapon master of such potential on our side. Nice, nice!"

"Then you can go try." Qinghua Xue said sardonically.

"No, he isn't handsome enough." Ning Xin'er pouted. "But that Gongzi Xi is both generous and has presence! His family background is also very good!"

Qinghua Xue smiled upon hearing this.

At this time, Xiao Yun Hai suddenly spoke up, “Everyone.”

The entire place quieted. People looked over curiously. Everyone present was filled with curiosity about this newly titled mo weapon grandmaster, especially since he was so young.

Xiao Yun Hai had a small smile on his face without any timidity. His voice was clear and loud.

“First, I would like to thank Patriarch Tang for agreeing to my unreasonable request and hosting such a grand banquet for me. I also must thank the Rare Artifact Hall for their support with today’s event. I won’t waste words. This time, I have invited everyone because I have something to ask!”

“Grandmaster, please say. If our Rare Artifact Hall can do it, we will not refuse.” There was an elegant smile on the middle-aged mo’s face. His voice was not loud but could be heard over the entire hall.

Displeasure flashed across Tang Chen’s eyes. He was very displeased that Rare Artifacts Hall had taken this opportunity before him. He knew that this was Xiao Yun Hai’s retaliation for being forced to come to the Tang Family.

Grandmasters, it was normal for them to have a temper.

The smile on his face remained the same. “Grandmaster, please say it. The Tang Family is not some prestigious family, but there are not many things that we cannot do.”

His words were said indifferently but the dominance showed. The other people had planned on saying a few words but then perceptively closed their mouths.

The entire place was unusually silent.

Zuo Mo was not affected at all. He looked around solemnly. “This one needs something called the Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass. One plant can be traded for an earth mo weapon.”

Woosh!

The crowd exploded!

Someone couldn’t resist asking, “Grandmaster, you are serious?”

Zuo Mo said without hesitation. “Yes!”

“Is the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike for trade?” someone else couldn’t resist asking, “Wasn’t it sold to the Rare Artifacts Hall?”

The middle-aged mo also had a surprised expression. He had expected that Xiao Yun Hai would have a goal but he had not

expected that to be publicly announcing that he was buying Reversal Shadow Soul Silkgrass. The price he gave was also an earth mo weapon.

He knew of the Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass. However, it was produced in Nether Spring Jie. While the production of it was not high, it was not so rare. This price was one that no one would be able to resist. He immediately decided that he would send an order to search for Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass the moment he left the venue.

When he heard people ask about the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike, his reaction was quick. “Rare Artifacts Hall is willing to put the Sky Snake Ten Manifestation Pike as a guarantee.”

An earth mo weapon was valuable, but it was definitely not a loss to use an earth mo weapon to trade for the friendship of a grandmaster!

Zuo Mo was very surprised. He nodded at the middle-aged mo with a friendly gaze.

The middle-aged mo immediately felt good, especially when he noticed that Tang Chen beside him had a black face. He was proud of how beautiful his move had been. Tang Chen was too overbearing in his action. Was something wrong with this person’s brains to force a grandmaster of unlimited potential? The middle-aged mo looked down on this.

But he stilled at Xiao Yun Hai's next words.

“Thanks for Rare Artifact Hall's support, but I have already sold this mo weapon to Rare Artifact Hall. This belongs to Rare Artifacts Hall, how can this one trade using that.”

Zuo Mo's expression was confident as he looked around. His voice was not loud but it stunned the entire place. Each word was filled with power.

“Three days later, I will start to forge another earth mo weapon!”

Zuo Mo's expression was determined.

“If my luck is good, and I forge an earth mo weapon, I will leave the article at Rare Artifact Hall. Anyone can trade for this mo weapon with a Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass! I will trouble your hall for this!”

The middle-age mo's mouth was open, his expression stunned. He quickly reacted and nodded hurriedly, “No problem, no problem!”

Tang Chen's expression was dark. He had been completely unprepared for the bomb that Xiao Yun Hai had thrown out.

But he quickly recovered. The corners of his mouth were smiling and full of disdain.

As expected, this was the rashness of a young person!

He had a little bit of accomplishment and he didn't know his own limit anymore. Did he really think that he could achieve anything?

However, this was beneficial for the Tang Family. He wanted to see how Xiao Yun Hai would clean up this mess when he could not forge an earth mo weapon!

At Bu Zhou City, no one except the Tang Family could help him! Not even Rare Artifacts Hall!

Tang Chen's gaze was dark and cold.

Everyone was stunned where they stood. Zuo Mo's words had caused them to lose the ability of speech.

Forge an earth mo weapon? What joke was this? What did he think an earth mo weapon was? He could make one whenever he felt like it?

Xiao Yun Hai was crazy!

Chapter 700 – Old And Cunning

An earth mo weapon! Xiao Yun Hai!

This was the hottest topic of the moment, all of the mo territories were paying attention to the news. Theoretically, while earth mo weapons were rare and valuable, it was not enough to create such a great wave. But the extravagant promise that Xiao Yun Hai had thrown out was too astounding.

They did not know Xiao Yun Hai's exact age but he definitely was among the ranks of the youngest mo weapon grandmasters. His future could be said to be unlimited. Yet a mo weapon grandmaster of such potential had suddenly stated that he would trade an earth mo weapon for a Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass. The entire mo territories were scorched by the bomb.

Some were dismissive and snorted. The majority of people considered this a joke, and were simply watching the dubious spectacle.

While shen power was starting to appear in their visions, and mo skills were not considered the top tier of the powers now, earth mo weapons were still one of the strongest weapons. Their limited number, the difficulty of creating them, the great power they contained, were all reasons it was valuable.

Before Xiao Yun Hai, no mo weapon grandmaster dared to announce that he would definitely forge another earth mo weapon.

In the history of the mo, the number of earth mo weapons never surpassed two hundred articles.

But someone had suddenly ran out and stated that he was able to forge earth mo weapons again. Even if he was a mo weapon master that had just become a grandmaster, it caused shock among the mo.

The Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass was valuable, but its value could not rival earth mo weapons. Its rarity was just because it was produced in Nether Spring Jie, the location was far and it was difficult to harvest.

But this wasn't a problem to those prestigious families and large businesses that had far reaching influence.

However, the great majority of people only maintained the attitude of spectators. They didn't believe at all that Xiao Yun Hai would be able to forge another earth mo weapon.

However a small number of factions started to search for Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass with the aim of establishing friendly relations with the grandmaster. They didn't have any hopes about the earth mo weapon. In their view, while the Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass was valuable, it was still profitable if one used it to create relations with a mo weapon grandmaster.

Events like this were undoubted ones that people liked to see and hear about.

People were all waiting to see the young person who had just become a grandmaster and didn't know his own limits make a joke of himself. Some even started to take bets on whether Xiao Yun Hai could forge a new earth mo weapon.

It had been so long since there had been such an entertaining event. The people of the mo territories were extremely interested.

Such an interesting event!

In the study.

“Virtuous Nephew, what do you think?” Tang Chen asked Gongzi Xi in interest.

Gongi Xi had a thoughtful expression. He grimaced and shook his head. “This nephew doesn't know. This Xiao Yun Hai is too hard to predict, he actually promised this in public, it really really”

He didn't know how to describe it.

Tang Chen gave a smile. “Virtuous Nephew, do not be thrown by this. He must have disliked the treatment he received in these days and is not willing to stay in the tang Family. He purposefully acted in public to attract people's gazes.”

“But if he doesn’t have any confidence, would he dare to say this?” Gongzi Xi’s expression was puzzled.

“It is a terrible move made in panic,” Tang Chen said coolly. “Young people are always rash. This event is beneficial for us. This boy doesn’t know his limits, but he does have some true skill. If we are able to use him, he would be of great benefit.”

“Uncle is right,” Gongzi Xi nodded and said.

Tang Chen did not linger on this subject and changed the topic. “I noticed that some of the people in your group do not look like mo.”

Seeing the wry expression on Tang Chen’s face, Gongzi Xi flushed slightly and reported the truth. “Uncle may not know. They are the envoys from Tian Huan.”

Tang Chen’s expression changed. “Your father plans to ally with Tian Huan?”

“Yes.” Gongzi Xi nodded and said.

Tang Chen was silently for a moment before speaking, “It is good for you two families to ally together based on Tian Huan’s power. One should always establish relations with those far away and attack those close by. Your two families do not have any conflicts of interest, and it is beneficial for both sides for you to help each

other in secret. However, the two sides are far from each other. If there is alliance, it must be marriage!”

As he spoke, Tang Chen smiled. “That female’s identity must not be simple.”

Gongzi Xi said, “She is the granddaughter of Tian Huan’s sect leader!”

Tang Chen nodded. “The families are matched in status! I see that you seem to like her. I will send a letter to your father and speak of this matter on your behalf.”

Gongzi Xi was overjoyed and made a deep bow. “Nephew thanks Uncle!”

Tang Chen held Gongzi Xi up. “You father and I’s relationship was forged through life and death experiences, I think of you as my own nephew. There is no need for these courtesies.” Then his tone became stern. “There is something you need to remind your father.”

Gongzi Xi hurriedly said, “Uncle, please speak.”

After a moment of silence, Tang Chen said gravely, “Your father must already know about the Mo Shen Temple. I see that your father is busy organizing his faction. If this was the past, this is the right choice, but it is not appropriate now.”

Gongzi Xi had a pondering expression. “Uncle means to pay more attention to shen power?”

“Yes!” Tang Chen nodded. “You have also seen the power of shen power. This is a power even stronger than mo skill, ling power, and yao arts. One mo god was enough to destroy all of Xuan Kong Temple’s elder corps. This kind of strategic power is enough to change the state of world. Do you know how many military corps Xuan Kong Temple’s elder corps is equal to?”

Without giving Gongzi Xi the time to think, Tang Chen continued to speak.

“You cannot fall behind at this time! The person who walks at the front in this field has the advantage. The Mo Shen Temple the greatest enemy of everyone.”

Gongzi Xi was not a wastrel. While he was a rake, he understood matters of war. He agreed with Tang Chen but he grimaced, “It is not that Father doesn’t want, but he has not been able to get a foot in the door. Nephew knows that Father has already started to build a shen temple but the effect is not very good.”

“The Mo Shen Temple had hid and developed for two hundred years. Of course it is not simple,” Tang Chen said, “you may want to find a breakthrough in another place.”

Gongzi Xi was intelligence. After a moment of thought, he understood. “Uncle speaks of Xiao Mo Ge?”

“Yes!” Tang Chen praised. “Xiao Mo Ge’s trio all have shen power inheritances. While they are not weak, they are lacking in comparison to the Mo Shen Temple. If we gather our power, it is very likely we will gain what we desire.”

“Xiao Mo Ge is a ghost and there is no trace of him now.” Gongzi Xi looked at Tang Chen. When he noticed the imperceptible smile at the corner of Tang Chen’s mouth, his body trembled, “Unless ...”

Tang chen had a proud expression. “I have been keeping an eye on Xiao Mo Ge all this time. A while ago, the trio suddenly disappeared. I went to Yanmen Ocean to beg Great Shaman Sang Ming Yu to divine. The Great Shaman owed me a favor in the past, and used five years of his life force to divine. He learned that the trio is near Bu Zhou City.”

Gongzi Xi’s eyes immediately lit up. “Near Bu Zhou City!”

“Yes, at the start, I suspected Xiao Yun Hai was Xiao Mo Ge. He has two female servants with fit with the description of Xiao Mo Ge. However, I had never heard that Xiao Mo Ge knows how to forge mo weapons, much less earth mo weapons. I purposefully was domineering in my conduct, one reason was to test him. But from his response, he doesn’t seem to be the one.”

Gongzi Xi listened carefully in fear he would miss a detail. He thought back to Xiao Yun Hai’s actions and he agreed with Uncle’s judgment. That Xiao Yun Hai didn’t have the presence of a hero. While he was also powerful, his actions were rash. He was far from the uncanny Xiao Mo Ge.

Tang Chen's gaze was deep. "While he isn't Xiao Mo Ge, he is suitable to be bait. I heard that the Anti Dragon Claw Xiao Mo Ge obtained seemed to be heavily damaged. Xiao Yun Hai is a mo weapon grandmaster and one of the most likely to be able to fix the Anti Dragon Claw. If Xiao Mo Ge knows of this, he definitely would not miss this chance. I had been thinking of how to spread the news. I hadn't expected Xiao Yun Hai to attract so much attention and help us."

Gongzi Xi had an admiring expression. "No wonder Uncle is supporting Xiao Yun Hai. Uncle is wise and cunning. You really are the oriole behind the mantis stalking the cicada!"

Tang Chen's expression was normal. "We only need to focus on Xiao Yun Hai and wait! However, when Xiao Mo Ge shows up, we need enough experts in order to trap him."

Gongzi Xi knew this was a rare opportunity and nodded without hesitation. "Uncle, don't worry. I will send a message right now. Uncle Qin and Uncle Zhong are both present!"

Tang Chen's expression became relieved. "I won't worry if Old Qin and Old Zhong can come. This matter is a great secret. Virtuous Nephew, you cannot speak of this to anyone, including your future Tian Huan wife."

The last words were teasing.

Gongzi Xi's face turned red but then he became serious. "Uncle,

do not worry. Nephew knows the importance of this and will not mention a word of it.”

Tang Chen nodded. “I have spoken to you for so long. Go, don’t like Tian Huan’s little princess wait for too long.”

————

Unlike the other people that were waiting to see Xiao Yun Hai become a joke, Qinghua Xue was full of confidence in Zuo Mo. Only she knew that Xiao Yun Hai was Xiao Mo Ge. With her understanding of Xiao Mo Ge, if Xiao Mo Ge dared to say the words, he had great confidence in the matter.

Returning from the banquet, Qinghua Xue completely calmed down and descended into her thoughts.

She had found Xiao Mo Ge, then what should she do next?

Get close to him?

But how to get close to him?

Qinghua Xue was frustrated.

————

No one would have thought that Zuo Mo who had just announced that he would trade earth mo weapons for Reverse Shadow Soul Silkgrass was being troubled by a completely unrelated matter.

That average looking female and that strange feeling of familiarity.

Zuo Mo trusted his sixth sense highly. He knew this eerie feeling of familiarity would not appear without cause.

He definitely had had some interaction with this person.

But no matter how hard he thought, he could not find any information related to this female.

In the sea of consciousness, the three discussed this matter. However, Pu Yao and Wei were sure they had never seen this female before.

It really was strange

At this time, Zuo Mo's body froze. A daring thought appeared. Once this thought appeared, it took over every corner of his body.

Even Pu Yao and Wei didn't have an impression of her. Then this female definitely appeared before he encountered Pu Yao and Wei.

Could it be

She appeared before his memories had been erased and his features changed?